

How Satan Has Used Sex to Ruin America – A Biblical Study

By Eric Neumann

Copyright 2019

Dedication

This book is dedicated to my wife of almost 11 years, Lonna Neumann, who went home to be with the Lord on August 14, 2021. She saw Satan's policy of evil working in America, and it grieved her heart greatly. Praise the Lord that she is in heaven, where she no longer has to deal with this corrupt world. I pray that the rapture happens soon, so that I can join her and be in the presence of the Lord forever.

Eric Neumann – February 8, 2022

Copyright Notice

The author hereby grants permission for any and all material within this commentary to be reproduced free of any fees to the author, provided that said materials are not sold for a profit.

Goal

The goal of this study on sex and marriage is to cast “down imaginations, and every high thing that exalteth itself against the knowledge of God and [bring] into captivity every thought to the obedience of Christ” (II Corinthians 10:5) so that members of the body of Christ may “come unto the knowledge of the truth” (I Timothy 2:4).

Contact the author

You may e-mail the author at Bibledivider@gmail.com.

Books by Eric Neumann

All books are available in paperback and in Kindle formats by going to: www.amazon.com/author/bibledivider. You may also access the author's sermons by going to: <http://www.youtube.com/user/bibledivider/videos>.

Eric's Bible study guides on the following books are now available:

Genesis

Daniel

Matthew

Mark

Luke

John

Acts

Romans – Full Guide (290 pages) & Abridged (139 pages)

Hebrews

James & I Peter

II Peter – Jude

Revelation

In addition, the following books are available:

- 1. How Satan Has Used Sex to Ruin America – A Biblical Study** (277 pages)
- 2. A Bible Believer's Bible Summary: How to Understand the Bible** (84 pages)
- 3. Life in Christ** (121 pages)
- 4. Bible Per-VERSIONS: How Satan Changes God's Word to Lead You Astray** (248 pages)
- 5. Tongue Talking – Rightly Divided** (86 pages)
- 6. How to Be Led by the Holy Spirit: Discerning God's Will for Your Life** (34 pages)
- 7. A Bible Believer's Critique of Ironside's "Wrongly Dividing the Word of Truth": A Defense of Paul's Mystery** (150 pages)

Table of Contents

1. God’s Creation of Sex/Marriage.....	6
2. God’s Plan for the Universe (Includes Man’s Rebellion and Satan’s Attack).....	18
3. Men and Women Are Different.....	30
4. Sex Corrupted by the City.....	42
5. Women’s Hostile Takeover.....	70
6. Men’s Counterattack: Fantasy World.....	98
7. Sex Maniacs.....	130
8. Women’s Rule Destroys Society.....	150
9. Unusual Sexual Situations.....	176
10. Reprobate Sodomites.....	188
11. Sexual Confusion.....	228
12. Questions and Answers.....	248
Summary.....	272

CHAPTER 1

God's Creation of Sex/Marriage

Sex Is Frequently Mentioned in the Bible

Sex is often a taboo topic in church, when it should not be that way, because the Bible talks about it extensively. (For example, did you know that “breasts” are mentioned in the Bible 13 times with a sexual connotation? “Let her be as the loving hind and pleasant roe; let her breasts satisfy thee at all times; and be thou ravished always with her love” (Proverbs 5:19). “We have a little sister, and she hath no breasts.... I am a wall, and my breasts like towers; then was I in his eyes as one that found favour.” (Song of Solomon 8:8,10).) Moreover, regardless of when you live, society is always sex-crazed, because sex appeals to the flesh. Since Churchianity (The term “Churchianity” is used, rather than “Christianity,” so as not to associate Christ with this religion, since it is works based, not trusting in Jesus’ blood as atonement for sin.) largely ignores what the Bible says about it, sex education comes almost exclusively from society as a whole. The result is that God’s instructions are ignored, and people believe what “the god of this world” (II Corinthians 4:4) (Satan) tells them to believe, much to the detriment of their Christian walk.

Given that sodomy and gender choice are popular topics in the United States in 2019, it is more important than ever that we understand what God says about sex and how He designed it to operate. That way, we can stand firm on the truth of God’s Word in either accepting or rejecting society’s beliefs.

This book’s goal is to make the Bible its final authority, so that we are more likely to adopt God’s view of sex. Its goal is not to push any agenda or any view, except God’s view. Therefore, when the views in this book go against your beliefs, please be a good Berean by searching the scriptures to determine, BASED UPON GOD’S WORD, not preconceived notions, whether these things are so (Acts 17:11). “Let God be true, but every man a liar” (Romans 3:4).

Background

In order to understand sex, we must spend a considerable amount of time examining some background information found in scripture.

Satan's Rebellion

“In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth” (Genesis 1:1). God made Lucifer “perfect in beauty” (Ezekiel 28:12) so that he could be “the anointed cherub that covereth” God’s throne (Ezekiel 28:14). However, instead of doing God’s will, Lucifer formed his own will, stating that he would “ascend into heaven,” culminating in becoming “like the most High” God (Isaiah 14:13-14), “possessor of heaven and earth” (Genesis 14:19). Lucifer even convinced 1/3 of the angelic race to rebel against God with him (Revelation 12:3-4). Thus, Lucifer became Satan, and God promised to cast him “to the ground” (Ezekiel 28:17).

This resulted in “darkness [being] upon the face of the deep” (Genesis 1:2). God

then started His plan to get rid of Satan's rebellion. God created man "a little lower than the angels," but crowned "him with glory and honour" by giving him "dominion over" God's works and by putting "all things under his feet" (Psalm 8:5-6).

Because "it is impossible to please" God "without faith" (Hebrews 11:6), God gave man a free will, just like He did with Satan. Man could choose to believe God, subdue the earth, and live forever in paradise with God, or man could disobey God's command by eating of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil (Genesis 2:16-17).

Male and Female Man

Genesis 1:27 says, "So God created man in His Own image, in the image of God created He him; male and female created He them." So, God created "him," the man, and "them," male and female, were embodied in the one man, Adam. Therefore, God made both male and female, but He only made one body for both of them to occupy together. This may sound like heresy, but this is what the Bible states. In fact, Genesis 5:1-2 is even clearer on this point: "In the day that God created man, in the likeness of God made He him; Male and female created He them; and blessed them, and called their name Adam, in the day when they were created."

God then commanded the man ("Adam" means "man.") not to eat of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil (Genesis 2:17). It was only after this commandment was given, that we are told that God said, "It is not good that the man should be alone; I will make him an help meet for him" (Genesis 2:18). Then, in Genesis 2:21, God took a rib from Adam's side and formed the female flesh and put the female component of Adam's mind into that flesh. Now, there are two bodies—a male body and a female body. In the very next verse, God brings the woman to the man, and Adam says, "This is now bone of my bones, and flesh of my flesh: she shall be called Woman, because she was taken out of Man" (Genesis 2:23).

In other words, Adam says, "The female was inside of me, God took her out of me, and gave her bones and flesh like I have. At the same time, she is like me, because God made her from one of my bones, making her of the same material as I am." Adam even calls her "Woman," which means that "she was taken out of Man." This means that she must have been in man, as the female component, in order for God to take her "out of Man."

The next verse (Genesis 2:24) says, "Therefore shall a man leave his father and his mother, and shall cleave unto his wife: and they shall be one flesh." Such a statement seems very strange. After all, God just went to the trouble of creating a separate flesh by taking the female out of Adam and by putting her into a separate body. Why would God then institute marriage, whereby the two become one? In other words, why separate the female from the male only to put the two back together? "Wherefore they are no more twain, but one flesh. What therefore God hath joined together, let not man put asunder" (Matthew 19:6). God separated the

one into two, but then He put the two back into one! Seems like God is a bit confused! However, when you consider the spiritual significance behind what God did and the order He did things in, it is pure genius. “The Lord possessed [wisdom] in the beginning of His way, before His works of old” (Proverbs 8:22).

The Woman Helps Meet the Man

Think back to what we have already said about Lucifer. He obviously had a free will, because he used that free will to rebel against God. The result of that rebellion was that God created a lake of “everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels” (Matthew 25:41). Have you ever wondered why Satan cannot receive forgiveness for his sins and be restored to his position as the anointed cherub that covereth? After all, God loves all of His creation, including the part that has rebelled. The reason Satan has no chance of redemption is because God made no provision for his forgiveness. Therefore, when iniquity was found in him, the justice of God demanded that he be eternally punished for his sins.

However, when it comes to man, by making a female flesh AFTER giving a commandment to the man, God created a way for man’s sins to be covered. Since the commandment not to eat of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil was given to the man BEFORE the woman was created, the woman never received the command, only the man did. Since “sin is not imputed when there is no law” (Romans 5:13), when the woman ate of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, she remained free from sin. This is why the sin is called “ADAM’S transgression” (Romans 5:14), not Eve’s transgression, even though she was the one who was beguiled by the serpent (II Corinthians 11:3).

Because God gave the commandment to Adam, and not to Eve, “Adam was not deceived, but the woman [was] deceived” (I Timothy 2:14). Like Lucifer, Adam used his free will to disobey God deliberately, which means that sin was imputed to Adam. Since “Adam was first formed, then Eve” (I Timothy 2:13), the woman was under Adam’s authority (I Timothy 2:12) when she ate that grape off of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil and so her eating is counted against Adam, not herself, because she did not make a free will choice to disobey God—only Adam did.

All those women, who say that the Bible is a bunch of male-chauvinist propaganda, had better be grateful that God did make them subject to man, or else Eve would have been responsible for her own sin, and all people who ever live would spend eternity in the lake of fire, just like the devil and his angels will do.

Romans 5:12 says that “by one man sin entered into the world, and death by sin; and so death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned.” In other words, Adam’s original sin is passed on to all people ever born after him through man, not through woman. God, in His foreknowledge, knew that man would sin. Therefore, He separated out the woman AFTER He gave Adam the commandment so that she did not have the opportunity to use her free will to sin against God in the original sin so that, after Adam sinned, God could declare to Satan that God would redeem

man through the pure, undefiled seed of the woman (Genesis 3:15). Thus, when God said regarding Adam, "I will make him an help meet for him" (Genesis 2:18), the woman was made so that, when man chose to sin, God could use the woman to "help meet" that sin and remove it so that man could spend eternity with God, free from sin. In other words, when Adam would sin, he would need help to be redeemed, and the woman was created to provide that help, by having a pure vessel through which the Lord Jesus Christ could be born to redeem man (This is why Jesus had to be born of a virgin.).

So, why did God make the female body after the male body was made? So, the woman could "help meet" the man in his sin and help him out of it because her seed is undefiled. This is what is meant by "help meet." Therefore, "help meet" does not refer to the woman doing all of the tasks around the house that the man does not want to do.

In Genesis 12:1-3 and 13:15, this seed of the woman is narrowed down to Abraham's seed. Then, Galatians 3:16 tells us Who this seed ultimately is: "Now to Abraham and his seed were the promises made, He saith not, And to seeds, as of many; but as of one, And to thy seed, which is Christ." This is why I Timothy 2:15 says that "she shall be saved in childbearing," because the woman will ultimately bear the Redeemer, the Lord Jesus Christ, to save mankind from his sin.

Why Marriage?

We have now answered the question of why God made man with both male and female components within him, only to separate the female out into her own body later on. But, why did God institute marriage so that the two would become one again?

The answer lies in Genesis 2:24, which says that, once the two are married, "they shall be one flesh." It does not say they are one mind, one soul, or one spirit. It says that they are only one in their flesh.

Now, it does not take a rocket scientist to figure out that men and women think differently. So, marriage is God taking two people, who have two completely different ways of thinking, and putting them together as if they are one person. If God did not do this, although the vessel through which man could be redeemed, i.e., the woman, would still be intact, there would be no one on earth to redeem. The reason is because men would have used their sin nature, coupled with their like-mindedness, to destroy themselves through fulfilling their own lusts, instead of using their free will to make the choice to believe the gospel. Therefore, the old saying, "Women! You can't live with them, and you can't live without them," is not true. The sin nature and free will together make both sexes necessary so that the conflict between the two, different minds will exist and keep humanity from completely rejecting the witness of God.

The Depth of Man's Sin

To understand this point, we need to realize that, contrary to popular belief, man is not basically good. Regarding man, God says that “they are all gone out of the way, they are together become unprofitable; there is none that doeth good, no, not one” (Romans 3:12). God further says, “That in me (that is, in my flesh,) dwelleth no good thing” (Romans 7:18). God also says that “the heart is deceitful above all things, and desperately wicked” (Jeremiah 17:9). The result is that “the wickedness of man [is] great in the earth, and that every imagination of the thoughts of his heart [is] only evil continually” (Genesis 6:5). Don't say along with the rich man, “All these things have I kept from my youth up: what lack I yet?” (Matthew 19:20). Forget about what man says that, “Oh, he is such a good person,” or “she is so kind.” They are all wrong! Remember that, in this book, we are going to let God be true and every man a liar. God says, “For ALL have sinned, and come short of the glory of God” (Romans 3:23). Everyone, apart from God's salvation for him, is a dirty, rotten scumbag who does not even deserve to breathe!

In Genesis 6, the world was so wicked that God destroyed everyone off the face of the earth, except for Noah and his family, and it took 100 years of building an ark before his family were saved (I Peter 3:20). Otherwise, only Noah would have been saved! In Genesis 11, God scattered the people of the earth into nations, and it took five generations before God found just one man, Abram, from whom He could start His Own nation, because not a single person from the previous four generations would believe God! (The way I get this is that Genesis 10:25 says that the earth was divided in the days of Peleg. Then, Genesis 11:18-26 says that Abram was the fifth generation after Peleg.)

In fact, when man united against God at Babel in Genesis 11, God said, “Behold, the people is one, and they have all one language; and this they begin to do: and now nothing will be restrained from them, which they have imagined to do. Go to, let us go down, and there confound their language, that they may not understand one another's speech” (Genesis 11:6-7). In other words, if God did not create nations at that time, the human race would have been completely given over to their own wickedness, such that God could not save anyone. Therefore, God created strife among nations to keep man from pooling his wickedness together to be lost forever, and it took five generations of this strife to produce one man who would simply believe God!

Salvation in Marriage

Thus, God created nations so that man could be reconciled to God, and God did the same thing when He created marriage. In His wisdom, God knew that man was so evil that, if He kept the male and the female parts in one body, man would use all of his knowledge to “work all uncleanness with greediness” (Ephesians 4:19) such that, even if God somehow was able to bring a Redeemer to save man, no man would believe the gospel and be saved. This is seen in the fact that, in the end, God says that, if He does not put a stop to the tribulation period after 7 years, “there should no flesh be saved” (Matthew 24:22). (As we will see later, man's so-

called ability to destroy nationalism, destroy the family unit, and choose his own gender is what leads to the condition that, if Jesus did not come back, would result in no flesh being saved.) Therefore, God put the female mind in a separate body from the male mind, but then He joined the two together in one flesh (not one body, but one flesh). Therefore, the two are to operate as one, even though they are two, distinct people and the conflict created by doing so keeps man from completely destroying himself, at least until the end of the tribulation period.

How God makes the two into one flesh is a mystery to us. Ephesians 5:31-32 says, "For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and shall be joined unto his wife, and they two shall be one flesh. This is a great mystery: but I speak concerning Christ and the church (Ephesians 5:31-32). Granted, the great mystery is Christ and the church, but the closest thing we have to this mystery in the flesh right now is the husband and wife becoming one flesh. Also, note Proverbs 30:19, which says that "the way of a man with a maid" is one of the things that man does not know about. So, how the two become one, we do not know, but it does happen, because God says that it happens.

If the husband was left to himself with nothing to check his evil, he would get involved with pornography, affairs, gambling, and countless other sins. But, there is the wife saying, "You'd better not be looking at that woman or throwing your money away on that," and so his sin is curtailed. Granted, he may still sin in his heart, but he at least does not hurt society and others by actually carrying out sins in the flesh. Similarly, if left unchecked, the wife would pursue fairy-tale romances, vanity, frivolous spending, and countless other sins. But, there is the husband saying, "You are not spending that much on a shirt or throwing away money on those earrings," and so her sin is curtailed.

In a marriage, a man and a woman make decisions that affect each other, and so each person keeps the other person from making the really bad decisions that he would make if left by himself. Let's take a house as an example. The man, by himself, would have a house, but most women would not want to live in it, because it would be cheap, in a bad neighborhood, falling apart, and filthy. The woman, by herself, would spend so much money getting the perfect house in a perfect neighborhood that she would go bankrupt and lose the house. However, together, the man and the woman have a nice house in a good neighborhood in good condition that is livable, pleasant, and affordable.

Now, let's take pride as an example. By himself, the man would think he does no wrong and would be prideful in his flesh that he could do anything he wanted to. However, with the woman around, pointing out every little fault that he does not see from his perspective, the man is humbled to know he does not have it all figured out. By herself, the woman would spend so much time on her outward beauty, that she would also become prideful in how physically attractive she is, such that she would be rude to everyone she meets. However, with the man around, the woman sees that there are other women out there who are also physically attractive, and so maybe she is not the "hot stuff" that she thinks she is. She is then humbled and treats others with respect.

Now, I realize that the house and pride examples are not completely accurate and rely upon many other factors, but I hope you can see my point that, by forcing two opposing forces (male and female) to make decisions together, God keeps sin at bay and society from destroying each other and completely rebelling against God. In other words, there are two, different but equal, intelligences in man and woman that keep everyone humble and from completely self-destructing. (Taoism, an ancient Chinese religion, describes this as the yin and the yang.)

In summary, then, God created the female body after giving the man the commandment, so that the female could save the man through Christ coming through the seed of the woman. God then joined the male and female flesh into one, still with separate minds, to keep sin in check so that the human race would survive long enough (at least 6,000 years) for enough people to use logic to see their need for Christ to save them, such that all heavenly and earthly positions in God's kingdom are filled with qualified believers to rule in God's kingdom for all eternity. Thus, the Redeemer comes from the separation of female from male, and the acceptance of the Redeemer comes from the joining together of male and female in marriage.

Four, Divine Institutions

Before discussing marriage in greater detail, we should talk more about the four, divine institutions that God made for man, as mentioned in the first 11 chapters of the Bible. These institutions are: 1) Free will, 2) Marriage, 3) Family, and 4) Nations or government.

We have already learned that man will use his free will to become utterly depraved and wicked. Therefore, God created marriage, family, and nations/government as checks to keep man's free will from destroying himself.

As already mentioned, God created marriage to keep the man and the woman from getting too extreme in each one's wicked mind. The same holds true for family and nations. Just like a man keeps a woman in check and vice-versa, their children keep them in check. The husband and wife do not want their children to make the same mistakes that they make or have made. "Train up a child in the way he should go: and when he is old, he will not depart from it" (Proverbs 22:6). Therefore, parents may curtail things like cursing, lying, and talking bad about others so that their children will not learn these bad habits from them. Children have also not been corrupted by the world when they are born, and so they may be smarter than their parents when it comes to certain things, such as knowing there is a God, when their parents may have rejected Him. The children, then, can also be reminders to their parents of things that they knew when they were kids, but have since abandoned, due to the course of this world teaching them otherwise.

Also, as we briefly mentioned earlier, God created nations so that races will have strife among each other, keeping them from uniting themselves in their rebellion against man. Nations also have the power to institute laws that keep the orderly

functioning of society going. For example, if a man has no wife and kids, he may decide to have sex with every pretty woman he can overpower and rape. However, when the government over him threatens to kill him, throw him in jail, or otherwise punish him for doing so, he will probably restrain himself and curtail his sexual desires to more legal, and less damaging, means.

Therefore, the purpose of marriage, family, and government is to limit man's free will such that he does not do evil all the time. Jeremiah 17:9 says the heart is desperately wicked. God created marriage to put a check between man and woman. God created family to put the check of both male and female upon those growing up and vice-versa. God created government to put a check of a nation upon families.

In the United States in 2019, these three checks have been more limited than they probably ever have been in this country, and their influence for God's purpose is being lessened to an increasing degree as time goes on. The checks of marriage and family have especially been attacked over the last 100 years, and we will concentrate on these in this book.

Marriage

Jesus said, "He which made them at the beginning made them male and female, And said, For this cause shall a man leave father and mother, and shall cleave to his wife: and they twain shall be one flesh. Wherefore they are no more twain, but one flesh. What therefore God hath joined together, let not man put asunder" (Matthew 19:4-6).

Romans 7:2-3 says, "For the woman which hath an husband is bound by the law to her husband so long as he liveth; but if the husband be dead, she is loosed from the law of her husband. So then if, while her husband liveth, she be married to another man, she shall be called an adulteress: but if her husband be dead, she is free from that law; so that she is no adulteress, though she be married to another man."

These two passages teach us that marriage is the joining together of the flesh of one male and one female for life.

How are a man and a woman joined in marriage? Most everyone would agree that marriage is when two people agree, before witnesses and someone legally authorized to marry them, to partner their lives together as one for the rest of their lives. However, this is NOT how God defines marriage.

Sex = Marriage

I Corinthians 6:16 says, "What? know ye not that he which is joined to an harlot is one body? for two, saith He, shall be one flesh." With regard to levels of commitment when a man and a woman have sex, sex with a prostitute is the lowest level of commitment that there is. It is when a man has sex with a woman

purely for pleasure, and the woman agrees to have sex with him purely for money. Once the sexual act is over, the man leaves and the two of them may never see each other again. In the minds of the two people involved, the commitment is less than when a man and a woman go out to dinner on a blind date, and yet God says that, when a man has sex with a prostitute, he has married her. Therefore, we must conclude that, in God's eyes, a lifetime commitment of marriage takes place in ALL CASES when a man and a woman have sex together. Therefore, the sexual act, regardless of how casual it is, is how God joins two fleshs into one flesh.

We even see this idea in the previously quoted passage of Romans 7:2-3. "So then if, while her husband liveth, she be married to another man, she shall be called an adulteress." Adultery is defined as having sex with someone who is not your spouse. Note that Romans 7:3 does NOT say, "So then if, while her husband liveth, she has sex with another man, she shall be called an adulteress." Rather, it says, "So then if, while her husband liveth, she be MARRIED to another man, she shall be called an adulteress." Thus, having sex with a man is the same for the woman as marrying the man. (This is probably why the word "sex" is not found in the Bible. It is a word man created to try to separate sex from marriage.) By this definition then, most adults in the United States are polygamists!

This is why I Corinthians 6:18 says, "Flee fornication. Every sin that a man doeth is without the body; but he that committeth fornication sinneth against his own body." (Fornication is a general, Bible term for any type of sexual sin.) So, why is sexual sin the only sin against your own body? Because, when you have sex, you are joining your flesh to another person's flesh so that the two people, no matter how "casual" the relationship is, become one flesh. So, then, when you have sex with someone else, you have sinned against your spouse, who is your own flesh, meaning that you have sinned against your own body. Therefore, if I marry a woman by standing before a priest, signing a document, and having three witnesses to the marriage, but I had sex with a prostitute before I married this woman, by formally marrying the woman, I am really sinning against my own body, because I was already married to the prostitute.

"That's crazy," you may say, "there was no commitment with the prostitute, but there is commitment with the other woman you married." Not according to God. God says that a lifetime commitment between a man and a woman is made when the two of them have sex. It does not matter if the man and the woman recognize this commitment; they have still made the commitment. This is also seen in Deuteronomy 22:28-29, "If a man find a damsel that is a virgin, which is not betrothed, and lay hold on her, and lie with her, and they be found; Then the man that lay with her shall give unto the damsel's father fifty shekels of silver, and she shall be his wife; because he hath humbled her, **he may not put her away all his days.**" Therefore, according to God, there is no such thing as "casual sex." Rather, sex between a man and a woman equals a lifetime commitment.

Jesus verifies this by saying that, "What therefore God hath joined together, let not man put asunder" (Matthew 19:6). Man makes a lifetime, marriage commitment just by having sex with a prostitute or with any woman. It does not matter if a

priest sanctions it, both families rejoice over it, or that Matthew 19:6 is read to apply only to the marriage in the church, it is STILL fornication and a sin against the man's own body when he has sex with a woman after having lost his virginity with someone else because **sex equals marriage**.

Now, I realize that most Christians today are in a polygamist predicament and would say, "There is no way I could honor any previous marriage, so, why should that prevent me from getting legally married?" We will answer this question and many more as we go forward in this book. Right now, we are just establishing what is marriage in the eyes of God.

(Man likes to say "there is no God," because it means he is not accountable to God, meaning that he can do whatever he wants to do. Similarly speaking, man likes to say, "there is no marriage in sex," so that he is not accountable for taking care of his spouse, meaning that he can do whatever he wants to do. This is why the concept of sex equaling marriage is so foreign to man. Remember, we are going to let God be true and every man a liar. Therefore, this book takes God's position that sex equals marriage in ALL cases.)

Sex Is Not Dirty

Since sex brings two people into one, it is absolutely essential that we understand what God says about sex. Since God joins a man and a woman together in marriage and He does so by them having sex with each other, we can conclude that sex is not dirty. Rather, it is a beautiful thing that God designed that actually incorporates all four of His divine institutions. The man and the woman make the free-will decision to have sex (divine institution #1). In doing so, they become married (divine institution #2). Having sex under the right conditions causes the woman to be pregnant, which makes the man, the woman, and the child a family (divine institution #3). Finally, many men and women of a particular cultural group choosing to do this results in a nation (divine institution #4). Since God designed sex to be so integral to every aspect of society, why do people almost completely ignore what God says about it?

CHAPTER 2

God's Plan for the Universe **(Includes Man's Rebellion and Satan's Attack)**

Man's Rebellion Against God

The reason man completely ignores what God says about sex is because man wants to be his own God. When Adam ate of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, the sin nature became part of him. This sin nature is to know good and evil with the natural tendency to accuse others of sin, while excusing yourself of your own sin (Romans 2:14-15). As such, man elevates himself to be God, attempting to ignore the internal witness he has within himself about the existence of the Creator God and His worthiness to be worshipped by all humans (Romans 1:19-20).

Spirit, Soul, and Body

Before we discuss sex in any detail, we must first understand what 99.9% of Christians do not understand, and that is the operations of the flesh, the soul, and the spirit.

Man is a three-part being—spirit, soul, and flesh. The soul is your inner being. It is who you really are, and it will live forever. According to Ephesians 2:1, before we trust in Jesus' death, burial, and resurrection as atonement for our sins (I Corinthians 15:3-4), our spirit is dead. Granted, our spirit is alive in our bodies or else we would not be alive. Ephesians 2:1 is really saying that our spirit is functionally dead in the spirit realm but alive in the physical realm.

The reason for this death is sin. God told Adam, “But of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, thou shalt not eat of it: for IN THE DAY that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die” (Genesis 2:17). Adam ate of the tree in Genesis 3:6. Yet, Adam lived another 900 years or so after eating of the tree (Genesis 5:3-5). This tells us that the death that Adam experienced was a spiritual death, not a physical one. Since all have sinned and come short of the glory of God (Romans 3:23), all of us are dead in our trespasses and sins (Ephesians 2:1). Romans 5:12 sums this up by saying, “Wherefore, as by one man sin entered into the world, and death by sin; and so death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned.” Since the wages of sin is death (Romans 6:23), if we stay in this condition, we will spend eternity in sheer torment in the lake of fire, because a holy God cannot be in the presence of unholy man, as we would mar His holiness. (God said, “Be ye holy; for I am holy” (I Peter 1:16).) Therefore, all men, as a result of sin, have dead spirits and alive bodies.

However, God loves us and does not want us to remain in this condition (John 3:16). Therefore, He sent His Son to live a perfect life and die on the cross for our sins (Romans 5:8). Today, once we trust in Jesus' death, burial, and resurrection as atonement for our sins, God gives us the gift of eternal life (I Corinthians 15:3-4; Romans 6:23). When He does this, “our old man is crucified with Him, that the body of sin might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serve sin” (Romans 6:6). What this means is that our flesh is now “dead with Christ” (Romans 6:8), because we have been baptized into Christ's death (Romans 6:3). Since we are “buried with Him by baptism into death” (Romans 6:4), we are also quickened

together with Christ and raised up with Him to sit together in heavenly places with Christ Jesus (Ephesians 2:5-6). Therefore, “ye are dead, and your life is hid with Christ in God” (Colossians 3:3). In other words, God considers your flesh to be dead, makes your spirit alive in Christ, and gives you the gift of eternal life.

In summary, all unbelievers have alive bodies and dead spirits, and all believers have dead bodies and alive spirits. I realize that, in this material world, an unbeliever’s spirit gives him breath by which his body functions, and a believer’s body gives him lust by which he can disobey God. However, in the spirit world, an unbeliever’s spirit is dead, and a believer’s flesh is dead. The spirit world is what really counts, because it lasts forever, while “heaven and earth shall pass away” (Matthew 24:35).

God’s Plan for the Universe

With this in mind, let’s take a look at the spirit world. When God created the heaven and the earth (Genesis 1:1), God’s desire was for man to rule with Him on the earth and in heaven, and the man, who would be in charge of all of this is the Lord Jesus Christ. We see this from Ephesians 1:10: “That in the dispensation of the fulness of times He might gather together in one all things in Christ, both which are in heaven, and which are on earth; even in Him.” It is Christ, then, who is the man who will rule over both realms with believers being in rulership positions under Him.

We see Jesus as the ruler of the earth in Hebrews 2:6-10, which states that God gave dominion of the earth to man and put all things under His feet, and this man is Christ Jesus. Right now, we do not see Jesus ruling on the earth. Right now, we see that Jesus died to taste death for every man so that He could bring many sons unto glory, meaning that He died so that men could rule with Him, once death is put away, as I Corinthians 15:23-28 tells us. An example of man ruling with Jesus on the earth is seen in that Jesus said that the 12 apostles would sit on 12 thrones judging the 12 tribes of Israel (Matthew 19:28), and that Israel will rule over the Gentiles on the earth (Revelation 5:10).

With regard to heaven, God has put the body of Christ in charge of ruling with Christ in heavenly places. Ephesians 1:20-23 says that Christ is seated at the Father’s right hand in heavenly places, He is “far above all principality, and power, and might, and dominion, and every name that is named.” This means that Christ is the top ruler in heavenly places, as well. Since He is the head, Christ has given “all things to the church, which is His body, the fulness of Him that filleth all in all.” This means that Christ uses the body of Christ to fill rulership positions in heaven. This is why Ephesians 1:3 says that “God...hath blessed us with all spiritual blessings in heavenly places in Christ.”

Therefore, God’s plan for the universe is to have “the man Christ Jesus” (I Timothy 2:5) rule the heaven and the earth with believing man ruling with Him. God is able to do this because He is “the most high God, possessor of heaven and earth” (Genesis 14:19).

Satan's Plan for the Universe – Sexual Sin

As we mentioned earlier, Satan said, “I will be like the most High” (Isaiah 14:14). In other words, Satan wants to be the possessor of heaven and earth. Satan’s plan for this to happen is getting man to commit sexual sin. What is so special about sexual sin that would make it Satan’s primary attack against God’s plan?

First, we need to understand that the things that God put in the earth are things that are types of the true in heaven. For example, God made the sun, moon, and stars, and one of the purposes of these lights is that they are “for signs” (Genesis 1:14-18). In Genesis 37:9, Joseph has a dream in which the sun, moon, and eleven stars bow down to him, and Jacob recognizes the sun is Jacob, the moon is Jacob’s wife, and the stars are Jacob’s sons (Genesis 37:10). In Revelation 12:1, a woman with the sun, moon, and twelve stars is seen. This woman is Israel, since she gives birth to the Lord Jesus Christ (Revelation 12:5). As such, the things of this earth were created by God as types of the eternal. This is why Paul says that we need to look at the things which are not seen. The things which are seen are only temporal or temporary, while the things which are not seen are eternal (II Corinthians 4:18). We look at these eternal things through faith, since “faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen” (Hebrews 11:1).

Sex Is a Temporary Plan

When it comes to sex, it is something that is temporal. Jesus said that, “in the resurrection [people] neither marry, nor are given in marriage, but are as the angels of God in heaven” (Matthew 22:30). In other words, sex, which is the same thing as marriage, is temporal. It is “a shadow of things to come” (Colossians 2:17). If the sun, moon, and stars represent Israel, what do sex and marriage represent?

We have already seen the answer in Ephesians 5:25-33, where Paul lists physical marriage between a husband and wife as a type of our “marriage” to Christ as us being the body of Christ and Him being the head. (Also see I Corinthians 12:27 where we are called “the body of Christ,” and Ephesians 5:23, where Christ is called “the head of the church.”) This in relation to Christ’s rule in heaven. With regard to Christ’s rule on earth, we see the same thing. Revelation 19:7-9 mentions the marriage of the Lamb, and the wife has made herself ready. “The bride, the Lamb’s wife” turns out to be “holy Jerusalem” (Revelation 21:9-10), which is saved Israel (Revelation 21:2-4; 14:1).

Therefore, God’s plan is to reconcile heaven and earth back to Himself through Christ and Christ’s people. Christ, as the head, will “marry” His body, the church, to rule the heaven, and Christ, as the bridegroom, will “marry” His bride, saved Israel, to rule the earth. Therefore, sex and marriage are a fleshly picture of the spiritual marriages that Christ will have in heaven and in earth for all eternity. As such, sex and marriage in this fallen world are temporal, while the marriages of Christ to His body in heaven and His bride on earth are eternal. (Therefore, the reason that Jesus said that “in the resurrection they neither marry, nor are given in marriage, but are as the angels of God in heaven” (Matthew 22:30) is because

the temporal (fleshly marriage between a man and a woman) has been replaced by the eternal (spiritual marriage between Jesus and believers).

Since sex and marriage are a type of the true, if Satan can get man to go after sex, he can get man to forsake what is eternal for the temporal, and Satan wins. Why does he win?

Well, God's plan involves bringing about the seed of the woman (Christ) to be the Redeemer and placing believing man into marriage with Christ to rule with Him for all eternity. Since "God cannot be tempted with evil" (James 1:13), God will not fail in His plan. However, Satan can attack man to keep man from believing God. Romans 11:25-26 says that, once the fulness of the Gentiles be come in, all Israel will be saved. This means that, if Satan can keep the Gentiles from believing the gospel and coming unto the knowledge of the truth (I Timothy 2:4), Christ will not have enough qualified members of the body of Christ to fill heaven and so Satan and his forces will continue to occupy those positions. This also keeps Israel from being saved, since the fulness of the Gentiles must come in before Israel is saved. Therefore, Satan will continue to be "the god of this world" (II Corinthians 4:4), and God's plan will not work.

Since Christ did what He needed to do to redeem man, the only way man is not married to Christ is if man does not believe the gospel. Therefore, we now need to look at what God has done so that man will believe Him, and what Satan does to keep man from believing God.

The Conscience

We mentioned earlier that God told Adam not to eat of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil. Satan tempted Eve to eat of that tree by saying that, "God doth know that in the day ye eat thereof, then your eyes shall be opened, and ye shall be as gods, knowing good and evil" (Genesis 3:5). Satan was correct about that, as seen by the fact that, when they ate of the tree, "the eyes of them both were opened" (Genesis 3:7). This knowledge is what scripture calls "the conscience."

Again, this was a genius plan by God. The reason for this is because God had given dominion of the earth to man, and Satan had rebelled against God. Since Satan is stronger than man (Jeremiah 31:11), man would have to rely upon God to defeat Satan for him so that man would have dominion over the earth forever. Therefore, man needed to have faith in God. This is why only faith pleases God (Hebrews 11:6). So, if Adam has faith, he can continue to have dominion over the earth. However, if Adam does not have faith, Satan becomes the god of this world (II Corinthians 4:4), and Satan wins if God cannot reconcile man back to God. Now, God can send the man, Christ Jesus, to live the perfect life and die for man's sin. However, because of man's free will, if man chooses not to believe God, man is still defeated by Satan and cannot be part of God's kingdom. So, God sets up a command regarding the tree of the knowledge of good and evil so that man can make a free-will decision, whether to trust God or not. The reason God made a command about that particular tree is that, if he ate of the tree, he would

spiritually die, but in doing so, he would also receive the conscience.

The conscience is the tool that God uses to get man to believe Him. By eating of the tree, Adam decided that he knew better than God did. In other words, Adam determined that he did not need to obey God in order to rule the earth. Rather, he could be his own god and make his own rules. In doing so, he immediately lost dominion of the earth to Satan. Now, God is still over all, stronger than Satan, and could get that rule back for man. However, if man used his free will to be in rebellion against God, Satan would always be the god of this world. Man must use his free will to trust God to save him from Satan's grasp.

God has lighted every man that cometh into the world with the knowledge of God (John 1:9). God has also shown to every man the invisible things of Him, His eternal power and Godhead, so that man is without excuse (Romans 1:20). Yet, how is man going to trust God, when he is now separated from God, due to his sin? I John 4:20 says that man cannot love God, Whom he hath not seen, when he does not love his brother, whom he has seen. Similarly, how can man trust God, Whom he cannot see, when all that he sees is "the lust of the flesh, and the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life" (I John 2:16)?

Therefore, God gave man the conscience, i.e., the ability to know right from wrong, when he ate of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil. Romans 2:14-15 says that the conscience is "the law written in their hearts," which means that men have "a law unto themselves." God did NOT give us the conscience to try to get us to do good. Rather, the law of the conscience "was our schoolmaster to bring us unto Christ, that we might be justified by faith. But after that faith is come, we are no longer under a schoolmaster" (Galatians 3:24-25)." In other words, God gave man the conscience to teach him that he is a sinner and needs God to save him. Once man learns this lesson, he no longer needs the conscience. This is why Hebrews 9:14 says that "the blood of Christ [purges] your conscience from dead works to serve the living God," and Galatians 2:19 says, "For I through the law am dead to the law, that I might live unto God."

Romans 7:7 says, "I had not known sin, but by the law: for I had not known lust, except the law had said, Thou shalt not covet." Now, we see why God gave us the conscience. I have the sin nature, and the wages of sin is death (Romans 6:23). However, everyone around me is sinning. All I see in this world is "the lust of the flesh, and the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life" (I John 2:16). So, I look at myself, and I look pretty good compared with everyone else. "But they measuring themselves by themselves, and comparing themselves among themselves, are not wise" (II Corinthians 10:12). If all I do is compare myself with others, my pride will tell me that I am no worse off than others. Therefore, I must be okay. The result will be that I will not have faith in God, and Satan will win.

Therefore, God had to give us a perfect standard by which to compare ourselves, and that perfect standard is the conscience. "Wherefore the law is holy, and the commandment holy, and just, and good" (Romans 7:12). "But sin, taking occasion by the commandment, wrought in me all manner of concupiscence....For sin,

taking occasion by the commandment, deceived me, and by it slew me....But sin, THAT IT MIGHT APPEAR SIN, working death in me by that which is good; that sin by the commandment might become exceeding sinful” (Romans 7:8-13). In other words, God gave us the conscience so that it would work with the conscience so that we would see how bad our sin is, because our sin needs to exceed our selfish pride so that we see that we have fallen short of the glory of God (Romans 3:23) so that we will then look for the solution, which is to believe the gospel.

For example, if I have a drinking problem, I may say, “I don’t have a drinking problem. I can quit when I want to.” However, if I wreck my car due to being drunk, I may say, “Wow! I really do have a problem.” Things had to get worse before I saw how bad off I really was. In a sense, this is why God gives us the conscience, so that it can work with our sin nature to create more sin so that we see our sin problem and look to God to save us.

Satan’s Attack of the Gospel

Therefore, Satan needs to do one of two things to get us not to believe God so that he can be the most high God: 1) Destroy the gospel, and 2) Destroy the internal witness of God and the conscience that God has placed within all of mankind.

Today’s gospel is to recognize you are a sinner and trust in Jesus’ death, burial, and resurrection as atonement for your sin (I Corinthians 15:3-4). However, most people have never heard a clear gospel message. Even most people who go to church regularly have never heard the clear gospel. This is because “the god of this world hath blinded the minds of them which believe not, lest the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine unto them” (II Corinthians 4:4). He has done this by having his ministers pretend to be ministers of righteousness (II Corinthians 11:13-15), handling God’s Word deceitfully (II Corinthians 4:2), to make people think that they are going to heaven by working their way toward heaven, when they really are not because our works cannot save us. The fact, that so many people are going to hell, who really think they are going to heaven, shows that Satan has done an excellent job in trying to destroy the gospel.

However, the problem is that the Word of God cannot be destroyed. “Evil men and seducers shall wax worse and worse” (II Timothy 3:13), but God has promised to preserve His Word forever (Psalm 12:6-7). Since “the word of our God shall stand for ever” (Isaiah 40:8), anyone, who diligently seeks the Lord will find Him and believe the gospel (Hebrews 11:6). Therefore, Satan must also destroy the internal witness of God and the conscience that God has placed within man. After all, if no one cares about the gospel, no one will believe the gospel. Satan has also done a good job at this, as seen by the fact that a Bible can be purchased in the United States for \$1 from the 99 Cent Only Store or the Dollar Tree, and yet Bibles just sit on the shelves unpurchased. Among those Bibles that are purchased, most of them are unread. Of those that are read, most are not believed. You can also see that Satan’s attack against the internal witness of God has proven successful in that very few people think they are not good, at least to some extent. Therefore,

they do not see the problem of their sin and need for a Saviour.

Satan's Attack of the Internal Witness and the Conscience

So, how does Satan attack God's internal witness and the conscience? Romans 1:19-32 gives us the answer. Romans 1:19-20 tells us that God has manifested Himself to everyone who is born. Man chose to ignore that knowledge. He became vain in his own imaginations, rather than believing the witness of his conscience, such that his foolish heart was darkened (Romans 1:21). "The fool hath said in his heart, there is no God" (Psalm 14:1, 53:1). This means that the definition of a fool is someone who says that there is no God. Man is a fool because he has rejected the knowledge that God gave him. The problem is that there is no getting around the fact that there is a God. So, if he rejects God, he has to create a god to replace Him.

Woman Is God

Therefore, he takes the incorruptible God and downgrades Him to an image like unto corruptible man and animals (Romans 1:23). Among the corruptible world, the highest creation, in his mind, is the opposite sex, since that is the only mind, among the corruptible creation, that he cannot figure out. So, man starts worshipping woman by having sex with multiple women. This is seen in God's statement in Romans 1:24 that men started to "dishonour their own bodies between themselves." (Remember that sexual sin is the only sin that a person can do against his own body. Therefore, sexual sin is the sin, referenced in Romans 1:24, that dishonours a person's body.)

Man Is God

Since they "changed the truth of God into a lie, and worshipped and served the creature more than the Creator" (1:25), they are now following Satan's lie program (John 8:44). The nature of sin is that it only gives pleasure for a season (Hebrews 11:25). Just like a drug addict, a sin addict has to delve deeper into sin in order to try to get the same pleasure out of it that he had initially. As a result, he discovers that his god of the opposite sex is not god after all, as he finds fault with his god.

Therefore, he now thinks that the same sex is god, resulting in the practice of sodomy. We see this in Romans 1:26-27, where "the men, leaving the natural use of the woman, burned in their lust one toward another; men with men working that which is unseemly."

Self Is God

Sodomy works for a while, because a man thinks a lot more like another man than a woman does. However, two men still have their differences in thought. Therefore, after the sinful pleasure of sodomy decreases to a certain point, God gives man over to a reprobate mind, from which proceeds a long list of evil things (Romans 1:29-31). In other words, man rejects the same sex as god and makes himself to be

god. As such, he can do whatever he wants to, which explains the list in Romans 1:29-31.

The reprobate mind is the mind that has fully rejected God in his knowledge (Romans 1:28). Therefore, he will never believe the gospel, even if it is clearly presented to him, because he will not see the need for it. After all, the gospel involves recognizing your sin, and a god has no sin. Therefore, if Satan can get man to the reprobate-mind state, then no one will be saved, and Satan wins.

Notice that Satan does this all through sexual sin. First, man becomes a polygamist by having sex with multiple women. Then, he defiles himself further by having sex with the same sex. Then, he defiles himself even further by making up his own rules, not allowing anyone to tell him what to do. This is why so many people today think that you have no right to judge them, because they are their own god. Note also, that the first sin listed in the reprobate-mind state is “fornication” (Romans 1:29). This would include all sexual sins—whatever his lustful heart desires. This is why you hear of people who will sleep with both men and women. The person does not matter, only the pleasure does. Thus, sexual sin is intricately related to Satan’s policy of evil, which is why we have discussed the degeneration of man in detail here.

Sodom and Gomorrah

As we just learned, once a society is completely given over to sodomy, man no longer has the knowledge of God within him and so God gives him over to a reprobate mind, whereby he will never believe the gospel. At that point, there is nothing worth saving in that society, which is why God destroyed the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah (Genesis 19:24-25), since they were completely given over to sodomy (Genesis 19:4-11). (You know they were by the fact that same-sex fornication is referred to as “sodomy,” since it was so dominant in “Sodom.”)

The Destruction of the Type

As we mentioned before, one of the purposes of physical marriage is to be a type of Christ’s spiritual marriage to believers. Therefore, when Satan destroys God’s definition of marriage, the type is destroyed, and man falls into such great depths of unbelief that he will never recover from them.

The downward spiral of sin, found in Romans 1:19-32, is exactly what has happened in the United States. In the 1950s, the US fell into opposite-sex sin. In the 1980s, the US fell into the sin of sodomy. Now, in 2019, many people think they are their own god, fulfilling the lusts of the flesh in all types of sexual sin. In this status, they cannot be saved, due to their reprobate minds. In fact, most people, who attend seeker-friendly churches, have reprobate minds right now, because they cannot even understand the gospel when you present it to them, much less believe it! Society cannot go on like this for much longer before it is destroyed.

The Pleasure of Sex

As mentioned before, God created marriage and family as two divine checks of free will to keep man's wickedness in check so that man would not destroy himself and so that man would still have the ability to believe the gospel in order to be saved.

Since the male mind and the female mind are completely different, the only way men and women would use their free will to go along with God's plan of marriage and family is if these ideals appealed to their flesh, since all people, until they believe the gospel, can only operate in their flesh.

Therefore, God made sex the most pleasurable experience that a person could have, so that people would desire to have sex. He made the male and female bodies so that sex would work best only with a male and a female. He made sex between a male and a female the only way that humans could reproduce so that children would be created by sex, thus creating the family. He made women beautiful so that men would desire to have sex with women. He made the woman's mind to be family oriented, so that she would desire to have children. This is important, since she would have to go through incredible pain in order to have children, as part of the curse of sin (Genesis 3:16). He also made sex equal marriage, as we discussed earlier, and created the rule that marriage is only to be between one man and one woman. This would keep the family stable, since the man and the woman would be around to raise the children, as they would not, in God's design, be going after multiple partners.

Therefore, by making sex to be so pleasurable, men and women would marry and have kids, causing the human population to grow and continue. The men and the women would also help keep each other's sin nature in check so they would not have reprobate minds so that they could, in fact, recognize their sin and believe the gospel. In so doing, God would eventually have the quantity and the quality of people necessary to fill the government positions in Christ in heaven and earth so that man can rule in those realms as God planned all along.

The Sexual Revolution

Of course, Satan does not want God's plan to be fulfilled. Therefore, if he can get man to abandon marriage and family, two of God's three checks against man's free will would be torn down, causing Satan to win, since no one would listen to God, meaning that no one would be saved. We see Satan's great attack against marriage and family in the sexual revolution in the United States, beginning around the 1920s. That is not to say that Satan was not successful in attacking God's plan for sex, marriage, and family before this. In fact, by looking at scripture, we will see that he has been successful from the very beginning. However, in the United States, we do not see pervasive victories in this arena and the downward spiral of sin beginning until the 1920s.

What we will find is that Satan's attack against marriage and family becomes widely successful in the United States as a result of technology and economic

prosperity.

Pleasure Not to Be Separated from Marriage and Family

The reason God made sex so pleasurable is so men and women would get married and have children so that marriage and the family would be the two, major checks to keep sin at bay so that people may hear the gospel and be saved. It is absolutely essential that we understand that God never intended for the pleasure of sex to be separated from the responsibility of having children. This is seen in Genesis 38. There, Judah's firstborn son, Er, married a woman named Tamar. The Lord slew Er because he was wicked. The law required that the secondborn son, Onan, marry Tamar and raise children that would count for Er, the firstborn son. Onan married Tamar by having sex with her, but he spilled his semen on the ground so that he would not impregnate Tamar. In other words, Onan wanted to have the pleasure of sex without the responsibility of children. We are told that "the thing which he did displeased the Lord: wherefore He slew him also" (Genesis 38:10). In other words, the Lord took the separation of sex from having children so seriously that He killed Onan for doing this. This shows that God does not condone the separation of the pleasure of sex from the responsibility of having children.

(Another logical conclusion from this passage is that God does not condone the use of condoms for the purpose of preventing pregnancies, even among "married" couples. The fact, that such a statement would be condemned by almost all of Churchianity today, shows how far our society is from God's Biblical standards. Society says that "safe sex" is using a condom, but God says that the safest sex of all is no sex. Even Tammy Bruce, a lesbian feminist, says that "Abstinence is the only true safe sex" ("The Death of Right and Wrong: Exposing the Left's Assault on our culture and values" by Tammy Bruce, 2003, Forum by Random House, pg. 213). When a lesbian feminist speaks more truth than Churchianity does, something is wrong!)

Sexual Pleasure Separated from Pregnancy

"In me (that is, in my flesh,) dwelleth no good thing" (Romans 7:18). "The heart is deceitful above all things, and desperately wicked" (Jeremiah 17:9). "Every imagination of the thoughts of [man's] heart was only evil continually" (Genesis 6:5). "There is none righteous, no, not one.... There is none that doeth good, no, not one" (Romans 3:10,12).

These verses basically tell us that all my flesh wants to do is "to work all uncleanness with greediness" (Ephesians 4:19). As we have already discussed, that is exactly what unsaved people would do all the time, except that God set up marriage, family, and government as checks to the sin nature so that man does not work out his depravity to its maximum ability.

Of all the sins you can do, sexual sin is the most desirable to the flesh. The reason for this is because God made sex the most desirable thing that a human can experience, or else people would never get married and raise a family. Satan is also

very desirous of you committing sexual sin, because it is the only sin that can be committed against your own body (I Corinthians 6:18). Therefore, sexual sin destroys you like no other sin.

CHAPTER 3

Men and Women Are Different

The Difference Between Women's and Men's Minds

“But and if thou marry, thou hast not sinned; and if a virgin marry, she hath not sinned. Nevertheless such shall have trouble in the flesh: but I spare you” (I Corinthians 7:28).

God has promised that, when a man and a woman get married, they will have trouble in the flesh. (Somehow, I am not surprised that this promise of God does not get mentioned in “Christian” books about God’s promises to us.) The reason for this trouble is because women and men think differently, because God made us to think differently.

How Men and Women Differ

First, we must understand that God made men and women differently. One is not better than the other; they are just different. In summary, God made the man to be the thinker, and the woman to be the doer. Titus 2:4-5 says that young women are “to be sober, to love their husbands, to love their children, to be discreet, chaste, keepers at home, good, obedient to their own husbands, that the Word of God be not blasphemed.” Titus 2:6 says that young men are to be sober minded. Young women are given eight things to do, while young men are given only one thing to do. Why? Because young men need to concentrate on studying God’s Word so that God teaches them how to guide their wives. Young women do not have to worry about this because they are to obey their husbands. So, if their husbands are doing their job of reading and believing God’s Word and teaching it to their wives, the wives can obey their husbands and the word of God is not blasphemed.

The reason God set things up this way is because women are the most beautiful of God’s creation on this earth. Therefore, the world looks at women, while they do not look at men as much. If two, complete strangers walk by you—one man and one woman—and both of them are good looking by the world’s standards, you will probably pay more attention to the woman than the man. If you are a man, you look at the woman because she is more beautiful to look at than the man is. If you are a woman, even though you are attracted to men, you still look at the woman, because she is your competition for the attention of men (Of course, I am speaking in generalities. There are always exceptions to the rule.). Therefore, you look at the woman’s hair, makeup, jewelry, outfit, style, attitude, etc., to see how good looking she is compared to you. If she is more good looking, you can take notes so that you can change your appearance to be more attractive. If you are more good looking, you can feel good about your own attractiveness. This is seen by the fact that women are always complimenting other women on their appearance. You may hear a woman tell another woman, “I love those shoes. Where did you get them?” or “Those earrings go great with that top.” On the other hand, you will never hear a man tell another man, “That shirt brings out the blue in your eyes,” or “I love how those pants go with your shoes.”

Now, a woman may say, “I’m married. I don’t need to look attractive.” I realize

some women are not that concerned with looks and fashion. However, women still may have insecurities regarding their husbands staying with them or with outward adornment being important, at least to some extent, in order to feel loved or important. I say this because the Bible addresses this very issue for women, but not for men.

I Peter 3:2-4 says that a woman should have a “chaste conversation coupled with fear.” She should not let her adorning be “that outward adorning of plaiting the hair, and of wearing of gold, or of putting on of apparel; But let it be the hidden man of the heart, in that which is not corruptible, even the ornament of a meek and quiet spirit, which is in the sight of God of great price.” In other words, a problem that women have in their flesh is that, because they are God’s most beautiful creature, they know they are competing with other women to be the most beautiful of the women (This is why there are beauty pageants for women, but not for men.). Therefore, their flesh wants to make themselves look as beautiful as possible on the outside. God addresses this by saying that a woman should have “the ornament of a meek and quiet spirit.” In other words, women are to adorn their inner souls, rather than their outer flesh.

This is why Proverbs 31:30 warns that, “Favour is deceitful, and beauty is vain: but a woman that feareth the Lord, she shall be praised.” (Contrast this with Jesus, of Whom it is said: “There is no beauty that we should desire Him” (Isaiah 53:2).) Women have this problem much more than men do.

The problem with men is that they try to adorn their flesh, not with makeup or jewels, but with an outward display of godliness. This is why II Timothy 3 talks about men being lovers of themselves, having a FORM of godliness. (II Timothy 3:2,5). Jesus equates this to being “like unto whited sepulchres, which indeed appear beautiful outward, but are within full of dead men’s bones, and of all uncleanness” (Matthew 23:27).

Therefore, for the most part, women do not care about doctrine. They just care about their feelings and looking good. This is why women take a long time to get ready for church, and why churches today sing a lot of “worship” songs that make people feel good, because women control churches today. On the other hand, men, for the most part, do not care what they wear to church or what songs are being sung, but they do want to hear some good preaching. “Good preaching,” as most men define it, is learning things their flesh is interested in so that they look good to others by how much they know. In other words, men love looking good to others by appearing to know what they are talking about, regarding things that pertain to the flesh, i.e., having a form of godliness. (This is why men HATE it when women correct them.)

For example, most of Churchianity is caught up in things like, if the earth is flat or not, if Jesus suffered in hell as atonement for our sins, who are the “spirits in prison” that He preached to (I Peter 3:19), and what happened to Abraham’s bosom once Jesus died on the cross (Luke 16:22)? However, very few churchgoers will ever ask me how does Christ live in them (Galatians 2:20) and how do they

present their bodies a living sacrifice to God (Romans 12:1)? This is because the former feeds the flesh so that they can sound theologically smarter than someone else, while the latter feeds the spirit and puts the flesh to death, which the flesh is none too happy about. Therefore, theological questions of little significance are focused on by most men, who go to church, while the most important sound doctrine in God's Word for them goes unlearned.

Because men controlled churches when I was growing up, many churches sang a couple of hymns followed by preaching from God's Word about interesting topics to the flesh. Paul calls these topics "foolish and unlearned questions," which "gender strifes" (II Timothy 2:23), and the hymns conveyed doctrine that went along with church teachings. This allowed men to sit around and brag about what they learned in church.

Today, since women control churches, women are concerned with the details, not the end result. Therefore, churches spend money on interior decorating and programs that placate the flesh. (Some women go to their church because of the large steeple or the stained-glass windows.) They devote a lot more time to singing, and this singing is of worship songs that concentrate on feelings, rather than hymns, which concentrate on doctrine. The preaching does not last as long, and a Bible may not be cracked open once by anyone in the congregation. Instead, current events, politics, and new-age philosophies are preached.

Given these differences, a woman's flesh will try to get her husband to go to church with her so that she feels good and looks good to others through the "fair shew in the flesh" of looking good and experiencing good feelings through songs, while man's flesh will try to get his wife to go to church with him to make his "fair shew in the flesh" by getting her to learn and follow the church's doctrine (Galatians 6:12). Either way is the wrong approach.

Your God-Given Role

Now that we have identified major differences between how men and women think, we need to look at God's pre-defined roles for men and women.

The man's job is to be the head of the woman (I Corinthians 11:3). Eve was deceived by Satan; Adam was not deceived (I Timothy 2:14). Satan is "the god of this world" today (II Corinthians 4:4). This means that women are much more likely to be deceived by the world than men are. This is not to say that women are stupid. It just means that women are the doers while men are the thinkers, because that is the way God made them. This means that women are more likely than men are to follow their emotions into sin.

In other words, women can get distracted by the details of their environment much more easily than men get distracted. God commanded that Adam was not to eat of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil (Genesis 2:17). Eve did not rely upon God's Word. Rather, she "saw that the tree was good for food, and that it was pleasant to the eyes, and a tree to be desired to make one wise." Once she saw

those things, “She took of the fruit thereof, and did eat, and gave also unto her husband with her; and he did eat” (Genesis 3:6). Eve looked at the details, decided that the details were good, and disobeyed God. Adam was not deceived by the looks of the tree (I Timothy 2:14). However, he did not want to argue with his wife. Therefore, he disobeyed God, knowing that he had disobeyed God. Thus, Adam let the woman control him, and the result was sin.

A Woman’s Mind

Basically, a man seeks to get things done, while a woman seeks to get things done correctly (as she defines “correctly”). This means that a woman is concerned with the process, while the man is only concerned with the result. This is because God has entrusted the wife to be the servant of her husband. “The head of the woman is the man” (I Corinthians 11:3). “Wives, submit yourselves unto your own husbands, as unto the Lord” (Ephesians 5:22). (This is why there is “women’s intuition.” Women have the innate ability to see hidden meanings, whereas men are clueless on this.)

Jesus told His disciples, “when ye shall have done all those things which are commanded you, say, we are unprofitable servants: we have done that which was our duty to do” (Luke 17:10). In other words, the master tells the servant what to do, and the servant does it. When you have a boss at work, the boss tells you what to do, and you do it. You do not need to go over every detail with the boss. If you did that, the boss might as well do it himself. Rather, the boss is all about results. He sees the problem, asks you to take care of it, and moves on to the next problem. Similarly, in a marriage, the husband is the boss of the wife. He tells her what to do, and she takes care of it. This is why Ephesians 5:24 says, “Therefore as the church is subject unto Christ, so let the wives be to their own husbands in every thing.”

Note that Titus 2:4-5 says that the aged women are to “teach the young women to be sober, to love their husbands, to love their children, to be discreet, chaste, keepers at home, good, obedient to their own husbands, that the word of God be not blasphemed.” The next verse says, “Young men likewise exhort to be sober minded” (Titus 2:6). The young women are given eight things to do, but the young men are only given one thing to do. Why? Because the husbands are to give the orders, and the wives are to execute the orders. Therefore, the women need to know the details, while the men do not.

An example of this is found in the queen of Sheba. The queen of Sheba saw the wisdom of Solomon, but it was not just wisdom that impressed her. She also saw “the house that he had built, and the meat of his table, and the sitting of his servants, and the attendance of his ministers, and their apparel; his cupbearers also, and their apparel; and his ascent by which he went up into the house of the Lord.” Once she saw all of these things, “there was no more spirit in her” (II Chronicles 9:3-4). In other words, a king, who merely spouts off some wise sayings, did not impress her. Rather, she was impressed by the details of his kingdom that resulted from his wisdom. In other words, it is not just wisdom that

impresses women, but they are also impressed by the finer things in life.

A Man's Mind

When the boss tells the servant to do something and the servant does it, a good job is done only if: 1) The boss gave the proper instruction, and 2) The servant did what she was supposed to do. Since the man is lord over the woman (I Peter 3:6), God made man's mind to be able to think logically about a problem and come up with a logical solution. This is why Titus 2:6 told the "young men...to be sober minded." Since man is to give the order to the woman, man needs to think soberly so that his order is a good one.

Ephesians 5:25-28 says, "Husbands, love your wives, even as Christ also loved the church, and gave himself for it that he might sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water by the word, that he might present it to himself a glorious church, not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it should be holy and without blemish. So ought men to love their wives as their own bodies. He that loveth his wife loveth himself."

Since the husbands are to give the orders and the wives are to obey the orders, the husbands need to love their wives so that their orders consider their wives. In fact, men are to give themselves for their wives and love their wives as they love themselves. This means that, if the husband and the wife disagree on something, provided that the issue does not affect something spiritually, the husband should give the order to his wife that pleases her, rather than giving her an order that he wants to follow.

For example, if the husband and the wife want to spend Christmas with their respective families, the husband should give the order for them to spend Christmas with her family. This is why Genesis 2:24 says, "Therefore shall a man leave his father and his mother, and shall cleave unto his wife: and they shall be one flesh." The man leaves his parents behind, cleaves to his wife, and is one with her and her family.

FAR From Ideal Marriage

Therefore, the ideal marriage relationship is where the husband gives the orders that please the wife, and the wife executes those orders. In this way, the husband considers the wife above himself, and the wife considers the husband above herself. (By the way, the wife probably will not consider her husband above herself unless he considers her to be above himself.) (The body of Christ is also supposed to do this with each other. "In lowliness of mind let each esteem other better than themselves" (Philippians 2:3).) This is how the ideal marriage works because, "The wife hath not power of her own body, but the husband: and likewise also the husband hath not power of his own body, but the wife" (I Corinthians 7:4).

This is really a wonderful arrangement because, if followed, it keeps the other person from sinning. Romans 7:14-15 says, "For we know that the law is spiritual:

but I am carnal, sold under sin. For that which I do I allow not: for what I would, that do I not; but what I hate, that do I.” For example, a man knows not to watch pornography, and a woman knows not to get carried away in a romance novel or movie. However, because the law is spiritual and I am carnal, apart from Christ, the man will try not to watch pornography, but he will watch it anyway. Similarly, a woman will try not to read a romance novel, apart from Christ, but her sin nature will cause her to read it anyway. But, if the woman has control over the man’s body, she will keep the man from watching pornography. If the man has control over the woman’s body, he will keep the woman from reading romance novels. Granted, both will still sin in their heart, because in your flesh dwells no good thing (Romans 7:18), but at least they will not physically commit the sin, which keeps society from destroying itself in its own depravity.

Of course, this is the ideal relationship, which you simply will not find, because we were all born with a sin nature. Therefore, “we have turned every one to his own way” (Isaiah 53:6). “They are all gone out of the way, they are together become unprofitable; there is none that doeth good, no, not one” (Romans 3:12). As a result, most marriages are dominated by both people using their flesh for their own benefit and trying to keep their spouses from stopping them from doing so.

Wife’s Rebellion

The sin nature in the wife causes her to want to usurp authority over her husband. When Eve sinned, God gave the woman the curse: “Thy desire shall be to thy husband, and he shall rule over thee” (Genesis 3:16). In other words, her desire to rule over her husband will go to her husband, meaning that he will rule over her. Ever since then, women have been trying to get the authority over men. Therefore, instead of wives taking orders from their husbands and obeying them, the wives are often the ones who give orders to their husbands.

Husband’s Rebellion

However, you cannot really blame the wife for her rebellion, because the husband uses his sin nature to rebel, also. Since “the head of the woman is the man” (I Corinthians 11:3), by rebelling, the husband is setting the pattern for his wife to live according to her sin nature, also. Most every husband is not a Bible believer and lives according to his own flesh, rather than allowing Christ to live in him through the sound doctrine of God’s Word (Galatians 2:20). In this case, he is not sober minded. This means that he is not leading his wife properly.

How Husbands and Wives Really Act

Since husbands usually operate by their flesh, they try to rule their wives with orders that are contrary to scripture. Even if the orders are according to scripture, the wives also usually operate in their flesh. Since their flesh tells them to usurp authority over the man (Genesis 3:16), the wives will usually rebel by not following the orders, even if they are godly orders. They will then snap back with their own orders.

Since the husband is supposed to give himself for his wife and his body is not his own, he should obey his wife's order, even if it is not a good order, just like Adam did with Eve. However, even if he likes her order, he probably will not do it because his pride gets in the way. In other words, if he thought of the same thing, he would do it. Since his wife thought of it, he will do something different, even though what she said to do is the best idea. Meanwhile, because the wife is trying to control her husband, when she should be obeying him, she will probably take over the details of their lives to make sure everything appears to be okay to all outsiders. This is why married couples act friendly in the presence of others, even if they have been yelling at each other in private just minutes beforehand.

Add to this the fact that men and women are concerned with different things (men look for the solution, while women are more concerned with the process they follow being correct), and the married life is a constant struggle for both people, when all they need to do is obey scripture!

Why Men and Women Seem to Stop Trying After They Get Married

Men seem to stop trying to do whatever their wives want after they are married. Wives do not go to the trouble of dressing up for their husbands or laughing at their jokes like they used to before they were married. Why? Because, when they were dating, they were both trying to find a person with whom to spend the rest of life. Once they get married, they have decided to spend the rest of their lives with the other person. Therefore, a man does not have to pay attention to his wife any more to compliment her on how she dresses or how beautiful she is, because he already has her. At the same time, the woman no longer has to dress up and try to look beautiful because she has already caught a man.

What Husbands and Wives Should Do

Husbands should recognize that they are the head of the household. They should make decisions based upon what is best for the family. They should consider what their wives want to do, and they should do that. In this way, they give themselves up for their wives (Ephesians 5:25-28). This is how husbands fulfill the command to love their wives.

Wives should leave the decisions up to their husbands. When their husbands make decisions that they do not agree with, they should recognize that their husbands do not think like they do. The husbands think they are doing things to please their wives, when this may not be the case. The wives should respect the authority of their husbands, and submit to their leadership, even when they do not understand or agree with them. In fact, wives should submit to their husbands ESPECIALLY when they do not agree. Why? Because this is what "holy women" (I Peter 3:5) do. They have "the ornament of a meek and quiet spirit" (I Peter 3:4). It is like when Jesus told the believing remnant of Israel to "love your enemies" (Matthew 5:44). "If ye love them which love you, what reward have ye? do not even the publicans the same?" (Matthew 5:46). Similarly, if a wife only submits to her

husband when her husband treats her well, no one will take notice. However, if her husband abuses her, mistreats her, and hates her, and she STILL submits to him, people will notice. (Women have no problem obeying men if they are their boss at work. Because the roles are defined, women submit. God has clearly defined husbands to be the boss of wives. Why, then, won't women submit to them? Because of their unbelief. Thus, a woman's rebellion, against the leadership of her husband, is really a sign of her rebellion against God.)

The bottom line is that husbands and wives should care for the things of each other. I Corinthians 7:33 says that the husband, "Careth for the things that are of the world, how he may please his wife." I Corinthians 7:34 says that the wife should also care "for the things of the world, how she may please her husband." However, since each person thinks differently, it is the job of each person to figure out how to care for his spouse. The husband is to make the decisions and be the lord of the wife, and he should consider what his wife wants so that he demonstrates love for his wife in the decisions that he makes for the family unit. The wife is to serve her husband by obeying him and submitting herself to him so that she pleases her husband.

Why More Divorce

A more prosperous society leads to divorce, because you have more choices. These choices give you more to complain about and more options to make things the way you want them, rather than how your spouse wants them.

If a society only hires men in the workplace, a society will function more like God had intended. The wife is "stuck" married to her husband, because she cannot support herself. This means that the man is more likely to boss her around, and the wife is more likely to take her servant role, as God intended.

However, when a society hires women in the workplace, they can now support themselves. They feel like they can take charge of their marriage and start ordering their husbands around. If their husbands do not like it, the wives can divorce them and live on their own or find other husbands who will obey them. Meanwhile, the husbands are more afraid of taking the leadership role, because of the economic power of their wives to walk away.

Also, with both spouses working, there is more money, which leads to more arguments. When a couple only has the husband working and they are just getting by, there are no arguments over where to eat, because they can only afford to eat at home. There are no arguments over how to decorate the house, because they cannot afford the myriad of options in decorating that are out there. The arguments over what to wear are also eliminated because they do not have many choices.

For example, my grandmother only changed dresses once per week, and that would be on Sunday morning for church. Not once did my grandparents argue over what to wear to church, nor did my grandfather wait for his wife to get ready

for church, because they both took the same amount of time to get ready, since neither one had many options. Among couples that get married today, it is usually Hollywood couples that get divorced quickly. Why? Because they have so much money, leading to so many options, leading to so many arguments, since the husband and wife think about things differently. When choice is eliminated, due to poverty, so are the arguments. This is why poor people are usually happier than rich people are. Therefore, money does not buy happiness, poverty does!

Decrease in Marriages

“Marriage is in retreat worldwide. Across the globe, increasing numbers of women and men are not simply postponing marriage, but forgoing it altogether.” “In the United States, one in six women remains unmarried in her early forties.”

(<https://www.psychologytoday.com/us/blog/the-prime-life/201503/is-marriage-in-decline>, “Is Marriage in Decline?”, *Psychology Today* by Steven Mintz, Ph.D., March 7, 2015, accessed March 7, 2019)

“In 1970 about 10 percent of children in the U.S. were born outside marriage but by 2016, the number of children born to unwed parents quadrupled to 40 percent.” (<https://www.christianpost.com/news/nearly-half-of-children-born-in-america-have-parents-who-are-not-married-228035/>, accessed October 22, 2018, “Nearly Half of Children Born in the US Have Parents Who Are Not Married” by Leonardo Blair, October 18, 2018)

Why have marriage and a family with a husband and wife become less common? The answer is rooted in the city being a different system than the country.

On the farm 100 years ago, a woman would not even survive if she did not marry a man, and a man knew that he had to get married and have kids so that they could take care of the farm once he got too old to work it. This was God’s way of creating families and keeping sin at bay. However, now that most people today live in cities and rely upon the government to provide retirement for them, the incentive to get married and have kids is gone. People are so selfish that they do not want to sacrifice themselves for their spouses. Therefore, people just “shack up” and have fun having sex together. Then, when they are tired of the other person, they move out and go on to the next one. This is why marriage is in decline. In other words, economic prosperity results in a decline in family values.

What is interesting is that it appears that God prophesied of this very thing. I Timothy 4:1-3 says, “Now the Spirit speaketh expressly, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils; speaking lies in hypocrisy; having their conscience seared with a hot iron; **forbidding to marry**, and commanding to abstain from meats, which God hath created to be received with thanksgiving of them which believe and know the truth.” These verses are about the last times of the dispensation of grace, and we already see the scripture being fulfilled in departing from the faith and listening to seducing spirits and doctrines of devils. The result is that they speak lies in hypocrisy, meaning that they claim to be Christians, when they are not. The lies that they speak are “forbidding to marry, and commanding to abstain from meats.” It is interesting that America claims to be a Christian nation, yet they have departed from the faith, and they have become vegetarians who do not get

married. Therefore, it could be that “forbidding to marry” means that the society, as a whole, has decided to discard God’s institution of marriage for the pleasures of the flesh.

Whether or not this is a fulfillment of scripture is up to you to decide, but we know by observation that these things are going on today. Many “Christian” families have young relatives living together without going through a marriage ceremony, and the families do not say a word about it. In fact, they often brag about how their son or daughter has found love and is happy, even though they are living in sin. “Barely more than half of adults in the U.S. say they’re living with a spouse. It is the lowest share on record, and down from 70 percent in 1967.” “In 1970 just half-of-one-percent of all adults were cohabiting in the U.S. Today the figure is 7.5 percent.” (*Why are fewer people getting married?*, June 1, 2016, <http://theconversation.com/why-are-fewer-people-getting-married-60301>, accessed March 22, 2019) Granted, you will not find something in a church’s doctrinal statement that says that laypeople are not to get married. However, by following the lusts of the flesh, rather than God’s Word, churches are, in a sense, forbidding people from marrying today.

CHAPTER 4

Sex Corrupted by the City

The City

Since we just talked about the family breakdown occurring as a result of people leaving the country for the city, we will now examine the city versus the country to see why city life is so damaging, spiritually speaking.

In Genesis 4:12, God punished Cain by saying, “A fugitive and a vagabond shalt thou be in the earth.” Cain rebelled against God by building a city (Genesis 4:17). Therefore, the first city that was ever built was built in rebellion against God. God made the earth, and man made the city. Building a city is man’s ultimate show of pride. It is as if man says, “I don’t need you, God. I can make my own creation.” The culmination of this rebellion is seen in Genesis 11, when man united against God by building the city of Babylon. In fact, this was such a great rebellion that God said, “Behold, the people is one, and they have all one language; and this they begin to do: and now nothing will be restrained from them, which they have imagined to do” (Genesis 11:6). We already learned that “every imagination of the thoughts of [man’s] heart was only evil continually” (Genesis 6:5). Therefore, what God is saying is that, when man unites together in building a city, the checks against his evil ways have been removed so that he will only do evil continually.

Because of this, God created government in Genesis 11, or else no one would have been saved. As we have already learned, God set up marriage and family as checks against man doing all of the evil desires of his heart. When man united in a city against God, those checks of marriage and family were removed, such that man would only do evil continually. Therefore, God created the third check of government to keep man’s evil heart from destroying himself. (This third check will be removed by the Antichrist in the tribulation period, which is why God has to limit the tribulation period to seven years. Otherwise, “there should no flesh be saved” (Matthew 24:22).) Still, when man unites in a city, he has united against God’s checks of marriage and family, which significantly increases his ability to outwardly display sinful behavior.

(Incidentally, in His kingdom, God will unite man around His city, New Jerusalem, for all eternity. This will work because it is a city that God builds and controls, rather than man. (Revelation 21:2; Psalm 48:1-2).)

Country vs. City Life

By examining the difference between country and city life, we will see why city life is so spiritually dangerous.

Country

In the country in the 1800s in America, life was about survival. You farmed a piece of land, growing crops and raising animals for food. You did not have many people around you, but you depended on all of the people in your community to survive. For example, let’s say that you grew corn, green beans, and pigs. In order to have a variety of food, you traded your crops with your neighbors so you could eat other

things like hamburger meat, peas, and okra. You may have borrowed a tool from your neighbor to fix your chicken coop, and your neighbor may have borrowed a cup of sugar from you in the process. You walked or rode a horse-drawn wagon to the general store where you bought flour, sugar, and other needed materials. On Sunday, you walked to church and spent all day there, bringing some food to share with others at lunch time, which you called “dinner,” because the big meal of the day happened around noon. Church was the closest thing to entertainment that you had, but you took it seriously, because you all believed what the pastor told you from “The Good Book,” i.e., the Bible.

Working on a farm was a lot of hard work. You needed help for certain tasks. So, you had several kids. Not only would they help you with the work, but they would also take over the farm and take care of you when you got too old or unable to keep up with the work yourself. They would then have kids of their own, and the whole cycle would continue. In order to have the kids, you need to have a wife, who will also serve to give you some sexual pleasure that you flesh seeks. The wife also would do a lot of work around the farm that you either did not want to do, know how to do, or have time to do, such as cooking big meals every day and washing dishes. This gave you a few, extra hours to work in the field. She could also take care of the kids, who were too small to help you on the farm, and give them an education so that they would know how to make good decisions in life when they grew up. She would also do things like make your clothes, sew up the hole you tore in your overalls, and mend your socks, since you did not have the money to buy new cloth to make new ones. Your wife may not have had as physically demanding of a job as you had, but she had longer hours. Her longer hours were due to her work day starting before yours, because she cooked your breakfast, and it ended after yours since she had to clean up after you. (This is where the saying, “A woman’s work is never done,” comes in.)

A man simply could not survive on a farm without a wife and kids. Otherwise, he would not have enough time to do everything that needed to be done. Therefore, a boy needed to find a wife before he could move out of his parents’ house. Similarly, a girl needed to find a husband to take care of her in order to move out of her parents’ house. Who they chose was of the utmost importance. They did not go online and look for a “hot” person to have sex with. Opposite-sex relations were much more practical than that. If a man chose a lazy woman, he would be in a worse predicament than if he did not get married at all. Also, there often were no second chances, since, after years had passed, a man would be too old to find another wife, since all the women were married and vice-versa.

Therefore, “prior to the early 20th century, courtship involved one man and one woman spending intentional time together to get to know each other with the expressed purpose of evaluating the other as a potential husband or wife. The man and the woman were usually members of the same community, and the courting usually was done in the woman’s home in the presence (and under the watchful eye) of her family, most often Mom and brothers.”

(<http://www.boundless.org/relationships/2007/a-brief-history-of-courtship-and-dating-in-america-part-1> accessed June 20, 2018)

The City

The city's goal is economic prosperity, while the country's goal is family prosperity. Therefore, life in the city is markedly different. When you are in the country, your family does everything. When you are in the city, the question is, "What are you good at?" Whatever you are best at doing is what you will do for your job. So, if you are good at typing, you will type all day. If you are good at picking up heavy objects, you will pick up heavy objects all day. If you know how to design buildings, you will design buildings all day. The idea is that, if you do what you are best at doing, you will get paid the most money you can receive. Then, you take the money to pay for everything else in your life.

In the country, your wife cooked the meals. In the city, you eat at a restaurant, where you pay someone else to cook the meals. In the country, you worked hard and enjoyed it because you did a variety of things. So, about the only entertainment might have been the family singing some songs together at home at night. In the city, your job is boring because you do the same thing over and over all day. By the time you get off work, you are begging for something enjoyable, so, you go out dancing or see a movie for entertainment. Therefore, in the city, when you are not working, you just want to have fun, while, in the country, you try to have fun as you go about your day. Because everything is compartmentalized in the city, work is done during certain hours and fun is done outside those hours. In the country, life, fun or not, is lived all the time.

Growth of the City

At its beginning, the United States was largely rural. People farmed their own land, and helped each other out, because they needed each other to survive. Over time, more people moved to the city to seek their own prosperity, changing from a more communal to a more capitalistic society.

It is generally said that the industrial revolution in the United States lasted from 1870 to 1914. This was a period of time in which major inventions changed production from manual to automated. (https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Second_Industrial_Revolution accessed June 20, 2018) The culmination of this revolution came on December 1, 1913, when Henry Ford introduced the mechanized assembly line, reducing the time it took to build a car from more than 12 hours to 2 hours and 30 minutes. (<https://www.history.com/this-day-in-history/fords-assembly-line-starts-rolling> accessed June 20, 2018) Assembly-line production meant that the city could produce things much faster and cheaper than people could on the farm. The assembly line was soon copied to fit all types of manufacturing. Now, the city needed many more workers, and workers' economic value was much higher in the city than on the farm. The result was a major shift in population in the United States to cities. At the beginning of the industrial revolution in 1870, about 75% of the United States' population was outside the city. By 1920, 51% lived in a city, 56% lived in a city by 1930, and 64% lived in a city in 1950. (<https://www.census.gov/population/censusdata/table-4.pdf> accessed June 20, 2018) By 2010, 81% of the population lived in a city. (<https://www.census.gov/newsroom/press-releases/2016/cb16->

[210.html](#) accessed June 20, 2018). Thus, 1920 is the major turning point in United States history, because it is the first year in which the majority of the people in the United States were living in a city, as opposed to living in rural areas.

The Roaring '20s

The decade of 1920-1929 is called "The Roaring '20s" due to the sustained economic prosperity that occurred in the United States during that time.

Most everything had become automated, bringing about significant lifestyle changes in America. In the country, the flesh has strong motivation to promote marriage and family. A young man and a young woman need to find lifelong partners and have children just to survive. This is so crucial that parents of both men and women are highly involved in this process. In the city, however, there is very little fleshly motivation to promote marriage and family. Kids are an asset on a farm, but they are a liability in the city. Kids worked on the farm and took over the farm when the parents were no longer physically able to work. In the city, because work is done outside the home, someone else has to take care of the kids while you work. This generally meant putting the kids in school, while the parents worked. There was also no farm for the kids to take over when the parents got too old to work. Therefore, the kids would have to get jobs to support their older parents, or the parents would have to save for retirement themselves. (This is why a national retirement plan, known as Social Security, was enacted in the United States in the mid-1930s.) Meanwhile, the kids cost the parents money to feed them, clothe them, and take care of their health. Therefore, they are a hindrance, rather than a help, to the survival of the parents.

Since kids are not needed, a spouse is not needed any more either. Therefore, there is no meeting between two families that is supervised by the woman's family. There also is no necessity to get married by a certain age to start a family, because you no longer need a family. Therefore, the life cycle, of growing up, finding someone to start a family with, getting married, having kids, and having the kids repeat this process, has been interrupted.

However, God has put the sex drive within humans so that they would get married and have families. The sex drive remains the same, even though the physical necessity of having a family has gone away. Therefore, young men and women in the city still pursue the opposite sex, but they do so for differing reasons.

In the United States in the 1920s, more people are living in cities than in the country, because they have been led there by the draw of a more prosperous economic life, leaving behind the better family life of the country. Although the mass production of typewriters, filing cabinets, and telephones have opened up new jobs for women, they are often paid much less at their jobs than men are. This makes it more difficult for women to survive on their own in a city than it does for men. So, women will try harder to find a spouse to marry than men will.

At the same time, both men and women are more likely to look for sexual fun than

for a lifelong partner, given the lack of a need to have kids and the fact that their jobs are more mundane than on the farm. While women are looking for sexual fun more than they did on the farm, they still have a need to get married, while men do not have this need as much. Therefore, in the city, women become the sexual pursuers, while, in the country, the man pursues the woman.

Since the man in the city is looking more for sexual pleasure than a lifelong partner, the way that the woman catches the man is by making herself sexually appealing to him. Therefore, instead of showing the man that she knows how to roast a pig, skin and filet a fish, or cook delicious casseroles, the woman gets the man by showing that she is sexually more desirable than the other women that he meets.

In other words, desirable qualities in the opposite sex are much more practical in the country than in the city. In the country, a man looks for a woman who will cook and clean and obey him, while a woman looks for a man who will take care of her. Now, in the city, men look for “hot” women, and women look for “cute” guys.

The Flapper Girl

And, this is where the Roaring ‘20s come in. With movies and magazines being produced now (entertainment needed for those boring city jobs), young women’s fashions began appearing, breaking off from the old Victorian way of life. Thus began the sexual liberation of women. Older generations called these Roaring ‘20s women “flappers,” probably as a derogatory term to say that they looked like prostitutes. (https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Roaring_Twenties accessed June 18, 2018) (The clash between the older and younger women is seen in that the Woman’s Christian Temperance Union was instrumental in getting the prohibition of the sale of alcohol passed as a constitutional amendment in 1920, (https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Prohibition_in_the_United_States accessed June 21, 2018) while younger women were going to bars to meet men. Thus, the “Roaring ‘20s” actually took place when it was technically illegal to sell alcohol, although this does not seem to have stopped the Flapper Girl.)

Further, the death of many young men in World War I led women to believe that life is short, and they needed to live it up while they could. So, for the first time, women began initiating sexual relationships, which meant showing off some skin to arouse men sexually. Their dresses exposed their legs and arms, which a lady would never do previously. Dress length went from the floor, to the ankle, and to the knee by 1927. Flappers also started wearing high heels (2 to 3 inches) to give the appearance of longer legs and make their leg muscles more attractive to men. Furthermore, with the invention of the assembly line, cosmetics were much cheaper to produce, and so flappers wore excessive makeup to arouse the opposite sex. (<https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Flapper> accessed June 18, 2018) This put them in direct conflict with the previous generation because ordinary women would not wear makeup before, since it was associated with prostitution. (https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Roaring_Twenties accessed June 18, 2018)

A young woman no longer had a man come over to her house with mom and brothers carefully watching to make sure he did not defile her because it would ruin her life perhaps making her unfit to be a wife and mother on a farm. City girls did not want that life. Therefore, instead of a woman having a chaperone, the youth took over their culture, saying that “anything goes.” Women cut their hair, wore makeup, and partied. “Dance clubs became enormously popular in the 1920s” with jazz being the music of choice, and the name “jazz” may have been chosen for that music genre as a sexual reference. Women became flirtatious and reckless, searching for fun and thrills, and the dance club was used for sexual hookups. (https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Roaring_Twenties accessed June 18, 2018)

Before the war, women would not enter a saloon. Now, it was very common for women to go. Therefore, young women were now seeking to be happy or have fun, rather than seeking to be a good wife and mother. In summary, the Flapper girl drank, engaged in casual sex, smoked, drove automobiles, and flouted other social and sexual norms. (<https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Flapper> accessed June 18, 2018)

Moreover, with the economic prosperity of the Roaring ‘20s, increasing number of women went to college. These were the “smart” ones, who, rather than living it up for the present, still sought sexual fulfillment, but were mainly trying to rope them a man to marry and take care of them, financially speaking. Therefore, for the first time, colleges were educating both men and women together. Although women mainly went to college to find a husband, they became the ones pursuing the men, rather than the other way around, and they knew that the best way to get men of the city was by providing them sexual pleasure. (https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Roaring_Twenties accessed June 18, 2018) Therefore, petting parties (sexual stimulation short of intercourse) became popular, especially on college campuses.

(<https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Flapper> accessed June 18, 2018) Also, the advent of the automobile caused dating to be in a more private setting, which allowed for even more sexual indiscretions.

Therefore, premarital sex became much more common. Of those born before 1900, 14 percent of women had premarital sex by age 25. By 1950, 36 percent of women had premarital sex by age 25. (<https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Flapper> accessed June 18, 2018) By 2002, 88 percent of women had premarital sex by age 25. (<https://www.ncbi.nlm.nih.gov/pmc/articles/PMC1802108/>, “Trends in Premarital Sex in the United States, 1954–2003” by Lawrence B. Finer, PhD, accessed January 17, 2019)

Still, most all women wanted to marry and stay at home and take care of their children and the house. (https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Roaring_Twenties accessed June 18, 2018) Therefore, most women went against their upbringing and engaged in sexual promiscuity as a way to get married, as opposed to just having some fun.

The Condom

Men of the city, however, were not interested in marriage, like country men were, since they did not need to have kids or a wife to help them survive in a city. In other words, economically speaking, women became expendable. This meant that

men sought to satisfy their sexual lust without suffering the “consequences” of marriage, i.e., lifelong commitment to a spouse and kids. And, in the capitalistic society of the city, man will step in with technology to satisfy a fleshly need. In this case, the popularity of pre-marital sex skyrocketed, and it was helped along by another modern invention, the condom.

Granted, condoms had already been around for hundreds of years, but they were expensive and time consuming to make previously. Therefore, they were often only available to rich men. In 1920 (what a coincidence), latex was invented. Latex condoms were easier and safer to make and safer and more reliable to use. By 1930, a fully automated condom manufacturing line began production in Ohio. Therefore, condoms could now be mass produced at a low price, making their use widespread in America’s cities. In fact, it was around 1930 that the US military started passing condoms out to soldiers to prevent the spread of sexually transmitted diseases. (https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/History_of_condoms accessed June 14, 2018) This was about 15 years after World War I, when U.S. servicemen were the only members of the Allied forces sent overseas without condoms. This shows that America’s morals were better than those other nations until then.

By 1936, a federal appeals court ruled in *United States v. One Package of Japanese Pessaries* that the federal government could not interfere with doctors providing contraception to their patients, making condoms even more popular. (https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Comstock_laws accessed July 12, 2018)

Change in Action, not in Heart

Now, I do not mean to paint a completely bleak picture of the United States in the 1920s. I am not saying that people, in the 1800s on the farm, never committed sexual sin, and that people in the city in the 1920s did nothing but commit sexual sin.

We need to keep in mind that sin occurs in the heart, not in the flesh. Jesus said, “For from within, out of the heart of men, proceed evil thoughts, adulteries, fornications, murders, thefts, covetousness, wickedness, deceit, lasciviousness, an evil eye, blasphemy, pride, foolishness: All these evil things come from within, and defile the man” (Mark 7:20-22). This is because, “Whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her hath committed adultery with her already in his heart” (Matthew 5:28). Therefore, sin comes from the heart (“As he thinketh in his heart, so is he” (Proverbs 23:7).), which does not necessarily mean that there is more sexual sin in a city than in the country. It is just that there is a much greater physical restraint on the outward display of sin in the country than in the city. In the country, everybody knows everybody else. If you go to the bar, the strip joint, a prostitute, or even buy a pornographic magazine, word will get out and eventually your wife will find out. Since the country boy needs his wife in life, he is likely to curb his sexual lust and not have an outward display of it. On the other hand, in the city, you can do all of those things without your wife finding out about it, and, even if she does find out about it and divorce you, you can go on without her in your life a whole lot easier than a country boy can. Therefore, the temptation to act upon

sexual lust is much greater in the city than in the country, even if the sexual sin in the heart remains the same.

Venereal Disease in the Civil War

An example of this can be seen in the United States' Civil War, which lasted from 1861 to 1865. During this time, "the Surgeon General of the United States Army documented 183,000 cases of venereal disease in the Union Army." The reason is because city prostitutes followed the union camps. Since "many were farmers and uneducated workers living beyond rigid parental and church rules for the first time," they engaged in the lusts of the flesh by having sex with whores, simply because no one was there to stop them from doing so. It was so bad that one soldier, in writing a letter to his wife, stated, "You would think that there was not a married man in the regiment." Because they were "facing an epidemic of venereal disease, the Union army tried...government sanctioned prostitution in Nashville and Memphis, Tennessee, from 1863 to 1865." This caused "many of the better class of prostitutes" to come to these cities to be protected from venereal diseases themselves due to the government's license system in these cities. On the flip side, "incidence of those diseases among African American soldiers was less than half that of the white troops." (*The Civil War: Sex and Soldiers*, <https://artsci.case.edu/dittrick/online-exhibits/history-of-birth-control/contraception-in-america-1800-1900/the-civil-war-sex-and-soldiers/>, accessed March 20, 2019). Also, the "numbers for Confederates are unknown, but are assumed less due to Confederate soldiers being less likely to be in cities."

(https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Sex_in_the_American_Civil_War, accessed March 20, 2019) In other words, sexual sin was in the heart of white city soldiers, and they acted out on that sin since they were away from the rules of parents, spouses, and home life. Meanwhile, blacks, in the same situation, were far less likely to sleep with prostitutes because they were more likely to obey God's rules about sex than were the whites, because they had less sexual sin in their heart due to their better spiritual upbringing. Also, Confederates were less likely to sleep with prostitutes because of their better spiritual upbringing due to living in the country instead of in cities.

Therefore, by looking at the Civil War, we can see that sexual sin in the heart grows worse and worse in the city. One of the reasons for this is that, because sexual sin is easier to act out in the city, more people will become involved in these sins, as we have already seen in our discussion of the Roaring '20s. Then, the herd mentality takes hold. The people, who would ordinarily be reserved about their lustful thoughts end up thinking, "If everyone else can get away with it, then so can I." Therefore, the more bashful people become emboldened by the forthrightness of the sinful crowd. Then, when everyone is engaged in the same sinful activity, the brazen people of the next generation take it a step further by doing even worse things, as we saw earlier with the downward spiral of sin in Romans 1:18-32.

For example, I mentioned that women of the early 1900s were appalled by the young women of the 1920s being brazen enough to wear makeup and show off their arms and their legs up to their knees. The generation before these women

thought they looked like prostitutes. However, in 2019, you can go into most any church, even the more “conservative” ones, and find young women wearing more makeup and shorter dresses than women did in bars of the 1920s. Moreover, other “godly” women in these churches think that these women actually look nice. We dare not speak of what young women going to bars today wear or do not wear, as the case may be! (I think it’s funny that the phrase “wardrobe malfunction” is now in people’s vernacular to describe a revealing of skin that should not have been revealed. This never happened in the country, since women covered up everything, instead of only barely covering up private parts.)

What this demonstrates is that, while sexual lust may be prevalent, both in the country and in the city, sexual sin is much less likely to progress downward in the country than it is in the city. This shows, then, the great dangers of the city. This also shows that God’s checks against the sin nature of marriage and family are much more effective than the check of government, since family sees much more of a person’s life than the government does.

The Desire for Marriage and Children

I should also mention that, while the Roaring ‘20s brought greater sexual promiscuity to the United States as a whole, this does not mean that people stopped getting married and having children.

The female mind, that God took out of Adam and put into a separate body, has the natural instinct to raise up children. The Bible exhorts young women “to love their husbands, to love their children, to be discreet, chaste, keepers at home” (Titus 2:5), while young men are simply exhorted “to be sober minded” (Titus 2:6). We even see this in society that there are far more “deadbeat dads” than there are “deadbeat moms,” because of the woman’s natural instinct to keep the family together, even when things are not “perfect” in the home (as if they ever are “perfect”!).

At the same time, men also have a natural instinct to be fathers, because children are in the likeness of their parents (Genesis 5:3), and all people in the world have the pride of life (I John 2:16). Therefore, all men and women, in their flesh, like the idea of having children who look like them.

As such, marriage and family did not completely disappear in the Roaring ‘20s. It is just that both institutions took a major blow. Also, as we have noted, women still desired to be married. In fact, they were more desperate to find a husband than before because they usually did not have the wages in the city to support themselves completely, and they did not have their family meeting with a potential husband for them. The city made the women fend for themselves.

In 1900, among those age 15 and older, 55% of men and 57% of women were married. In 1920, 59% of men and 61% of women were married. In 1930, 60% of men and 61% of women were married. Therefore, while sexual promiscuity increased, the percentage of married people also increased.

<https://www.census.gov/prod/99pubs/99statab/sec31.pdf> accessed June 21, 2018) This is because, while men and women catered to their flesh more with sexual sin, they also catered to their flesh more with marriage and family being something they wanted. The problem is that they got married for passion, rather than for a life together, which is why the number of divorced people increased from 0.3% and 0.5% in 1900 for men and women, respectively, to 1.1% and 1.3% in 1930. This leads us to our next topic of what people believe.

Belief System

Regardless of whether a man is in the country or in the city, he can choose to live differently than everyone as a whole. In other words, he can choose to live according to his belief system, even when others do not do so.

Unfortunately, the belief system of women in the city also began to change in the 1920s for the worse. It was at this time that ideas from Sigmund Freud and others had become mainstream. These ideas included that sex was central for all people to experience, women had sexual desires, and restraining those desires would be self-destructive. (https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Roaring_Twenties accessed June 18, 2018) Therefore, women began to believe that, even if they were not married, it was best for their emotional well-being to have sex on a regular basis!

The Conscience

This change in thinking, with regard to sex, is what has fueled the downward spiral of sexual sin in the United States over the past 100 years. Why?

As mentioned earlier, God gave us the conscience to teach us that we are not perfect, and that we need a Saviour. The way this works, according to Romans 7:13, is that our sin nature works with our conscience so that our sin exceeds our pride so that we see our need for a Saviour. In other words, “That sin by the commandment might become exceeding sinful” (Romans 7:13).

The problem is that most people do not use the conscience in this way. This is because, “When they knew God, they glorified Him not as God, neither were thankful; but became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened. Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools” (Romans 1:21-22). What this means is that most people puff themselves up to think that they obey their conscience well enough to have eternal life without Jesus’ death on the cross as atonement for their sin. This is seen in a 2006 poll by Harvard University. They were asked: “Can a good person who is not of your faith go to heaven or attain salvation?” Among those who believe in life after death, 84% said “yes,” and only 9% said “no”. (<https://ropercenter.cornell.edu/paradise-poll-americans-and-the-afterlife/> accessed June 25, 2018) This is because most people do not tie their beliefs to the afterlife. Rather, they think that as long as they are basically good people, they will go to heaven. They are like the Pharisee who said, “God, I thank Thee, that I am not as other men are, extortioners, unjust, adulterers, or even as this publican. I fast twice in the week, I give tithes of all that I possess” (Luke 18:11-12).

Most people define being “basically good people” as refraining from outward displays of “major” sins. What you think are the “major” sins is determined by your conscience. While God gave the conscience, He put our parents in charge of what goes into our conscience. This is why Proverbs 22:6 says, “Train up a child in the way he should go: and when he is old, he will not depart from it.” **It is a very difficult thing to go against what your parents put into your conscience when you were a child, even if you try hard to do so.** For example, if you grow up poor, you are probably very careful about spending money, such that you save every dime that you can. If you grow up rich, you probably do not give spending money a second thought. One of the main reasons for divorce is differences in money-spending philosophies, because neither spouse is willing to change how he spends money, because his philosophy is so entrenched in his own conscience that he is not willing to compromise.

Therefore, most people try to live by their conscience and are successful at doing so **in their own minds**. This means that how a society functions is largely dependent upon how society’s consciences, as a whole, tell them how they should function. For example, up until 1920, most people believed that divorce was a very shameful thing. Therefore, people, who said in the 1920 US Census that they were divorced, were 0.6% of the men and 0.8% of the women.

<https://www.census.gov/prod/99pubs/99statab/sec31.pdf> accessed June 25, 2018) However, today, there is very little shame in being divorced, since it is no longer built into the conscience that being divorced is bad. Therefore, people, who said in 2017, that they were divorced, were 8.7% of the men and 11% of the women,

<https://www.statista.com/statistics/242030/marital-status-of-the-us-population-by-sex/> accessed June 25, 2018) a 14-fold increase!

This shows that, if Satan can get parents to teach lies about sex to their children, then children will grow up thinking that certain things about sex are okay when they are not. They will then have no problem doing those things, because their consciences will not make them feel guilty over them.

Your Flesh

“In my flesh dwelleth no good thing” (Romans 7:18). The flesh always asks the question, “What can I get away with?” If the conscience says that I can do a sin, I will do that sin as much as possible, because I can get away with it. In other words, I will not feel guilty about that sin.

The Drug of Sin

The problem with sin is that it is like a drug. The best feeling a person ever receives from a drug is the first time that he tries it. After that, he takes more and more of the drug and feels less and less good about it. Then, he moves on to a stronger drug and experiences the same thing. He pursued the drug to have a good feeling, but he is left with a bad feeling. Now, he takes the drug, not to feel euphoria, but he takes it in hopes that it will make him feel normal. Proverbs

23:29-35 gives this idea when it comes to wine. “Who hath woe? who hath sorrow? who hath contentions? who hath babbling? who hath wounds without cause? who hath redness of eyes? They that tarry long at the wine....At the last it biteth like a serpent, and stingeth like an adder....They have stricken me, shalt thou say, and I was not sick; they have beaten me, and I felt it not: when shall I awake? **I will seek it yet again**” (Proverbs 23:29-35). A person began drinking to feel good. However, it bit him and stung him. It caused him nothing but trouble. Yet, when he awakens from his drunkenness, he will “seek it yet again.”

This is how sin is. Since unbelievers do not have the faith of Christ and “whatsoever is not of faith is sin” (Romans 14:23), the only thing unbelievers can do is sin. They “walk in the vanity of their mind, having the understanding darkened, being alienated from the life of God through the ignorance that is in them, because of the blindness of their heart: Who being past feeling have given themselves over unto lasciviousness, to work all uncleanness with greediness” (Ephesians 4:17-19).

This describes the downward spiral of sin in an unbelieving society as the conscience gets farther away from the law of God. In other words, unbelievers are sin addicts. They go after the drug of sin, walking in the vanity of their mind, saying that they are okay in their sin, because they do not do the “major sins” (Jeremiah 17:9). They then teach their children things that are even farther away from the law of God, because they have their “understanding darkened” because they are “alienated from the life of God,” living by their deceitful heart that tells them that they are okay with God and will go to heaven, even though they live in sin. This is “because of the blindness of their heart.” They then become “past feeling,” meaning that there are no guilty feelings in their conscience over sin, because they do not think that they sin, because their defiled conscience tells them that their behavior is okay.

Since sin’s pleasure are only for a season (Hebrews 11:25) and diminish as time goes on, man has to do greater and greater sins to feel good about himself. Therefore, he gives himself “over unto lasciviousness, to work all uncleanness with greediness.” In other words, he goes farther and farther into sin until he is utterly depraved. All he can do at this point is to work more and more sin and get greedy about it, trying to reach greater depths of sin just to feel normal again. This is when God gives man over to his reprobate mind, meaning that he is so far gone into his unbelief that he will never believe the gospel, because his mind is too warped with his sin lust (Romans 1:28-32).

This downward spiral of sin begins when man rejects the internal witness of God and starts trying to please God by obeying the conscience. Eventually, he is “past feeling,” meaning that he has no conscience objection to sin. Then, he does whatever he wants, whenever he wants. This complete overhaul of man’s conscience, to allow him to do whatever he wants to, has its roots in the United States when the federal government was developed, resulting in God eventually being completely kicked out of Americans’ minds by the 1920s.

Churchianity's History in America

In order to see this, we need to examine the history of Churchianity in America. (The term "Churchianity" is used, rather than "Christianity," so as not to associate Christ with this religion, since it is works based, not trusting in Jesus' blood as atonement for sin.) America was largely founded by people who fled their home country in search of religious freedom. "The New England colonists were largely Puritans, who led very strict lives. The Middle colonists were a mixture of religions, including Quakers (led by William Penn), Catholics, Lutherans, Jews, and others. The Southern colonists had a mixture of religions as well, including Baptists and Anglicans."

(<http://www.socialstudiesforkids.com/articles/ushistory/13colonieschurch.htm> accessed June 27, 2018) With the exception of Jews, all of these religions fell under the Christian umbrella, even though beliefs within the Christian denominations varied greatly. Since all of these denominations wanted religious freedom, "America, while attaching itself to no specific variant of Christianity, operated on an understanding that the nation would adopt an unofficial, generic Christianity that fit hand in glove with republicanism." "Certain fundamentals seemed unanimously agreed upon: posting of the Ten Commandments in public places was appropriate; prayers in virtually all official and public functions were expected; America was particularly blessed because of her trust in God; and even when individuals in civic life did not ascribe to a specific faith, they were expected to act like 'good Christians' and conduct themselves as would a believer." (*A Patriot's History of the United States* by Larry Schweikart and Michael Allen page 95)

In the 1790s through the 1840s, America went through a Second Great Awakening, in which many "turned to God." As a result, "toleration was more than ever demanded. Schools certainly had to avoid specific denominational positions, so they emphasized elements of Christianity that almost all believers could agree upon, such as the resurrection, love, faith, and hope. That in turn led to a revitalization of the Ten Commandments as easily agreed-upon spiritual principles." (*A Patriot's History of the United States* by Larry Schweikart and Michael Allen page 208)

The Scientific Revolution began in Europe in the 1700s in which Christian ideas began to be replaced by scientific findings. (https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Scientific_Revolution accessed June 27, 2018) However, these "discoveries" were largely ignored in America, since it was a "Christian" nation. Therefore, "Until about 1860, science and religion were widely perceived to be in harmony.... After 1860, tensions between science and religion increased." (<https://www.stetson.edu/artsci/american-studies/pc19thscience.php> accessed June 27, 2018)

The Christian religion's response to science in America was the Third Great Awakening, which lasted from about 1860 to 1900. Religious groups began to focus on the social gospel. Therefore, Churchianity was now focused on the material lives of its parishioners, rather than being focused on their spiritual lives. (https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Christianity_in_the_19th_century accessed June 27, 2018) (An example of this is seen in The Salvation Army coming to America in 1880 and becoming very popular among American soldiers during World Wars 1 and 2. The Salvation

Army's motto is "Doing the most good".) (<https://www.salvationarmycarolinas.org/about/story/dtmg>, accessed April 4, 2019).

Therefore, by 1900, Americans were still decidedly "Christian," but being Christian now meant being good, moral people, who focused on their material existence, rather than their spiritual existence. Therefore, by the time you get to 1920, "the American soul had been disturbed by not only the scientific challenge to orthodox Christian belief in the latter part of the 19th century, but by the rapid economic and cultural changes taking place in American life – changes resulting from the transformation of the American economy from rural and small-town to industrial and urban. Traditional ways of life had eroded, producing a host of so-called 'nervous disorders.'" (<http://www.hunsberger.org/freud-america.htm> accessed June 26, 2018)

Where to Turn to Solve the City's Problems?

The medical profession, with its sedatives, hypnosis, and electric shock, seemed to provide no cure for these nervous disorders. Therefore, Americans turned to the church for answers, as they had always done.

The Bible provides the answers for these problems. For example, Philippians 4:6-7 states, "Be careful for nothing; but in every thing by prayer and supplication with thanksgiving let your requests be made known unto God. And the peace of God, which passeth all understanding, shall keep your hearts and minds through Christ Jesus."

"Through Christ Jesus" is the key part of these verses. The moment you recognize your sin and trust in Jesus' death, burial, and resurrection as atonement for your sin, the Holy Ghost identifies you (by spirit baptism) with Christ's death, burial, and resurrection (I Corinthians 12:13; Romans 6:3-4). Your flesh is crucified with Christ (Romans 6:6), and "ye are not under the law, but under grace" (Romans 6:14). Therefore, you can allow Christ to live in you (Galatians 2:20) by allowing the Holy Ghost to strengthen you with might in the inner man (Ephesians 3:16) by teaching you the deep things of God (I Corinthians 2:9-14) through the sound doctrine found in Romans – Philemon. You can then draw upon that sound doctrine to overcome your anxieties when you bring your requests to God.

However, if you place yourself back under the law, then "Christ is become of no effect unto you" (Galatians 5:4), and, in your inner man, "Christ is dead in vain" (Galatians 2:21). Therefore, Philippians 4:6-7 only works when you go through the long process of reading and believing Paul's epistles. You will then recognize that "ye are dead, and your life is hid with Christ in God" (Colossians 3:3) so that Christ will take care of all of your mental problems through prayer, which is simply talking the sound doctrine over in your mind with God to overcome your sin nature. This is why Philippians then says to think on the things that are true, honest, just, pure, lovely, and of good report (Philippians 4:8).

However, this is only possible first by believing the gospel and second by believing and reading Paul's epistles over and over again. (You cannot think on the things

that are true, honest, just, pure, lovely, and of good report, if you have not allowed the Holy Ghost to use Paul's epistles to teach you these things, because you cannot think on things that you do not know!) As we have already seen, by the time nervous disorders developed among people in the cities of the United States in the early 1900s, the gospel of Jesus' death, burial, and resurrection as atonement for sin had already been abandoned by the church for the social gospel of being good, moral people and helping others out only in the material world. Even if you did believe the saving gospel of I Corinthians 15:3-4 and had the gift of eternal life, Churchianity then put you under the Ten Commandments, because that was the main thing that they all agreed upon. (Do you see how Christ has removed from the "Christian" religion?) Therefore, you would probably try to become justified by the law (Galatians 5:4), rather than operating by grace via "the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus" (Romans 8:2). As such, Christ could not work in you, even if you did bring your cares to Him in prayer, because you would not have the inner spiritual fortitude to use sound doctrine to solve your mental issues.

As such, Churchianity had no answers for these nervous disorders. However, they still wanted to keep people in their fold, since Churchianity was big business and had the trust of most Americans. Therefore, they turned to man's philosophies, cloaked in a form of godliness, and they found this package in Sigmund Freud and psychoanalysis.

Sigmund Freud

A 1989 New York Times article states that "Freud's theories about the effects of the unconscious on behavior pervade Western culture and the humanities." (<https://www.nytimes.com/1989/11/26/weekinreview/ideas-and-trends-how-freud-shaped-the-20th-century-mind.html> accessed June 26, 2018) What this means is that, by 1989, man's conscience had been filled with many of Freud's ideas rather than by the Word of God, and this has greatly affected the United States' view toward sex ever since this took place.

In 1920 in the country, parents and churches were the primary deciders of what went into children's consciences. (Today, the primary deciders are probably schools, the media, and other children, but we will get into that later.) Because America was a "Christian" nation, the beliefs, that were put into the consciences of children around 1900, were largely based upon the Christian religion.

Since Churchianity was advocating the social gospel at the time, they looked for answers that would help people out mentally in their present, fleshly lives without any regard for their spiritual well-being.

Thus, when Sigmund Freud introduced psychoanalysis to America around 1909, Protestants latched onto it like white on rice. Since "Freud was an atheist" and a Jew, "he was surprised by the enthusiastic American reaction to his ideas." Not only did Churchianity accept his ideas, but it was Churchianity that made his ideas popular, as the only objection among Churchianity came from Catholics. (Catholics hang onto traditions a lot harder than Protestants do.) "Protestant ministers were among the first to popularize Freud, declaring as early as 1909, the

year of Freud's visit [to America], that as physicians of the soul, clergymen had a close interest in Freudian psychology and this new therapeutic method....And very influential in opening the door for Freud were the faith-healing movements, notably Christian Science, New Thought and the Emmanuel Movement, all preaching a gospel of health and happiness and stressing the influence of the mind on mental health." (<http://www.hunsberger.org/freud-america.htm> accessed June 26, 2018)

(This is why an ever-growing segment of Churchianity today promotes the "health-and-wealth" gospel, meaning that God will give you good health and long life if you obey Him. "Obeying God" means doing what the pastors of these churches tell you to do, which usually involves giving them a large chunk of your money. These pastors will not mention Freud's name, or else you would not believe them. However, their New-Age philosophies are based, to some extent, upon Freud's psychoanalysis. "For the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine; but after their own lusts shall they heap to themselves teachers, having itching ears" (II Timothy 4:3).)

In summary, city life presented new problems for Americans, and Churchianity had no answers for these problems. Granted, the answers are in God's Word, but the problem is that man's flesh does not like the Bible's answers. "For the word of God is quick, and powerful, and sharper than any twoedged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit, and of the joints and marrow, and is a discernor of the thoughts and intents of the heart" (Hebrews 4:12). The thoughts and intents of the heart are wicked (Jeremiah 17:9). Man does not want to give up those thoughts. He would rather "work all uncleanness with greediness" (Ephesians 4:19). Therefore, pastors have "a form of godliness, but deny...the power [the Bible] thereof" (II Timothy 3:5).

The pastors turned to Freud as the answer, because he believed that religion was just frustrated sex drive. Churchianity melded Freud's ideas with their religion to create a form of godliness that allowed their congregation to have sex outside of what God says is permissible. By doing so, people continued to support the church, and church folks satisfied their flesh, such that they were not seen as being a bunch of prudes. In other words, Churchianity incorporated Freud's psychoanalysis into their religion so that people could indulge the lusts of their flesh and still feel good about. This is why "Freud probably received more abuse from the conservative core of the American medical profession than from the entire ministerial profession." (<http://www.hunsberger.org/freud-america.htm> accessed June 26, 2018) (It is no different today. Churches get rich by preaching what the flesh wants to hear.)

We will now look at psychoanalysis to see how this new religion melds lies with truth to put a form of godliness around man's evil ways.

Psychoanalysis

"Psychoanalysis is a set of theories and therapeutic techniques related to the study of the unconscious mind, which together form a method of treatment for mental-health disorders. The discipline was established in the early 1890s by Austrian

neurologist Sigmund Freud and stemmed partly from the clinical work of Josef Breuer and others.” (<https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Psychoanalysis> accessed June 26, 2018)

The best lie is always the one that most closely resembles the truth, and psychoanalysis was closer to the truth of God’s Word than what Churchianity had been offering its parishioners. Therefore, churches abandoned the lie of works-based salvation and embraced the lie that God is okay with sexual sin, due to the new teachings of the church.

Since we have already looked at how Churchianity’s law-based salvation is wrong, as compared with God’s Word, we will now look at the basic tenets of psychoanalysis to show that, while still being a lie of the devil, it is still more closely in line with God’s Word. (The following is quoted from Wikipedia’s article on psychoanalysis with my comments provided **in bold** after each point.)

“The basic tenets of psychoanalysis include:

1. A person's development is determined by often forgotten events in early childhood, rather than by inherited traits alone;” **(This is part of the development of the conscience, as we mentioned earlier. “Train up a child in the way he should go: and when he is old, he will not depart from it” (Proverbs 22:6).)**
2. “Human behaviour and cognition are largely determined by irrational drives that are rooted in the unconscious;” **(This is a fancy way of saying that behavior is rooted in the sin nature. Note how Freud does not recognize the sin nature. He gives the more pleasant term of “the unconscious.” However, Psalm 51:5 says, “Behold, I was shapen in iniquity; and in sin did my mother conceive me.”)**
3. “Attempts to bring those drives into awareness triggers resistance in the form of defense mechanisms, particularly repression;” **(This is a fancy way of saying that, when your conscience tries to resist the sin nature, the sin nature works with your conscience so that you sin more. “For sin [the sin nature], taking occasion by the commandment [the conscience], deceived me, and by it slew me...that sin by the commandment might become exceeding sinful” (Romans 7:11,13).)**
4. “Conflicts between conscious and unconscious material can result in mental disturbances such as neurosis, neurotic traits, anxiety and depression;” **(“For the good that I would I do not: but the evil which I would not, that I do....O wretched man that I am!” (Romans 7:19,24). Rather than becoming depressed about the conflict between your conscience and your sin nature, God wants you to recognize that you are not good (Romans 3:12), so that you stop proclaiming your own self-righteousness (Romans 3:19) and recognize your need to believe the gospel.)**

5. “Unconscious material can be found in dreams and unintentional acts, including mannerisms and slips of the tongue;” **(Freud calls your “sin nature” “unconscious material,” so that you do not have to recognize that you are a sinner. This is also why he adds this faulty fifth point. Since there is a conflict between your conscious and your sin nature (point #4) and “the wages of sin is death” (Romans 6:23), the only life-giving solution is to get rid of the sin. God intentionally gave you a conscience so that “sin, that it might appear sin,” would work “death in me by the conscience” so “that sin by the commandment might become exceeding sinful” (Romans 7:13). In other words, now that you have identified your sin nature through this conflict, allow God to win the war for you by getting rid of your sin for you. Since Freud does not want you to see that you have a sin problem, he sugarcoats your sin nature by getting you to focus on symptoms of the sin nature, rather than the problem of sin. Therefore, he says to look at dreams and unintentional acts, rather than looking at their cause—your sin.)**

6. “Liberation from the effects of the unconscious is achieved by bringing this material into the conscious mind through therapeutic intervention;

7. “The ‘centerpiece of the psychoanalytic process’ is the transference, whereby patients relive their infantile conflicts by projecting onto the analyst feelings of love, dependence and anger.” **(In points 6 and 7, Freud is basically saying that the conflict is not between your conscience and your sin nature. Rather, the conflict is between your conscience and the things that happened to you as an infant. Since your brain was not fully developed as an infant, whatever bad thoughts or things you have done are not your fault. In learning this, you can feel good about yourself now. So, you have done nothing wrong and are really a good person after all! However, the truth is that you have sinned and come short of the glory of God (Romans 3:23). Therefore, you need to recognize your sin, trust in Jesus’ death, burial, and resurrection as atonement for your sin (I Corinthians 15:3-4), and then “the blood of Christ [will] purge your conscience from dead works to serve the living God” (Hebrews 9:14). In other words, God’s process is to recognize your sin and be saved from trying to obey the law of your conscience by believing the gospel, while Freud says the solution is to recognize your own holiness because your sin came from when you were an infant and so you are not responsible for your own actions!)**

(<https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Psychoanalysis> accessed June 26, 2018)

This analysis shows how subtle Satan is in using Freud’s psychoanalysis to turn the truth of God into a lie and make the lie look like the truth. Freud does not recognize your sin. Rather, he just says that bad things happened to you out of no fault of your own. So, you just need to get past those bad things and start living as a good person. This is the exact message of all major denominations of Churchianity today. They may use the word “sin” and mention Jesus’ death on the

cross, but they only use Biblical terms to have that form of godliness around man's philosophies so that you will accept what they say as the Word of God. We know this to be true because they all claim that the power to live for God is within you and that, in some form or another, you work your way toward heaven. Thus, we see how God's Word has been replaced in Churchianity by something that sounds good to the flesh.

Freud's View on Sex

While Freud's psychoanalysis is considered outdated, it is still important to understand since it was very popular in the 1920s and because modern psychiatry has its basis in Freud.

Even more important is Freud's view on sex, since: 1) His view represents a major shift from God's Word, 2) It was adopted by many people in the 1920s, and 3) It is still the prevailing idea about sex in today's America.

"Freud taught that sexual repression was the chief psychological problem of mankind. He surmised that repression and constriction of sexual behavior in youth would become manifest in adulthood." (<http://www.vision.org/visionmedia/biography-sigmund-freud/597.aspx> accessed June 27, 2018)

What was usually taught in America up until Freud's visit in 1909 was that the only sex that is not a sin is sex between a man and a woman within the confines of marriage, which is what the Bible teaches. Therefore, pre-marital sex and adultery were considered sin. Because of this, parents taught their children to repress their sexual tendencies. Freud said that this repression caused the psychological problems that Americans experienced in the city in the 1920s. Therefore, not only did Freud's psychoanalysis refuse to recognize the sin problem and made all the problems in your life not be your fault, but it also said that the solution to America's problem was having sex.

In fact, "Freud was able to persuade his opponents and admirers alike that sexual repression was rampant, unhealthy, and the indirect cause of much crime, illness and woe....Through psychoanalysis, Freud set out to uncover his patients' sexual repression." (<http://www.vision.org/visionmedia/biography-sigmund-freud/597.aspx> accessed June 27, 2018)

Therefore, the great damage that Freud did was to get people away from God's laws about sex found in scripture and get them believe that "sex surrounds almost every human action and emotion even from infancy," such that sex outside of marriage was no longer seen as a sin by many Americans and that every man's thought somehow revolved around sex.

(<http://www.vision.org/visionmedia/biography-sigmund-freud/597.aspx> accessed June 27, 2018). In short, Freud taught Americans to think about sex, instead of about God.

Summary

In conclusion, while America was a rural country, they followed their generic form

of Churchianity, which supported a good, moral life of marriage and family. Advances of the second industrial revolution resulted in the majority of Americans living in cities for the first time in 1920. The big cities brought stress and other mental health problems to Americans. Since watered-down Churchianity did not care about following the Bible, Americans turned to advances from the scientific revolution. In other words, they sought material gain, abandoning the spiritual. Freud's psychoanalysis was used as a way of solving big-city problems, since his views scratched the itching ears of the flesh of Churchianity (II Timothy 4:3-4), not discerning the evil intents of their heart (Hebrews 4:12). The problem is that Freud's solution to the city's problems is completely contrary to God's Word, since it involves having sex as much as possible without any constraints. This resulted in the sexual liberation of women, which is a fancy way of saying that the purity of marriage was no longer pursued by Americans as a whole, resulting in rampant sexual sin that broke down God's institutions of marriage and family.

This is the first of three steps in the downward spiral of sin, as outlined in Romans 1:18-32. Man "became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened" (Romans 1:21) by abandoning God's sexual laws for Freud's ideas. "Wherefore God also gave them up to uncleanness through the lusts of their own hearts, to dishonour their own bodies between themselves" by having sex outside of marriage, because they "changed the truth of God into a lie, and worshipped and served the creature [their own sinful flesh] more than the Creator" (Romans 1:24-25).

America in 1929

The Great Depression technically began in August 1929, and it became noticeable to most Americans when the stock market crashed on October 29, 1929 (https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Great_Depression accessed June 28, 2018). This put an end to the Roaring '20s. After all, it is hard to party when you do not have any money to spend. Therefore, America entered survival mode. America did not fully recover from the Great Depression until it entered World War 2 on December 7, 1941.

However, this book is about sexual sin, and sin continued unabated during the 1930s. This is because America's moral foundation had been shaken. Before 1910, regardless of denomination, Churchianity taught that marriage is between one man and one woman and sex outside of marriage is a sin. Then, Freud came in and taught that American's mental health depended upon regular sex, and that it did not matter where this sex came from. The sad part is that Churchianity, because it was not grounded in the truth of God's Word, embraced these sinful ideas. Granted, not every church did this, but society as a whole did. Also, many people still taught their children correctly. We also saw that, while women in the city in the 1920 were sexually promiscuous, they did so with the intent of finding men to marry, to spend the rest of their lives with, and to confine sex to marriage. Therefore, all hell did not break loose when Freud's ideas became mainstream in the Roaring '20s.

Still, a major shift had taken place. As we noted, America took the first step in the

downward spiral of sin in Romans 1:18-32 in the Roaring '20s by physically committing sexual sin to a degree that was unheard of before then. The problem is that the moral standard of the church was now compromised. Even though people still attended church, churches had changed their teachings to excuse sin. Thus, the moral check of the church had been removed and had been replaced with the looser morals of the cities.

Country to City Transition – 1920s – 1950s

When young men and women began working primarily in the city in America in 1920, society's rules had changed. In the country, a young woman's parents and siblings were in control of what happened between a young woman and a young man. Having sex with a man and not marrying him would bring great shame to a woman, such that she probably would not be able to survive economically for her entire life. The man, with whom she had sex, would not suffer such shame. However, because of shaming the woman, her father or brothers may have killed the man or seen to it that his livelihood was taken away from him, as well. Therefore, country life brought a great deterrent to physical sex outside of wedlock or betrothal.

In the city in the 1920s, Freudian philosophy and the secrecy of young people's relations, especially from their parents, removed a great barrier to physical sex outside of marriage. For men, this meant that they wanted to have sex as much as possible with whomever they found attractive at the time. However, women still had several problems. First, God made women's minds to only desire sex with men that they "fall in love with," rather than just the first good looking man they see. Second, their sex drive is not as strong, in general, as men's sex drive is. Third, God also made women's minds to be more concerned with what family thinks than men are. Therefore, they are more likely to abide by the wishes of their parents and feel guilty for having sex outside of marriage, even if their parents are not carefully watching them. Fourth, women were not independent yet. While they could get office jobs in the city, those jobs rarely paid them enough to live on their own, which meant, economically speaking, women still needed men to take care of them, and this would only happen in marriage. Fifth, women could get pregnant from sex, while men could not. If pregnant, everyone in their world would know they were committing sexual sin. Therefore, these factors brought greater shame over sexual sin for women than for men. Also, being pregnant would definitely mean that the woman needs to get married, because she cannot work now that she has to take care of a baby. (Now, you know why it is easier for women to be sober minded than it is for men, because women have a lot more to think about!)

At the same time, women's power to refrain from sex was greatly diminished by moving from the country to the city, since young men and women controlled their own relationships, rather than the women's parents and siblings doing so. If a man was interested in physical contact and a woman did not give it to him, the man may look for some other woman who would. So, a woman still needed to get married to have a man take care of her financially, but a man no longer needed a wife, financially speaking. Therefore, men could pursue sex purely for pleasure,

while women could not do this. So, the only ways for women to get men to marry them were to: 1) Find men interested in starting a family and having lifelong companions, or 2) Find men who only want to have fun, give them the sex they want, and then trick, guilt, or nag them into marrying them. Remember that we learned, from Titus 2:6, that the biggest problem of young men is that they are not sober minded. Therefore, very few men were in the first category. This meant that women had to use their powers of seduction to force men into marrying them, while also looking out for their own interests to make sure they did not get pregnant. Therefore, city life, in the last 100 years, has had women in control of men, even though God's design is for the man to be over the woman.

We have already discussed the huge change that the "Roaring '20s" brought to American society. Young women began wearing makeup for the first time, began showing off their skin, wearing high heels, and doing whatever they could to make themselves look physically attractive to men. It was now a sexual-attractiveness contest among all unmarried women to try to seduce men into marrying them while they were still young and sexually attractive to men. Therefore, as time went on, from the 1920s to the 1950s, women continued to show more skin, wear more makeup, and have sex with men sooner in order to trap men and get men to marry women before other women steal them away. They would then have to start all over again with some new dolt.

Therefore, sexual morals became looser and looser for women in the city, as they tried to outdo each other in order to get a man. "A majority of women during the 1920s under the age of 30 were nonetheless virgins at marriage, however, and half of those who were not only had sex with their fiancés." "Beginning in the 1950s, as premarital sex became more common, the stigma attached to it lessened for many people. In 1969, 70% of Americans disapproved of premarital sex, but by 1973 this number had dropped to 50%. By 2000, roughly a third of couples in the United States had lived together prior to marriage." (https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Premarital_sex accessed August 28, 2018)

In the 1920s through the 1950s, rich women went to college to find men, not for a career. The reason is because a college man would earn more in life and be better able to support his wife and give her the finer things in life than a high-school graduate could. Therefore, while college men tried to get good grades to get high-paying jobs, college women progressively gave men what they wanted, sexually speaking, in order to snag husbands with high-paying jobs.

Technological Changes

We also need to consider the changes in technology during this time. "By the mid-20s, movies were big business (with a capital investment totaling over \$2 billion)" (<http://www.filmsite.org/20sintro.html> accessed August 29, 2018). Included in these pictures were female actresses who began to be viewed as attractive by young men and were idolized by young women. They were known as sex symbols. "The 1930s cartoon character Betty Boop is the first and most famous sex symbol on animated screen." (https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Sex_symbol accessed August 29, 2018). "Being sexually

fantasized, famous actresses in early 20th-century film were both drawn and photographed and put on posters to be sold for personal entertainment.” (https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Pin-up_model accessed August 29, 2018). These were known as “pin-up models.”

Also, advances in technology caused America’s magazine market to increase “exponentially in the late 1800s” (<https://www.magazines.com/history-of-magazines> accessed August 29, 2018). This led to Esquire, the first men’s magazine. “The 1932 Esquire men’s magazine featured many drawings and girlie cartoons but was most famous for its Vargas girls.” During World War II, “9 million copies of the magazine-without ads and free of charge was sent to American troops stationed overseas and in domestic bases.” (https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Pin-up_model accessed August 29, 2018)

What this meant was that a woman was no longer seen as the loving wife, keeper of the home, and raiser of the kids. Instead, she was a sex symbol. To give you an idea, Marilyn Monroe was the most popular sex symbol of the 1950s. “Although she was a top-billed actress for only a decade, her films grossed \$200 million dollars by the time of her unexpected death in 1962 (equivalent to \$2 billion in 2017).” (https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Marilyn_Monroe accessed August 29, 2018)

Pop Culture

By 1950, an estimated 10 million homes owned a television set. A shift in demographics created a change in the film industry’s target market, which began creating material aimed at American youth. The 1960’s saw a great push for social change. Movies during this time focused on fun, fashion, rock n’ roll, societal shifts like the civil rights movements, and transitions in cultural values. It was also a time of change in the world’s perception of America and its culture, largely influenced by the Vietnam War and continuous shifts in governmental power. The 1970’s saw a rush of creativity due to changes in restrictions on language, sex, violence, and other strong thematic content. American counterculture inspired Hollywood to take greater risks with new alternative filmmakers. (<http://historycooperative.org/the-history-of-the-hollywood-movie-industry/> accessed July 11, 2018)

The Celebrity – a Modern Day Idol

Furthermore, who people listened to also changed in the 1920s. Before, people’s consciences were shaped largely by their parents, their schools, and their churches. However, with people moving to the city and the advent of the motion picture, a new influence came into their lives—the celebrity.

Now, there were complete strangers, called movie stars, who people listened to, even though they had never even met them. (In the Bible, angels are called “stars” (Psalm 38:7; Isaiah 14:13; Revelation 1:20). In man’s eyes, movie “stars” ascended above man to become like angels who people worship (Colossians 2:18).) By the 1950s, there were also music stars. John Lennon said in 1966, “We’re more popular than Jesus now.” He was criticized for saying so, but he was really speaking the truth. (<https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Celebrity> accessed June 28, 2018)

Celebrity Worship

The truth is that celebrities are worshipped. You see, if you are married to someone, it does not take long for you to figure out what she is all about. She may have fooled you with makeup while you were dating her, but, when you are married, you know what she really looks like, underneath all of the gunk. Celebrities, however, are not like that. You see them at their best in their sport, television show, or movie. As such, the celebrity becomes “a predictable, nonthreatening, and, hence, perfect role partner for the viewer.” You end up loving them, not for who they are, but for “what you IMAGINE they are. You put more into the person to a certain extent than they may even be giving out on the screen, because they represent a dream. You lose yourself in those people.” In other words, the perfect person does not exist in real life, but she does exist on the big screen. The result is “a society that: ...encourages us to manufacture our fantasies while simultaneously destroying our former role models and ripping away the guideposts of the past. The result is that we have created synthetic celebrities whom we worship, however briefly, because they vicariously act out our noblest or basest desires.” In other words, in the minds of most people today, God and His Word have been replaced by their favorite celebrity.

“In a study investigating levels of what is called ‘Celebrity Worship’ in the general public, a full 1/3 of the population was found to suffer from what the authors describe as “borderline-pathological” levels of “Celebrity Worship Syndrome,” evidencing a preoccupation with a favorite celebrity.” (“Celebrity Worship and the American Mind” by Donna Rockwell, 1-9-17, <https://www.huffpost.com/entry/celebrity-worship-and-the-b-13794782>, accessed April 9, 2019). It has gotten to the point where I have even heard “CHRISTIAN” married couples unashamedly proclaim that they allow their spouses a “Mulligan,” meaning that they are allowed to have sex with one certain celebrity of their choosing, should the opportunity arise. The idea is that, if you are allowed to fantasize about one person, who you could never have sex with, it will keep you faithful to your spouse. However, the effect is just the opposite. It creates a fantasy world, in which your spouse is allowed to become obsessed with that one person. This means that she is probably thinking of that celebrity while having sex with you, which means that, as far as her mind is concerned, she is always having sex with that celebrity, not with you. In fact, such a fantasy may be the only thing that makes sex enjoyable, since she is so concerned with the lusts of the flesh that she does not enjoy the wonderful oneness between a husband and a wife as God intended, enjoying the pleasures of sin for a season instead (Hebrews 11:25).

History of Movie Stars

Since the movie star, then the music star, and now the sports star is worshipped (Colossians 2:18) instead of God, let’s look at how the creation of the movie star happened, since movie stars came along first.

The first motion picture studio was built in 1919, just outside of Hollywood, and the first movie with sound came out in 1927. (<https://www.u-s-history.com/pages/h3871.html>)

accessed July 11, 2018). Thus, it was in the 1920s “when the movie industry began to truly flourish, along with the birth of the ‘movie star....Movie stars began to receive greater fame and notoriety due to increases in publicity and shifts in American trends to value faces from the big screen.” (<http://historycooperative.org/the-history-of-the-hollywood-movie-industry/> accessed July 11, 2018).

“In the 1930s, the Democrats and the Republicans saw money in Hollywood.” President Franklin Roosevelt even partnered with Hollywood in a national campaign in 1939. (https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Cinema_of_the_United_States accessed July 11, 2018). In the early 1940s, during World War II, “Hollywood was a major source of American patriotism by generating propaganda, documentaries, educational pictures, and general awareness of wartime need. The year 1946 saw an all-time high in theater attendance and total profits.” (<http://historycooperative.org/the-history-of-the-hollywood-movie-industry/> accessed July 11, 2018).

What this tells us is that, from 1920-1950, Americans did not just listen to their church any more, but they also idolized movie stars and probably believed what they said more than what their pastors said. This has HUGE implications for the downward spiral of sin in America. Before 1920, Americans’ morality was largely tied to their church, which did not change much in the country. By 1920, Freud’s ideas had infiltrated the church, and Americans began listening to movie stars, instead of the church.

The result is that Americans’ view of morality would now change much more rapidly since new movie stars with new ideas were now cropping up all the time. Therefore, Americans scrapped the moral standard of the church for the immorality of new, young, movie stars.

Sex Separated from Marriage in the 1930s – 1950s

Due to the roles of Freud and movie stars, Americans’ view of sex in the 1930s continued to become more liberal. However, the party mentality of the Roaring ‘20s was now gone, since America was in the Great Depression. Therefore, the 1930s are characterized by a “birth control boom.” “This shows the gradual changes that had been occurring since before 1900, when because of religious reasons birth control had been illegal, to the 1910s and 1920s when illegal clinics existed, to the 1930’s where it was not only legal, but greatly advertised and became a popular market especially targeted at women.”

“The 1940s continued on the more liberalized ideal towards sex: that it didn’t just have to be for reproductive purposes.” (<http://historyofsexuality.umwblogs.org/topic-1/the-great-depression/> accessed July 11, 2018). In other words, most Americans had now separated sex from marriage, when God’s law of sex equaling marriage had not changed.

This shifted in view is verified by the Kinsey reports. These were published by Dr. Alfred Kinsey in 1948 regarding male sexual behavior and in 1954 regarding female sexual behavior. The results of these thousands of interviews were that “68-90% of males and almost 50% of females had premarital sex, 92% of males and

62% of females had at some point masturbated, and 37% of males and 13% of females had engaged in [same-sex] intercourse.” The reports also revealed that 50% of men and 26% of women had cheated on their spouse.”

By the end of the 1950s, “girlie magazines” had become very popular, and this brought about a more equal view towards men and women engaging in sexual activity. (<http://historyofsexuality.umwblogs.org/topic-1/sub-topic/> “The Fifties By Chelsea Mageland” accessed July 12, 2018). The most popular girlie magazine, Playboy, came out in December 1953 with Marilyn Monroe on the cover.

Speaking of Marilyn Monroe, “she became one of the most popular sex symbols of the 1950s and was emblematic of the era's attitudes towards sexuality” (https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Marilyn_Monroe accessed July 11, 2018). Furthermore, the late 1950s brought movies breaching sexual subjects that were previously taboo. (<http://historyofsexuality.umwblogs.org/topic-1/sub-topic/> “The Fifties By Chelsea Mageland” accessed July 12, 2018)

Sex’s “stronger presence in movies and magazines” now made it socially acceptable for women to express themselves sexually. In other words, women’s “shamefacedness” (I Timothy 2:9), with regards to sex, had been removed from American society. Before, sex was a private matter between a man and a woman. However, sex had become big business in America, starting with 1920. Of course, the positive part of sex was trumpeted, which meant that sex was now seen more as a pleasurable activity, rather than as the joining of a man and a woman in marriage. (<http://historyofsexuality.umwblogs.org/topic-1/the-great-depression/> accessed July 11, 2018)

CHAPTER 5

Women's Hostile Takeover

Feminism

“When America was founded, a family consisted of a husband, wife, biological children and extended family.” “Divorce was rare.” “The role of wives was to assist their husbands within the home, both keeping house and raising children.” “By the early 20th century, most states permitted married women to own property.... However, during this time a woman’s role in the family was still defined by her husband.” (<https://online.csp.edu/blog/family-science/the-evolution-of-american-family-structure> accessed August 29, 2018)

These property rights for women were thanks to the first wave of feminism, which began in 1848 in the United States. It focused on “equal contract, marriage, parenting, and property rights for women,” culminating in women getting the right to vote in the United States in 1920.

“In the 1920s,...more women began to desire not only successful careers of their own but also families.” “Many young girls from working-class backgrounds did not need to help support their families as prior generations did and were often encouraged to seek work or receive vocational training.” “Young women, especially, began staking claim to their own bodies and took part in a sexual liberation of their generation.” Most women still wanted to marry and have families, but they also wanted to work outside the home and use their purchasing power to control their families.

However, since the cities were controlled by men, “between 1930 and 1931, 63% of cities dismissed female teachers as soon as they became married, and 77% did not hire married women as teachers.” In fact, 75% of cities did not employ married women for any jobs. (https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/History_of_women_in_the_United_States accessed August 29, 2018)

Beginning with World War II, “women ran households and raised children alone, and some went to work in war industries.” In the 1950s, “divorce rates stabilized.” “Only 60 percent of children spent their childhood in a male-breadwinner, female-homemaker household.” “Soldiers and servicemen who returned from war were looking to get married and raise children.” (<https://online.csp.edu/blog/family-science/the-evolution-of-american-family-structure> accessed August 29, 2018)

However, “the rise of the post-industrial economy [in the 1950s], based in information and services, led to more married women entering the workplace. As early as 1960, around a third of middle class women were working either part- or full-time jobs.” (<https://online.csp.edu/blog/family-science/the-evolution-of-american-family-structure> accessed August 29, 2018)

Therefore, it was really the change in the United States’ economy to being more service based that led to the second wave of feminism in the 1960s, which is known as the women’s liberation movement. (<https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Feminism> accessed August 29, 2018). Specifically, “The Feminine Mystique” written by Betty Friedan in 1963 is said to have begun the second wave of feminism. (She also became the first president of NOW, National Organization for Women, which was founded in

1966.) This book challenged the idea that the woman's place was in the home. Legalized abortion and free day cares were the two main objectives of the second wave. A 1965 Supreme Court ruling legalized birth control for married couples. In 1972, birth control was legalized for unmarried couples. In 1973, abortion was legalized. All of these things show that Americans looked at sex as being just for fun, since everyone could now stop the "nasty" side of sex, i.e., pregnancy, from happening. If you slipped up and got pregnant anyway, there was no need to worry. You could now kill the baby in the womb and continue living your sex-crazed lifestyle!

Various workplace and education laws were passed to help women, beginning with the Equal Pay Act of 1963 and ending with the Pregnancy Discrimination Act of 1978.

The third-wave of feminism began in 1992 seeking "to question, reclaim, and redefine ideas, words, and media that have transmitted ideas about gender, gender roles, womanhood, beauty, and sexuality."

(https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Feminism_in_the_United_States accessed August 29, 2018). In other words, now that equal rights had been achieved for women in the second wave, the third wave's goal became to make the society feminine, meaning that feminists began seeking to discriminate against men.

All of feminism's "advances" really serve to destroy society, since women are not supposed to be equal with men, much less being greater than men! First, women got the vote, which is usurping authority over men, specifically going against God's command ("But I suffer not a woman to teach, nor to usurp authority over the man, but to be in silence" (I Timothy 2:12).)

Second, feminism got the birth-control pill, usurping the man's control over the woman's body, specifically going against God's command ("The wife hath not power of her own body, but the husband: and likewise also the husband hath not power of his own body, but the wife" (I Corinthians 7:4).) Third, feminism got women's salaries to become equal with men's salaries in the same job. Thus, women began pursuing careers and not seeing their role as pleasing men and raising children. As such, they again usurped authority over man, going against God's command that the husband will rule over the wife (Genesis 3:16). Now, feminism has the audacity to try to put man in the servant role to the woman. Clearly, then, feminism is a great evil of our time!

When the Bible was written, "husbands, love your wives" (Ephesians 5:25) was the shocker. Today, "wives, submit unto your own husbands" (Ephesians 5:22) is the shocker. It is harder to get women to change their minds than men, because men think logically, while women think emotionally. Therefore, just as it is harder to get a Pentecostal to abandon his feelings and experience for the truth of God's Word than it is to get a Baptist to do the same, it is harder to get women to submit unto their husbands when society teaches them otherwise, as opposed to getting husbands to love their wives when society teaches them otherwise.

Women are good at protecting the family. They were not made to get along with other women. This is why a mother-in-law can ruin a marriage, and why there is so much backbiting among groups of women working together. Therefore, society works far better when men make the money, and women take care of the family.

The reason for this is because God made women to “bear children [and] guide the house” (I Timothy 5:14), and He made men to provide financially for the household. This is not a misogynistic statement, as today’s society would claim. In fact, feminism is the thought system that is misogynistic, as it is strongly prejudiced against God’s role for women.

When Adam sinned, God cursed the woman with sorrow in conception (Genesis 3:16), and He cursed the man with sorrow in bringing food into the house (Genesis 3:17-19). In other words, God took the roles of the man and the woman and made them harder to fulfill due to sin. Therefore, it is blatantly obvious from the beginning of man’s fall that woman is to bear and raise children, while man is to work to take care of the household.

Unfortunately, thanks to feminism, bearing and raising up children has largely been abandoned thanks to feminism. Birth rates are very low among modern women. Among the women, who do bear children, there is a shame today in staying home and taking care of them. Instead, women are expected to pawn them off on the public-school system, babysitters, and day-care providers while they work outside the home. What a great shame this is on our society! I Timothy 2:15 says that women are saved by the curse of sin “in childbearing, if they continue in faith and charity and holiness with sobriety.” How do you children continue in these things as adults? They have to start in those things as children. Proverbs 22:6 says, “Train up a child in the way he should go: and when he is old, he will not depart from it.” Therefore, if the woman fulfills her God-given role to bear and raise children, she trains the next generation of men to be godly. In fact, Proverbs 23:13-14 says, “Withhold not correction from the child: for if thou beatest him with the rod, he shall not die. Thou shalt beat him with the rod, and shalt deliver his soul from hell.” You will not see this scripture etched on a pillow today, because society is appalled by it. Why? Because they have sentenced the next generation to hell by getting women into the workforce and away from raising their children.

Moreover, since women have taken the role of men to be the leader of the house, everyone is confused. Men’s sins with pornography has run absolutely rampant in today’s society. Why? Because a man is not able to fulfill his God-given role with his wife, due to his wife bossing him around. Therefore, he follows a fantasy world, in which he is the boss of the naked woman in the picture or on the television screen, since this is the only woman who will submit to him.

Meanwhile, sodomy with men and with women also skyrockets since gender roles are not clearly defined any more. Therefore, anyone will do, even someone of the same sex or even children. It is no wonder, then, that world statistics, “according to UNICEF”, show that “every two minutes a child is being prepared for sexual

exploitation,...1.2 million children alone are being trafficked every year,...[and] approximately 30 million children have lost their childhood through sexual exploitation over the past 30 years”!

(“The Disturbing Reality of Human Trafficking and Children”,

https://www.huffpost.com/entry/disturbing-reality-human-trafficking_b_8831834, accessed April 29, 2019, written 12/18/15, by Allison Chawla)

The souls of the next generation are less important to the world than fulfilling the lusts of their flesh with material prosperity, and we can largely thank the increasing role of feminism for the utter depravity the world is in, since women are not at home to protect the household from the world’s evils.

Sexual Revolution of the 1960s

America’s first sexual revolution was in the 1920s, and the second sexual revolution was in the 1960s. We will now look at the “why” behind these revolutions.

First, we know that “There is none righteous, no, not one....There is none that doeth good, no, not one” (Romans 3:10,12). No good thing dwells in man’s flesh (Romans 7:18). Therefore, the flesh will “work all uncleanness with greediness” (Ephesians 4:19). This means that man, apart from God, will sin as much as he possibly can.

We have already discussed how God set up marriage, family, and government as the checks against man’s free will so that he does not fall deeper and deeper into sin to the point where he will never believe the gospel given to him. The structure of marriage and family largely remained intact in the United States until 1920. This is because most Americans lived in the country, where everyone knows what everyone else is doing and where a man needs a wife and kids to help him survive economically. Since “no man ever yet hated his own flesh; but nourisheth and cherisheth it” (Ephesians 5:29), men continued to get married and raise families in the country, which kept sexual sin from taking over society, even though all flesh wants to sin as much as possible. (This is precisely why God created marriage and family. In fact, it appears that God originally created Adam with the ability to reproduce himself without a woman. I say this based upon God’s command to Adam to “Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth, and subdue it” (Genesis 1:28), which came BEFORE Eve was created. This also explains how children can be born in God’s kingdom on earth during the millennium (Ezekiel 37:25, 47:22) even though there is no marriage “in the resurrection” (Matthew 22:30).)

However, when Americans moved to the city, things started changing. Men no longer needed a wife and kids to take care of the homestead, because there was no homestead any more. With World War I’s need for workers and with advances in office automation, some women were able to make a living for themselves. However, most did not get paid enough to survive on their own. Also, women are the ones who get pregnant, which would keep them out of the workforce during

their pregnancies. Therefore, in the city in the early 1900s, women still needed to get married, while men did not.

However, the ability to find a husband had been taken away from them, since the watchful eye of mom and brothers were now gone, leaving women to fend for themselves. Now, city women knew that the men no longer needed them to work at home and raise kids. However, men still had the same sex drive that they had always had, which means that sexual lust became the main driver for men to find women with whom they would have sex. City men also had automobiles and apartments which allowed them to get away with things, not being under the watchful eye of a woman's family. Men also had more money from city jobs that could be used to satisfy their own flesh, rather than taking care of family and the homestead. Therefore, in the city, men have a greater ability to participate in sexual sin than in the country. (It is no coincidence that God chides Israel for their idolatry in the city. Jeremiah 11:13, "For according to the number of thy cities were thy gods, O Judah; and according to the number of the streets of Jerusalem have ye set up altars to that shameful thing, even altars to burn incense unto Baal.")

The result was that women started giving men what they wanted (sex) in hopes that the women could fool the men into marrying and taking care of them, citing moral reasons for doing so (It is wrong to have sex without being married.), even if the women went about it by immoral means. Therefore, the hemline of a woman in the city went from the floor in 1920 to the knee by 1927, women began wearing sleeveless dresses, and they started wearing makeup as a way to get men to become interested in them. Women went to college, not to start a career, but to meet a well-educated man who could better take care of them in marriage.

Although sex outside of marriage was much easier to get away with in the city, two problems still existed: 1) God's view of marriage had not changed, and 2) Sex led to pregnancy. Pregnancy kept a woman from going it alone in a city, and it guilted a lot of men into marriage.

The first problem was taken care of by Freudian philosophy infiltrating the church and American society as a whole. Freud taught that sex should not be confined to marriage, and that regular sex was necessary in order to avoid mental problems. Therefore, Americans' conscience was changed to say that sex was a good thing.

The second problem was taken care of by birth control. As mentioned earlier, latex condoms were invented in 1920 and were mass produced by the end of the decade. However, there were a couple of problems with condoms: 1) Getting pregnant from having sex was more of a woman's problem, because the man does not get pregnant, while the latex condom is to be worn by the man. Therefore, some men did not see the need for one since pregnancy was not their problem, and 2) The latex condom decreased sexual pleasure. Since more Americans were now having sex purely for pleasure, why decrease the pleasure by not wearing a condom?

The Birth-Control Movement

However, for the first time in the city, American women saw the power they had over men by using their sex appeal to get what they wanted, which power they never had before because their family members controlled their interactions with men.

Therefore, women started a birth-control movement, arguing that they should have control over their own reproduction. (https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/History_of_birth_control accessed July 12, 2018)

“The birth control movement in the United States was a social reform campaign beginning in 1914 that aimed to increase the availability of contraception in the U.S. through education and legalization.”

(https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Birth_control_movement_in_the_United_States accessed July 12, 2018). (It is no coincidence that the movement began in 1914, since Henry Ford’s assembly line became operational in December 1913. Therefore, the growth of the city began at the same time as the birth control movement did.)

One thing to keep in mind is that, while young people’s values were changing, the older generation’s values were not, and the older generation made the laws. At the time, contraception was considered to be obscene. Therefore, a birth-control movement was started so that younger people could have sex whenever they wanted with whoever they wanted without any reproduction consequences and without getting in trouble with the law.

“A major turning point for the movement came during World War I [mid-1910s], when many U.S. servicemen were diagnosed with venereal diseases. The government's response included an anti-venereal disease campaign that framed sexual intercourse and contraception as issues of public health and legitimate topics of scientific research.” “Throughout the 1920s, public discussion of contraception became more commonplace, and the term ‘birth control’ became firmly established in the nation's vernacular. The widespread availability of contraception signaled a transition from the stricter sexual mores of the Victorian era to a more sexually permissive society.”

(https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Birth_control_movement_in_the_United_States accessed July 12, 2018)

See what happened? First, when America was founded, a weak brand of Churchianity was passed onto the masses by the atheistic founding fathers so that they could control society without there being a religious upheaval like the one that started the American Revolution in the first place. Second, because of this weak foundation, Freudian ideas were able to infiltrate the church to get rid of the moral objections to sex outside of marriage. Now, with the Bible being fully replaced by man’s philosophies, EVERYTHING in society can be changed to fulfill the lusts of the flesh. Therefore, when young men started getting syphilis, Americans did not say, “They should not have been having sex outside of marriage in the first place, because it is wrong.” Instead, they said, “Our young men need to have sex on a regular basis in order to be mentally stable, because Freud told us so.” Therefore, government, which is the final divine institution of God to keep sin

at bay (marriage and family had already fallen), fell in order to allow Americans to fulfill the lusts of their flesh by having sex whenever and with whomever they wanted to.

However, there were still two issues to work out. 1) Governmental change was slow due to an older generation that would take some time to change their views and/or to die off so that their views do not matter, and 2) The lust of the flesh for men still led many of them not to use latex condoms, even though their use did increase.

As the old saying goes, “Where there is a will, there is a way.” Therefore, the birth-control movement was all about changing laws and coming up with better birth control for women. These are the two issues that were worked out from 1920 – 1960.

Therefore, the first sexual revolution of 1920 liberated men to have sex purely for pleasure. Then, 1920-1960 was spent working on liberating women to have sex purely for pleasure. The 1960 revolution is more known because: 1) As women go, so does society, and 2) Men do not flaunt their advances, while women do. Therefore, men simply enjoyed being sexually liberated, while women enjoyed talking about being sexually liberated.

So, now let’s look at the changes that took place from 1930 to 1960 to bring sexual liberation to women:

Birth control opposition was strong in the late 1910s/ early 1920s. The birth control movement received an unexpected boost during World War I, as a result of a crisis the U.S. military experienced when many of its soldiers were diagnosed with syphilis or gonorrhea. When U.S. soldiers were in Europe, they found rubber condoms readily available, and when they returned to America, they continued to use condoms as their preferred method of birth control. Thus, the birth rate in America declined 20 percent between 1920 and 1930, primarily due to increased use of birth control. Dozens of birth control clinics opened across the United States during the 1920s, but not without incident. Two important legal decisions in the 1930s (1930 and 1936) helped increase the accessibility of contraceptives. By 1938, over 400 contraceptive manufacturers were in business, over 600 brands of female contraceptives were available, and industry revenues exceeded \$250 million per year. (https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Birth_control_movement_in_the_United_States accessed July 12, 2018)

In 1938, female contraceptives accounted for 85 percent of annual contraceptive sales. (https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Birth_control_movement_in_the_United_States accessed July 12, 2018). This shows that the true sexual revolution would be on the female front. After all, if casual sex is all people are after, it is the women who potentially have the greatest repercussions, because they are the ones who get pregnant. Therefore, females are more concerned with birth control than males are. The problem with female contraceptives is that they probably reduce the amount of pleasure for both parties, and males would not want to go along with them, since all they are trying to get out of sex is pleasure. Therefore, why not have sex with women who do not

use contraceptives, instead of those who do?

Therefore, although condoms had become commonplace in the 1930s, feminists in the movement felt that birth control should be the woman's prerogative, and they continued to push for development of a contraceptive that is completely under the woman's control. This led to the birth control pill.

In the early 1950s in the United States, philanthropist Katharine McCormick provided funding for biologist Gregory Pincus to develop the birth control pill, which was approved by the Food and Drug Administration (FDA) in 1960.

(https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Birth_control_movement_in_the_United_States accessed July 12, 2018). “If used exactly as instructed, the estimated risk of getting pregnant is 0.3%.” About the only side effect was a little bleeding (https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Combined_oral_contraceptive_pill accessed October 4, 2018) that usually went away after one or two months of being on the pill. (https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Breakthrough_bleeding accessed October 4, 2018)

The significance of the birth-control pill is that women could take it orally, which meant that they could keep themselves from becoming pregnant without reducing the sexual pleasure that men received from sex. In fact, they could take the pill without their sex partner even knowing about it. **Women’s ability to control their womb without men knowing it is probably the single most important factor in destroying modern society.**

“The pill divorced contraception from the act of intercourse itself, making it more socially acceptable, and easier to tolerate for many detractors than other types of contraception (which had been around for years).” The pill “was heralded as one of man's 'triumphs' over nature.” (Perhaps it should be seen as man’s supposed triumph over God, yet “Vengeance is mine; I will repay, saith the Lord” (Romans 12:19).) “With the invention of the pill, the women who took it had immediately been given a new freedom—the freedom to use their bodies as they saw fit, without having to worry about the burden of unwanted pregnancy.”

(https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Sexual_revolution_in_1960s_United_States accessed June 28, 2018)

This new-found “freedom” of women is really greater bondage to sin. You see, the orderly functioning of society requires some to be leaders and others to be followers. Neither one is better than the other. It is just that both are required. God made man’s brain to be logical, to take a summary view, and to be the leaders. (“The head of the woman is the man” (I Corinthians 11:3).) God made woman’s brain to be emotional, detail-oriented, and to be the followers. Because of the sin nature, women will naturally want to usurp man’s authority and become the leaders themselves. (God said unto the woman, “Thy desire shall be to thy husband, and he shall rule over thee” (Genesis 3:16).)

On top of this, having children severely impairs women from ruling society. First, they are impaired by having to carry around children in their wombs for nine months. Second, they have to breastfeed the babies once they are born. Third, they have to raise the children. You can say that one child takes at least 15 years of a woman’s life. Therefore, a woman cannot rule over a man because she bears

and raises up children.

Isn't that something? Once the city gets up and going very well, the birth-control pill comes along, and the woman can choose not to participate in the birthing process, regardless of what her husband says. As one article put it, "the ability to control fertility without sacrificing sexual relationships allowed women to make long term educational and career plans.... Never before had sexual activity been so divorced from reproduction" (https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Combined_oral_contraceptive_pill accessed July 12, 2018). In other words, the birth-control pill gave women the ability to rule over men, and, since woman's desire is to rule over man, she has been gaining more and more control over society ever since. Therefore, "the pill became very popular and had a major impact on society and culture." (https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Birth_control_movement_in_the_United_States accessed July 12, 2018)

In fact, "by 1962, an estimated 1,187,000 women were using" the pill. (https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Sexual_revolution_in_1960s_United_States accessed October 4, 2018). Its use spread rapidly in the late part of that decade, generating an enormous social impact. Time magazine even placed the pill on its cover in April 1967. (https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Combined_oral_contraceptive_pill accessed July 12, 2018). Today, the pills "are currently used by more than 100 million women worldwide and by almost 12 million women in the United States." (https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Combined_oral_contraceptive_pill accessed October 4, 2018). That is 12 million women who can have sexual pleasure without supposedly facing any bad consequences for it.

Therefore, with the birth-control pill firmly in place, sexual pleasure for women was now completely removed from pregnancy. Now, right away, you may just think that this resulted in a lot more casual sex, and that is true. However, the implications of this are FAR greater. Before the pill, women were sexually active, got pregnant, and stayed at home to take care of the child. Therefore, if women had jobs outside of the home, they were only temporary. This meant that women did not view themselves as pursuing a money-making career like a man would. The few women, who did want to pursue a career, did not have the opportunity to do so, because employers would not hire them, figuring they would leave once they got pregnant. However, with the birth-control pill, women could be active sexually without becoming pregnant. Thus, women could now plan a money-making career, which meant that the number of women going to college increased significantly. (https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Birth_control_movement_in_the_United_States accessed July 12, 2018).

(Another factor is that God designed the woman's menstrual cycle to keep women from working outside of the home. The following are rules that God gave Israel to follow regarding a woman's menstrual cycle: "And if a woman have an issue, and her issue in her flesh be blood, she shall be put apart seven days: and whosoever toucheth her shall be unclean until the even. And every thing that she lieth upon in her separation shall be unclean: every thing also that she sitteth upon shall be unclean. And whosoever toucheth her bed shall wash his clothes, and bathe himself in water, and be unclean until the even. And whosoever toucheth any thing that she sat upon shall wash his clothes, and bathe himself in water, and be unclean until the even. And if it be on her bed, or on any thing whereon she

sitteth, when he toucheth it, he shall be unclean until the even” (Leviticus 15:19-23). Therefore, if a nation follows God’s rules, a woman would be separated from everyone during her menstrual cycle. Her husband would avoid her in the morning. After working all day, he could wash himself and be clean the next day to go to work. The woman would be unclean for one week every month during her most work-productive years. Thus, God created the women’s menstrual cycle to keep women from ruling over men. However, since man works “all uncleanness with greediness” (Ephesians 4:19), man comes along and invents tampons so that women’s bleeding will not be as much of an issue in the workplace. In 1931, “the modern tampon was developed by Dr. Earle C. Haas, a physician from Denver, Colorado....Gertrude Tendrich, who later founded the Tampax brand, bought the patent and tampons hit the market in 1933”. (*The History of Tampons*, <http://www.soc.ucsb.edu/sexinfo/article/history-tampons>, accessed May 3, 2019). Therefore, most women of child-bearing age work every day outside the home, just like a man would.)

(Another factor is that God gave men greater upper-body strength and women greater lower-body strength. This helps men complete the more laborious tasks more effectively than women can. Again, the goal is to keep women from working to make money so that they continue to be the servant of the man. But, man has created desk jobs to take care of that problem.)

Most people, who go to college, are away from their parents’ watchful eye for the first time in their lives, which means they have freedom to do what they want. So, it is only natural that both men and women become more sexually active once they go to college. We have already seen that petting parties became popular in colleges in the 1920s. Now, with more women in college and the pregnancy danger being removed with birth control, the 1960s became a free for all that became known as the sexual revolution.

“Studies have shown that, between 1965 and 1974, the number of women that had sexual intercourse prior to marriage showed a marked increase.” (https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Sexual_revolution_in_1960s_United_States accessed October 4, 2018). As a result, “measures of non-traditional sexual behavior (e.g., gonorrhea incidence, births out of wedlock, and births to teenagers) began to rise dramatically as early as the mid to late 1950s. “There was [also] a visible trend in the increasing age of women at first marriage in the decades between 1930 and 1970 after contraception was provided to non-married females.” (https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Sexual_revolution_in_1960s_United_States accessed June 28, 2018)

While the condom in the 1920s increased sexual activity, the birth-control pill in the 1960s completely divorced sex from pregnancy; thereby, allowing people to have sex whenever they wanted to. Perhaps the greatest harm that the birth-control pill did was it gave women control over their own bodies, which, according to the Bible, once two people have sex, they become one flesh (I Corinthians 6:16 “What? know ye not that he which is joined to an harlot is one body? for two, saith He, shall be one flesh.”) and they are to consider the other person’s body over their own. (I Corinthians 7:4 “The wife hath not power of her own body, but the husband: and likewise also the husband hath not power of his own body, but the

wife.”)

Also, the man is to be head over the woman (“The head of the woman is the man” (I Corinthians 11:3).), which is why God made the woman to be pregnant, because it makes the man the breadwinner of the family. Such an idea is absolutely ridiculed in today’s society because the birth-control pill gave the woman power over her own body.

Now, she would become the breadwinner and do what she wants to do without the man having power over her. After all, that is what she wanted to do in the first place when Eve ate of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil. She ate because she would be as a god, knowing good and evil (Genesis 3:5). Because she was deceived by Satan, while Adam was not, God says that a woman is not “to usurp authority over the man” (I Timothy 2:12-14). Therefore, God told Eve that “thy desire [to be god] shall be to thy husband, and he shall rule over thee” (Genesis 3:16). The sin nature of the woman desires to rule the man, but, as long as she became pregnant, the man ruled over her. However, now that she could control her own body with the birth-control pill, she began to rule her husband, as seen in today’s society.

The way to rule is to bring in the money. Therefore, we see a sharp increase in women graduating college once the birth-control pill came on the scene. Since the birth-control pill became popular by 1962 and it takes four years or more to graduate from college, looking at the percentage of women who graduate with college degrees from 1966 to present will illustrate this point. In 1966, 39% of all college degrees were given to women. By 2009, the percentage had increased to 59%. (<http://www.warrenfarrell.name/pdfs/Mar.pdf> “Percentage of all college degrees Female vs. Male 1966 – 2019, accessed October 4, 2018). (More women graduating from college than men demonstrates how women are trying to fulfill their desire to be lord over their husbands.)

In addition to the college degrees, there were many laws passed to give more pay to women than what they normally received historically. This is seen by looking at “real median earnings.” In 1975, men averaged \$39,253 annually and \$42,220 in 2015, representing an 8% increase. In 1975, women averaged \$16,483 annually and \$30,882 in 2015, representing an 87% increase. (<https://www.census.gov/library/stories/2017/10/median-income.html> “Looking at all workers paints a different picture” by Jonathan Rothbaum, accessed October 4, 2018).

Since money is power, women’s power over men has tremendously increased since the sexual revolution, largely due to the birth-control pill. I know people will point to changes in thoughts, morals, and laws that have contributed to this. However, none of this would have been possible if women did not have control over stopping pregnancies from sex due to the birth-control pill.

Abortion History

The topic of abortion is a great way to understand this, as well as learn more about the fantasy world regarding sex that Americans live in now. Abortion is the

killing of unborn babies. The Bible clearly teaches that abortion is murder.

Americans try to ease their guilt feelings over abortion by saying that a woman should have control over her own body (The Bible says that she does NOT have that control.), and that an unborn child is not really a human. It is merely a “fetus.”

However, Psalm 139:13 says, “Thou hast possessed my reins: Thou hast covered me in my mother’s womb.” Ecclesiastes 11:5 says that “the bones do grow in the womb of her that is with child.” If I existed in my mother’s womb and I had bones growing in her womb, I must have been a live human being in the womb. Further proof of this is found in Jeremiah 1:5, where God says to Jeremiah, “Before I formed thee in the belly I knew thee; and before thou camest forth out of the womb I sanctified thee, and I ordained thee a prophet unto the nations.” So, God formed Jeremiah, and Jeremiah was God’s prophet before he was even born. Sounds to me like he is alive in the womb! Another proof is Luke 1:44, where Elizabeth tells Mary that “the babe [John the Baptist] leaped in my womb for joy” at the news that the Messiah was in Mary’s womb. Only an alive person can leap! Again, it is clear that abortion is the killing of an unborn baby. In fact, in China, you would be considered to be one year older than in the United States, because the Chinese say that a baby is one-year old when he is born, recognizing he has been alive in his mother’s womb for nine months.

With this in mind, let’s look at what Americans’ view of abortion has been over the years. “In 1900, abortion was a felony in every state.” However, abortions were still taking place. “By the 1930s, licensed physicians performed an estimated 800,000 abortions a year.” That is even higher than today’s totals, even though they were illegal. That is because the Roaring ‘20s contributed to a loosening of morals. Women were desperate to find men in the city, and they did not have birth control. So, they had sex with them, got pregnant, and got illegal abortions. Without getting an abortion, a woman’s life would have been ruined if she had a child without a husband, since she could not take care of herself yet.

One thing to keep in mind in all of this is that morals change before laws change. As people decide to cater more to the lusts of their flesh, there is an initial shame about it because it is illegal. So, Americans, as a whole, by the 1930s were having sex out of wedlock and having abortions, but people did not really talk about it. It was a “hush hush” type of thing, due to the shame involved. However, once the birth-control pill was legalized by the government in 1960, it was like it was suddenly okay to have sex for fun because the government said it was okay. Now, women had control over their own bodies, even though the Bible says they did not. Therefore, women started using birth-control pills in droves and having casual sex just for the fun of it without, supposedly, any repercussions. Therefore, it was not long before abortion was legalized.

“In 1967, Colorado became the first state to decriminalize abortion in cases of rape, incest, or in which pregnancy would lead to permanent physical disability of the woman.” “In 1970, Hawaii became the first state to legalize abortions on the

request of the woman.” At the beginning of 1973, only 4 states allowed abortions. On January 22, 1973, in *Roe v. Wade*, the Supreme Court legalized abortion across the United States. (https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Abortion_in_the_United_States accessed October 4, 2018).

In 1971, 485,816 abortions were reported in the United States. The number kept growing until 1990, when they peaked at 1,429,247 abortions for that year. They have since declined to only 652,639 abortions in 2014.

(https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Abortion_statistics_in_the_United_States, accessed October 5, 2018). (“There were approximately 43 million abortions worldwide in 2018, a number that outpaces deaths from even cancer and heart ailments.” “Figures from the World Health Organization put the figure at 56 million abortions annually.” (“*Abortions leading cause of death worldwide*”, by Charlie Butts, January 4, 2019, <https://onewsnw.com/pro-life/2019/01/04/abortions-leading-cause-of-death-worldwide>, accessed January 10, 2019).)

The decrease, in abortions from 1990 to 2014, is due to a number of reasons, but the main reason is that birth-control use became much more widespread. In 1991, New York city schools became the first to pass out condoms to high-school kids without parental consent, mainly due to the spread of AIDS and other sexually transmitted diseases in the 1980s. (“*Debate rages over condoms in schools*”, <http://www.chicagotribune.com/news/ct-xpm-1991-11-28-9104170479-story.html> accessed October 5, 2018).

What this shows is that, while there are fewer abortions today than in 1990, the sexual sin problem is not any better. In fact, “nearly 2.3 million cases of chlamydia, gonorrhea, and syphilis were diagnosed in the country in 2017. The mark breaks a record previously set in 2016 by over 200,000 cases and also marked the fourth consecutive year of “sharp increases in these sexually transmitted diseases.” (“*Franklin Graham on America’s Record-Setting STD Numbers: ‘Sin Always Has a Cost’*” <https://www.christianpost.com/news/franklin-graham-americas-record-setting-std-numbers-sin-always-has-a-cost-227092/> accessed September 4, 2018). This, in spite of the fact that penicillin reduced syphilis and other modern drugs have reduced other sexually transmitted diseases.

This shows that sexual sin has increased, not decreased. Therefore, the decrease in fewer abortions being performed simply means that sexual sin is now sanctioned by society, such that unwanted pregnancies are avoided via birth control. Whereas before, there was shame in pre-marital sex which led to no contraceptives being used leading to unwanted pregnancies and abortions, now it is commonly accepted that everyone is having sex as often as possible just for fun, and so there is no shame in stopping pregnancies from happening. In fact, America has bought into the Satanic life of Freudianism that having casual sex is essential to one’s happiness. Yet, God says this should not be done. If you don’t believe me, look at Onan, whom God struck dead because he had sex with his wife only for pleasure, refusing to get her pregnant, since the baby would be considered his dead brother’s seed (Genesis 38:9-10). How much more, then, does God think that sex for pleasure with a prostitute, with a “one-night stand,” or with a “friend with benefits” is a great evil?!

But, instead of taking responsibility for our sin, man invents ways to continue in

his sin, supposedly without consequences. So, you can have sex with whoever you want, as long as it is consensual and you use protection. If the protection does not work, kill the baby that is the result. Such an attitude means that man is fully given over to the lusts of his flesh, since man is willing to commit murder for a few minutes of sinful pleasure. (Where, today, are people like Moses, who would “rather...suffer affliction with the people of God, than...enjoy the pleasures of sin for a season” (Hebrews 11:25-26)?) It is as if man has snubbed his nose in the face of God, getting away from God’s judgment. However, Romans 1:32 says that man, deep in his heart, still knows he is doing things worthy of death. “Who knowing the judgment of God, that they which commit such things are worthy of death, not only do the same, but have pleasure in them that do them.”

Abortion is rationalized away by young girls/women who think, since abortion is legal, it must not be murder. The killing procedure is often demonstrated “on a plastic model of an empty uterus.” Of course, the unborn baby is not described as “your child.” Rather it is said to be “tissue,” and the procedure is like having a “blood clot...removed.” “It's like having a wart removed! Here today, gone tomorrow.” Then, the clinic will probably give the girl/woman birth-control pills after the procedure so she can have just as much sex as she wants to later without having to go to the trouble of getting excess “tissue” removed from her body! (“Woman Who Had 5 Abortions Shares the Truth About “Health” Clinics” by Larry Tomczak, 1/28/19, <https://www.charismanews.com/opinion/heres-the-deal/74955-woman-who-had-5-abortions-shares-the-truth-about-health-clinics>, accessed March 25, 2019).

Planned Parenthood is the largest organization in the United States that performs abortions. Of the 926,200 abortions performed in the United States in 2014, 323,999 or 35% of them were committed by Planned Parenthood and its affiliates. Therefore, in 2014, Planned Parenthood was responsible for 35% of all abortions committed in the U.S. (*The Real Planned Parenthood: Leading the Culture of Death - 2019 Edition*” by Family Research Council, <https://www.frc.org/issuebrief/the-real-planned-parenthood-leading-the-culture-of-death-2015-edition>, accessed April 8, 2019). Moreover, “a recent government report has revealed that Planned Parenthood, the nation’s largest abortion provider, received over \$1.5 billion in taxpayer funds from 2013 to 2015.” (“New Report Shows Planned Parenthood Raked in \$1.5 Billion in Taxpayer Funds Over 3 Years” 3-12-18 by Monica Burke, <https://www.heritage.org/marriage-and-family/commentary/new-report-shows-planned-parenthood-raked-15-billion-taxpayer-funds>, accessed April 8, 2019). Therefore, over 300,000 babies are killed annually by one organization that receives \$500 million in taxpayers’ money to fund these killings every year!

Abby Johnson, a former Planned Parenthood clinic director, gives some insight into the evils of Planned Parenthood. She says that, in 2009, they doubled their abortion quota. “The mission of Planned Parenthood is to provide comprehensive reproductive and complementary health care services in settings which preserve and protect the essential privacy and rights of each individual, to advocate public policies which guarantee these rights and ensure access to such services, to provide educational programs which enhance understanding of individual and societal implications of human sexuality, and to promote research and the advancement of technology in reproductive health care and encourage understanding of their inherent bioethical, behavioral, and social implications.” (<https://www.myphilanthropedia.org/top-nonprofits/national/reproductive-health-rights-justice/2010/planned-parenthood-federation-of-america-ppfa>, accessed May 3, 2019). Since there is not even a mention of

abortion in their mission statement, Abby objected to the abortion quota being doubled, and she was told that abortions are the real way they make money. This shows that the real name of the organization should be “Baby Killers,” because their goal is to kill as many babies as possible in order to make the most money. Not only did they double their abortion quota in one year, but they also have a goal of performing an abortion in under 5 minutes. Again, this shows that they only care about money—not about innocent lives. The way that a baby is killed by sucking the body parts out of the woman’s uterus through a straw. These parts are then put into a POC container. POC stands for “Products of Conception,” although some joke that it really stands for “Pieces of Children,” which is a much more accurate description. The POC technician then takes everything that was sucked out of the uterus and re-assembles the body parts into a complete body to make sure that they got everything out. The most often asked question by women getting abortions is, “Will my baby feel this?” The standard Planned Parenthood answer is “No, the baby does not feel anything for the first 28 weeks.” This answer was not based upon any scientific facts. Rather, 28 weeks is the answer given because Planned Parenthood performs abortions only on babies that are no older than 28 weeks. Therefore, if they perform abortions through 30 weeks, the number would magically change to 30 weeks. (<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=S1Dcw2tJczI>, accessed April 7, 2019, “Abby Johnson: Un-spinning the Web of Planned Parenthood”, published 9-29-15).

As a significant side note, the Center for Disease Control and Prevention reports that there were 44.5 million legally induced abortions in the United States from 1970 to 2014. (https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Abortion_statistics_in_the_United_States, accessed October 5, 2018). That is 44.5 million humans, who have been brutally slain, so that man can continue pursuing pleasure! Yet, man is so mind-numbed to these slayings that there is not an objection by society to these awful atrocities, like there is, for example, to drunk drivers killing people, even though drunk drivers in the United States only account for about 10,000 deaths annually. (https://www.cdc.gov/motorvehiclesafety/impaired_driving/impaired_drv_factsheet.html, accessed May 3, 2019, “Impaired Driving: Get the Facts”). Moreover, the drunk drivers do not commit pre-meditated murder like those who kill babies in the womb.

Have you ever wondered what happens to all of those babies? No one ever talks about it. This is because, at least sometimes, the aborted babies are used to perform satanic rituals of child sacrifice inside the abortion clinics. (<http://www.lepantoinstitute.org/abortion/former-satanist-i-performed-satanic-rituals-inside-abortion-clinics/> “Former Satanist: I Performed Satanic Rituals Inside Abortion Clinics”, by Michael Hichborn, 8/18/15, accessed October 5, 2018). “Oh, this couldn’t happen,” you may say. Well, I do not see why not. Abortion doctors intentionally kill thousands of humans as part of their job. If they are evil enough to kill innocent, unborn babies, what would stop them from, after taking those babies out of their mothers’ wombs, to use them in sacrifices to devils? After all, it happened in the Bible, and there is no new thing under the sun. (Psalm 106:37-38 “Yea, they sacrificed their sons and their daughters unto devils, and shed innocent blood, even the blood of their sons and of their daughters, whom they sacrificed unto the idols of Canaan: and the land was polluted with blood.” Ecclesiastes 1:9 “There is no new thing under the sun.”)

A particularly disturbing recent development is that the State of New York now

allows abortions to take place up until birth if a woman's health is threatened, and if the baby would not be able to survive once born. Also, nurses and physician assistants can now perform the abortions instead of just doctors.

<http://time.com/5514644/late-abortion-new-york-law/> "A New York Law Has Catapulted Later Abortion Back Into the Political Spotlight. Here's What the Legislation Actually Does", by Katie Reilly, February 1, 2019, accessed March 6, 2019). Since we know that at least some abortions are performed in order to get babies to sacrifice to the devil, it would be easy for devil worshippers to get a nurse to declare that a full-sized baby must be killed in order to protect the mother's health. These devil worshippers would probably also get more sadistic pleasure out of sacrificing full-sized babies, as opposed to ones not yet completely developed.

However, there have also been some positive changes in abortion laws as of late. In 2019, Ohio, Georgia, and Missouri passed laws prohibiting abortions once a heartbeat is discovered, which is usually after six weeks. Alabama passed a law banning abortions altogether. Of course, legal challenges may overturn these laws, as they did in North Dakota when they passed a heartbeat law in 2013, but at least these bills are a step in the right direction. https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Heartbeat_bill, accessed June 5, 2019).

How Women Control Men with Sex

Proverbs 30:18-19 "There be three things which are too wonderful for me, yea, four which I know not: The way of an eagle in the air; the way of a serpent upon a rock; the way of a ship in the midst of the sea; and the way of a man with a maid."

The eagle is the master of the air, the serpent is the master of the rock, and the ship is the master of the sea. Therefore, the man is the master of the maid on land in a sexual relationship. However, only the first three are too wonderful for the writer. The fourth (the way of a man with a maid) is not too wonderful because man's sin has mostly destroyed the beauty of the sexual relationship between a man and a woman.

The next four verses go on to explain this: "Such is the way of an adulterous woman; she eateth, and wipeth her mouth, and sayeth, I have done no wickedness. For three things the earth is disquieted, and for four which it cannot bear: For a servant when he reigneth; and a fool when he is filled with meat; For an odious [hateful] woman when she is married; and an handmaid that is heir to her mistress" (Proverbs 30:20-23).

The lifetime relationship between a married man and woman is a wonderful thing. The problem is that an adulterous woman can come in and ruin it. "The head of the woman is the man" (I Corinthians 11:3). Because Eve usurped Adam's authority, getting him to eat of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, God told Eve that Adam "shall rule over thee" (Genesis 3:16). Therefore, God further says, "I suffer not a woman to teach, nor to usurp authority over the man, but to be in silence. For Adam was first formed, then Eve. And Adam was not deceived, but the woman being deceived was in the transgression" (I Timothy 2:12-14).

The problem is that a woman's flesh does not like this servant role. Instead, her desire is to be god. Note how Satan told Eve that, if "ye eat thereof, then your eyes shall be opened, and ye shall be as gods" (Genesis 3:5). "Ye" is the plural form of "you." If both Adam and Eve ate of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, they would both be as gods. Since Adam was formed first, the decision to eat or not eat of the tree was Adam's, not Eve's. Remember that the woman is the servant of the man. This is an extremely unpopular idea with women, because women want to rule over men, but God designed men to be lord over women. This also does not make women any less than men; it just means that they have a different role.

For example, we see this in John 4. There, the Samaritan woman says to Jesus, "Sir, give me this [living] water, that I thirst not" (John 4:15). The way for her to receive this living water, i.e., eternal life, was to "Repent: for the kingdom of heaven is at hand" (Matthew 4:17). However, Jesus did not tell her that. Instead, He told her, "Go, call thy husband, and come hither" (John 4:16). Why? Because the man is lord over the woman. The woman is not to make decisions by herself, especially this one, which has an eternal consequence. She needs her husband to approve or disapprove of her decision. Numbers 30 goes over this in detail. It says that "every vow, and every binding oath to afflict the soul, her husband may establish it, or her husband may make it void" (Numbers 30:13). Why? Because the man is lord over the woman. Women are to have "a meek and quiet spirit,... being in subjection unto their own husbands: Even as Sara obeyed Abraham, calling him lord" (I Peter 3:4-6).

With this in mind, let's go back to Proverbs 30:20-23. There, we are told that the adulterous woman eats, wipes her mouth clean, and says she has done no wickedness. We are then told that the earth is disquieted (disturbed) for three things. These three things are present when a woman usurps authority over a man by committing adultery. 1) "A servant when he reigneth." Since a married woman is a servant of her husband, when she commits adultery, she reigns over her husband by committing herself to be the sole servant of another man via sex. 2) "A fool when he is filled with meat." We already saw (Proverbs 30:20) how an adulterous woman's soul is filled by "eating" up both her husband and her lover by committing adultery. 3) "An odious woman when she is married." An odious woman is a hateful woman. An adulterous woman is already married to a husband. She breaks that bond by marrying herself to another man by having sex with that other man. This means that she hates her husband; otherwise, she would not have sex with another man. Therefore, by definition, an adulterous woman is "an odious woman" who marries another.

Proverbs 30:21-23 goes on to say that there is a fourth thing that the earth cannot bear. This fourth thing is "an handmaid that is heir to her mistress." This would be a servant who receives an inheritance from an adulterous woman. The reason that the earth cannot bear this is because it means that the adulterous woman stole the inheritance from the married woman by having an affair with the married woman's man.

Therefore, what we have seen, from Proverbs 30:18-23, is that a man is to have

mastery over his wife, just like an eagle masters the air, a serpent masters a rock, and a ship masters the sea. The problem is that women can use their free will to usurp authority over the man by committing adultery. Now, you may say, “It takes two to tango,” meaning that any adulterous relationship takes place between a consenting man and a consenting woman. However, the Bible teaches that an adulterous relationship is completely the fault of the woman, as seen here, since it is the woman, who is completely blamed, for “the way of a man with a maid” being corrupted.

Granted, a man, who lives in Christ, will choose not to commit adultery with another woman, but no man does this perfectly. Every man, in our sex-crazed society, has committed adultery against his wife. Remember that the standard is not physical adultery, but adultery of the heart. Jesus said, “That whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her hath committed adultery with her already in his heart” (Matthew 5:28). All married men have done this, because of how God wired men.

Men want to have sex with a woman based upon her physical appearance being attractive to him. Therefore, the second that a man’s flesh perceives an attractive woman, his flesh immediately wants to have sex with her. This is why prostitution has always been an economically profitable business for a woman. A woman, on the other hand, only wants to have sex with a man in order to feel close to him and to trust that he will be committed to her to take care of her for life. (I realize there are many exceptions to this, such as prostitutes and modern women who take care of themselves financially and seek sexual pleasure like a man does. There are also exceptions with men, who are more interested in companionship, rather than sex, but I am speaking in general terms as to how God made men and women to think.)

These differences are seen in Paul’s instructions to young men and women. Young women are “to be sober, to love their husbands, to love their children, to be discreet, chaste, keepers at home, good, [and] obedient to their own husbands” (Titus 2:4-5). When they grow up, “aged women” are to have holy behavior, “not false accusers, not given to much wine, teachers of good things” (Titus 2:3). Young men are “to be sober minded” (Titus 2:6). When they grow up, “aged men” are to “be sober, grave, temperate, sound in faith, in charity, in patience” (Titus 2:2).

In other words, the sin nature within man is so bent toward sexual immorality, that a man will easily abandon all reason just to have sex with an attractive woman. Then, when that is accomplished, he is willing to abandon all reason just to have sex with a second woman, then a third, then a fourth, etc. We see this with Amnon. “Amnon the son of David loved” Tamar, his half sister. He “was so vexed, that he fell sick for his sister Tamar” (II Samuel 13:1-2). Amnon’s friend, Jonadab, concocted a scheme whereby Amnon could have sex with Tamar. Tamar was the voice of reason, telling Amnon, “Nay, my brother, do not force me; for no such thing ought to be done in Israel: do not thou this folly.” She even suggested that he could speak to David, and David would allow Amnon to marry Tamar. Then, he would not be considered a fool, and Tamar would not be shamed (II Samuel 13:12-

13). However, Amnon would not listen to the voice of reason. Instead, he raped her. “Then Amnon hated her exceedingly; so that the hatred wherewith he hated her was greater than the love wherewith he had loved her” (II Samuel 13:15).

In other words, when it comes to sex, men have a one-track mind. Granted, society can set up rules to keep adultery and rape from taking place physically, but it will still take place in the hearts of men. Only by being in Christ can “every imagination of the thoughts of his heart” not be “only evil continually” (Genesis 6:5). Because of this, when a man’s sex drive is at its strongest, God only asks that young men “be sober minded” (Titus 2:6). Then, if they have lived a life of sobriety, they can become aged men, who exhibit faith, charity, and patience (Titus 2:2). However, young women do not have these one-track minds. Instead, they can think soberly, as Tamar did. At the same time, they can love their husbands, love their children, be discreet, chaste, keepers at home, good, and obedient to their own husbands, all at the same time (Titus 2:4-5)! Then, when they become aged, they move on to holy behavior (Titus 2:3). Meanwhile, the aged men still have to concentrate on being sober (Titus 2:2).

Also, note how young women are commanded to be discreet, chaste, and obedient to their husbands. A discreet woman is one who is wise in avoiding evil. A chaste woman is a sexually undefiled woman. An obedient woman is one who does what her husband tells her to do, which means that she will not commit adultery. Therefore, a godly, young woman will not cheat on her husband and will be wise in not trying to seduce men or even to appear sexy to men. She will even try to hide her attractiveness. We see this in God’s command for women to “adorn themselves in modest apparel, with shamefacedness and sobriety; not with broided hair, or gold, or pearls, or costly array; But (which becometh women professing godliness) with good works” (I Timothy 2:9-10). God places the responsibility for sexual purity on the woman, not the man, because, if the woman does not make herself attractive and does not pursue men, then sexual immorality will largely be kept at bay.

As mentioned previously, men’s flesh wants to have sex with women based upon the physical attractiveness of a woman, while women only want to have sex for other reasons, such as having children, getting the man to marry her to take care of her and be a lifetime companion. Therefore, a woman will not look at a complete stranger and say in her heart, “I want to have sex with that man,” while a man will do this with a strange woman. Therefore, if a woman walks around half naked with makeup and jewelry on and flirts with a man, he is immediately ready to jump into bed with her.

Perhaps an example will help with the understanding of this point. Let’s say that a husband and wife are driving around, looking for a place to buy food. They need food that day, because they are both starving. However, the only store open with food available for purchase is a liquor store. The woman is an alcoholic, and the man has never taken a drink of alcohol. Therefore, if the woman walks into the liquor store, she will be immediately tempted to buy a bottle of alcohol and get drunk, while the man will not be tempted at all by the booze. If either one buys a

bottle and gets drunk off of it, he or she has sinned. The man could say to the woman, "What's the big deal? Just go inside, buy some food, and come out." However, because the woman is the only one who is really tempted by the alcohol, the man should go into the liquor store by himself and buy food for both of them so that the woman is not tempted to get drunk.

Similarly speaking, when a man is in the presence of a half-naked, attractive woman, he is like the alcoholic woman in the liquor store. He will immediately sin by lusting after the woman. This is how his flesh operates. It is very easy for the woman to say, "What's the big deal? I can wear whatever I want. Just don't lust after me." Such an attitude shows that she does not care about the purity of the man. She only cares about the lustful attention she receives from others. By contrast, a godly woman recognizes that she is physically tempting to a man and dresses modestly so that men do not sin by lusting after her. Granted, a man could still take her and rape her, but that scenario is extremely unlikely if she does not make herself appealing to the opposite sex. **This is why it is the woman's responsibility, not the man's, to keep society from delving into sexual sin. This is also why, as the morality of women go, so goes society.**

Proverbs 7:7-10,13,18,21-23 "I discerned among the youths, a young man void of understanding, Passing through the street near her corner; and he went the way to her house, In the twilight, in the evening, in the black and dark night: And, behold, there met him a woman with the attire of an harlot, and subtil of heart....So she caught him, and kissed him, and with an impudent face [opposite of shamefacedness from I Timothy 2:9] said unto him,... Come, let us take our fill of love until the morning: let us solace ourselves with loves....With her much fair speech she caused him to yield, with the flattering of her lips she forced him. He goeth after her straightway, as an ox goeth to the slaughter, or as a fool to the correction of the stocks; Till a dart strike through his liver; as a bird hasteth to the snare, and knoweth not that it is for his life."

Most women are self-righteous when it comes to passages like this and would say, "Well, it's the man's fault. He should not have gone after her." It is true that he should not have gone after her. Note that it is "a young man void of understanding" who does so. If he was sober minded, he would not have gone after her in the first place. However, if the woman would have dressed modestly and not seduced him, not even a man void of understanding would have committed sexual sin. Thus, women have the power to lead society into sexual immorality or not, because women are the ones who either seduce men or keep their distance from men. Granted, a man can rape a woman, but the thought would not come into his mind if he did not find the woman physically attractive enough to risk the penalties for doing so. (This is why it is absolutely ungodly to see little girls today wearing next to nothing, and why child rape is such a huge problem.)

When sexual immorality takes place, society blames the men, but God blames the women. God says, "Because the daughters of Zion are haughty, and walk with stretched forth necks and wanton eyes, walking and mincing as they go, and making a tinkling with their feet: Therefore the Lord will smite with a scab the

crown of the head of the daughters of Zion, and the Lord will discover their secret parts. In that day the Lord will take away the bravery of their tinkling ornaments about their feet, and their cauls, and their round tires like the moon, the chains, and the bracelets, and the mufflers, the bonnets, and the ornaments of the legs, and the headbands, and the tablets, and the earrings, the rings, and nose jewels, the changeable suits of apparel, and the mantles, and the wimples, and the crisping pins, the glasses, and the fine linen, and the hoods, and the veils. And it shall come to pass, that instead of sweet smell there shall be stink; and instead of a girdle a rent; and instead of well set hair baldness; and instead of a stomacher a girding of sackcloth; and burning instead of beauty. Thy men shall fall by the sword, and thy mighty in the war” (Isaiah 3:16-25). Note how “thy men...fall by the sword” in the end as a result of the women leading them to follow their own sexual lust. Also, note how long this list of things is that women do to make themselves attractive to men. Note how God says that, “the Lord will discover their secret parts.” In other words, regardless of what women do to make themselves look beautiful on the outside, the Lord looks right past all of that and sees who they really are on the inside. However, men, because they are also following the lusts of their flesh, are usually captured by these lustful women.

Therefore, the United States in 2019 is filled with women who walk around half naked with makeup, jewelry, push-up bras, high heels, and everything they can possibly think of to get lustful attention from men. Then, when they get the attention from men they are not interested in, they cry foul, while they are giddy about getting attention from men they are interested in. Should a man get fresh with a woman who is not his wife? Absolutely not! However, blaming the man today is like blaming an alcoholic locked in a bar after closing for taking a drink. Should the alcoholic take a drink? Absolutely not! Will he? You betcha! Similarly, men, who live according to the lusts of their flesh, which is all unsaved men and nearly all saved men, will commit sexual sin on a continuous basis if they are confronted with women looking like this. Should they? Absolutely not! Will they? You betcha!

This problem goes back to Adam and Eve. Note how, when they sinned, Adam and Eve made “aprons” (3:7), while God made “coats of skins” (3:21). A coat is bigger than an apron. Apparently, Adam and Eve only covered up their sex organs, while God covered up their whole bodies. (Incidentally, Masons wear aprons to cover up their sex organs, which they view as their “holy of holies.”) This is because God viewed their ENTIRE fallen flesh as vile (Philippians 3:21), while Adam and Eve, in their pride, only covered up a small part of their flesh. So today, women glory in their flesh, displaying their flesh as much as possible to arouse sexual desire in others. By contrast, God covers up the whole flesh and instructs women to wear “modest apparel, with shamefacedness and sobriety” (I Timothy 2:9). In other words, if women think soberly, they recognize that their flesh is vile, and that their souls, in Christ, are glorious. As such, they should cover up their nakedness and be ashamed of it, regardless of how “beautiful” the world may think it is. Therefore, rather than being desirous of the vain glory of the flesh (Galatians 5:26), believers should cover up their vile bodies and say with Paul: “God forbid that I should glory, save in the cross of our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom the world is crucified

unto me, and I unto the world” (Galatians 6:14). Then, the godly woman would have “the ornament of a meek and quiet spirit, which is in the sight of God of great price” (I Peter 3:4).

However, since we are so far removed from this Biblical idea, the result of following the lusts of our flesh is that both women and men never grow up today. They are not adults. Rather, they are just children, trying to satisfy the lusts of their flesh. Women get cosmetic surgery, Botox, wear prostitute-like clothing, wear makeup, jewelry, high heels, and a host of other things to try to get men to sleep with them. Even if women are not interested in sleeping around, they at least feel like they have to look sexy, and they are pressured by other women to do so. If they do not, they are criticized for being primitive and living in the Stone Age. Therefore, instead of raising their children, the children are pawned off to a god-less, humanistic, secular educational system, and the women work jobs so they can afford things that make them feel beautiful, instead of seeking after the true beauty of a godly woman—“a meek and quiet spirit, which is in the sight of God of great price” (I Peter 3:4).

Meanwhile, because women are prostituting themselves before men all the time, the men never grow up either, but seek “the pleasures of sin for a season” (Hebrews 11:25), i.e., adultery in the heart. They are “ravished with a strange woman, and embrace the bosom of a stranger,” rather than letting the breasts of the wife of their youth satisfy them and being ravished only by her love (Proverbs 5:18-20).

Makeup Is For Prostitutes

The church, that I grew up in, prohibited all members from wearing makeup and/or jewelry, including wedding bands. Churchianity today would scoff at such a teaching. The modern, church woman may say, “Those church folks sure were stupid one hundred years ago, thinking that makeup made a woman look like a prostitute. We are much more advanced today and know better than those simpletons.” I recently read a book written by professing Christian women who said that they feel naked if they go outside without lipstick on. Most women would never go to church without wearing lipstick. Now, isn’t that interesting?!

The reason that Adam and Eve made their own clothes is because, due to their sin, they were ashamed of their own nakedness (Genesis 3:7). Therefore, if a woman says she feels naked without wearing lipstick, she says that she is ashamed of the lips that God gave her. In other words, she has allowed her sin nature to control her to such an extent that she thinks it is good to flirt with men who are not her husband (“Woe unto them that are wise in their own eyes, and prudent in their own sight!” (Isaiah 5:21)). Instead of using her lips to praise God (“My lips shall praise thee” Psalm 63:3; “My lips shall utter praise” Psalm 119:171), she accentuates her lips to attract the praise of men through the lust of the flesh. “For they loved the praise of men more than the praise of God” (John 12:43).

“For the lips of a strange woman drop as an honeycomb, and her mouth is smoother than oil” (Proverbs 5:3). I understand that many married women have no intentions of leaving their husbands or having an affair, but they do want to have an affair of the heart by feeling sexy through the favorable glances they receive from cute guys. They have rationalized this away, as necessary to feel good about themselves, not even knowing that they are following the lusts of the flesh, because Churchianity and society will never mention this to them, because their flesh rebels against this truth.

Since “Thy Word is truth” (John 17:17), we will look at what God’s Word says about women wearing makeup and let it be our authority, rather than Churchianity or society. I Timothy 2:9 specifically says that women should not adorn themselves “with broided hair, or gold, or pearls.” I Peter 3:3-4 also says that women should not have “that outward adorning of plaiting the hair, and of wearing of gold, or of putting on of apparel,” but should “wear” “the ornament of a meek and quiet spirit, which is in the sight of God of great price.” How DARE women walk into church, being half-naked with makeup and expensive jewels on. That is “the attire of an harlot,” that takes a man’s life “as an ox goeth to the slaughter” (Proverbs 7:10,22)!

Proof of this is found in Ezekiel 23. There, in describing the abominations of Aholah and Aholibah, God says that they “have sent for men to come from far, unto whom a messenger was sent; and, lo, they came: for whom thou didst wash thyself, **paintedst thy eyes**, and deckedst thyself with ornaments, and satest upon a stately bed....Yet they went in unto her, as they go in unto a **woman that playeth the harlot**: so went they in unto Aholah and unto Aholibah, the lewd women.” (Ezekiel 23:40-41,44). Thus, the Bible clearly establishes a link between wearing makeup and being a prostitute.

Another time that makeup is mentioned in the Bible is when Jezebel “painted her face” to keep from being killed (II Kings 9:30). The Bible describes her as a woman who “calleth herself a prophetess, to teach and to seduce my servants to commit fornication” (Revelation 2:20).

The final Biblical reference to makeup is Jeremiah 4:30, which says, “And when thou art spoiled, what wilt thou do? Though thou clothest thyself with crimson, though thou deckest thee with ornaments of gold, though thou rentest thy face with painting, in vain shalt thou make thyself fair; thy lovers will despise thee, they will seek thy life.” (This verse says that applying makeup is like tearing your own face apart. What a contrast between God’s view and women’s view of makeup!)

This shows that, in the only three times that makeup is mentioned in scripture, it is associated with prostitutes, or at least promiscuous women. Therefore, the typical view of women in the 1800s, that makeup is something only prostitutes wear, is Biblically accurate, while the modern church woman’s view is wrong.

The Adulterous Woman

Women, who seduce men, are just like the adulterous woman of Proverbs 30:20 who “eateth, and wipeth her mouth, and saith I have done no wickedness.” A woman may object by saying, “There is nothing wrong with trying to look good and feel sexy. Besides, I have never cheated on my husband.” However, Jesus said in Matthew 5:28, “That whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her hath committed adultery with her already in his heart.” Therefore, if a woman does not wear modest apparel and a man lusts after her in his heart, he has already committed adultery with her, which makes her an adulterous woman, because she was the cause of his lust. Women can talk about how deplorable the pornography industry is, and how despicable men are for looking at such things. However, if women were not willing to be part of that industry, there would not be a problem. (I realize some women are forced into this against their will.) Similarly, women, who do not follow God’s commandments to them about godly living, have no room to talk about men who commit sexual sins, as they are doing the same as the men are. It is just that the women’s sin is a lot more hidden than a man’s sin; therefore, society does not address it. I believe God’s rebuke in Romans 2:1 is applicable to most women today, who complain about the sexual sins of men: “Therefore, thou art inexcusable, o man, whosoever thou art that judgest: for wherein thou judgest another, thou condemnest thyself, for thou that judgest doest the same things.”

By contrast, the godly woman understands that she is to wear modest apparel, not adorn herself in jewels, and is discreet, chaste, and obedient to her husband (or father if she is not married). Then, rather than blaming the man, she will obey God’s commandment not to usurp authority over a man by seducing him to commit sexual sin, even if he only does so in his heart, by lusting after her. Therefore, she wears modest apparel, covers herself up, and makes herself look as unattractive to men as possible to keep herself, and the men around her, as pure as possible.

An objecting woman may say, “But, everyone will think I am a lesbian if I do that.” To that, I say, “Who cares!” “All that will live godly in Christ Jesus shall suffer persecution” (II Timothy 3:12). Because of this, the world is not worthy of believers (Hebrews 11:38), so, why bother with worrying about what other people think! I am sure this same objecting woman would not let a godly, single man get away with the following comment: “I make sexual comments about women, look at their cleavage, and have a subscription to Playboy so that others do not think I am gay.” There should be no double standard. If a man is not allowed by his wife to commit sexual sin in this manner, then a woman should not be allowed by her husband to make herself physically attractive to others.

Since I mentioned pornography, I should also talk about women’s sexual sins. As previously mentioned, a woman’s sins are not as easily observed as a man’s sins are. A man lusts after a woman’s physical appearance. Therefore, when a man stares at a half-naked woman, he is obviously sinning. However, women, for the most part, will not stare at men like that. Women are attracted to men by the man’s ability to take care of her and by his perceived love, care, and compassion. Also, because women are “the weaker vessel” (I Peter 3:7), they are more likely to

be interested in getting married and settling down, while a man is more likely to be interested in one-night stands and purely physical relationships. This is why it is the woman who tries to “catch” a man, nags a man until he finally relents to getting married, and will break up with a man if he is not willing to get married, while a man is usually content with a sexual relationship without a commitment. Man’s philosophy is, “Why buy the cow, when I get the milk for free.”

It is for these reasons that women’s sexual sins are less obvious. A woman’s equivalent to a man’s pornography is a romance novel. A woman can read a romance novel, see an ideal relationship with a man in it, and then long for such a relationship for herself. Such behavior is completely acceptable to society. In fact, a woman may even bring up things in a romance novel or a women’s magazine to her boyfriend or husband and try to get him to change to meet her vision of the ideal man that she has built up in her mind by reading such filth. However, if a man watches a pornographic video, he dare not even mention it to his girlfriend, much less mention how she should change certain body parts to make them look like a woman in the video. To even broach the subject would get the woman upset that he is objectifying women, and she would probably instantly break up with him. This is why pornography is hidden from the general public, being only available to adults in certain places, while children of all ages can freely check out a romance novel from a library or buy a woman’s sex magazine at a retail store. (This shows that women tend to get involved in sexual sin at an earlier age than men do.) Also, there have been many women who have developed a relationship with a man on social media, and have subsequently divorced their husbands because the man meets her ideal better than a husband does. There is no social outcry over this, but if a man merely looks at adult content on the internet, he is shamed and considered a low-life.

Do not get me wrong. I am not trying to condone men’s sexual sins. I am just making the point that the sexual sins of women are not as easily noticed and are not as readily punished as the sexual sins of men. (This also applies to most other sins, as men make up the vast majority of the prison population—not because they sin more than women do, but because their sins are punished by society more than women’s sins are.) So, a woman can cause a man to commit adultery in his heart by wearing makeup, getting plastic surgery, wearing tight-fitting clothes that cover very little of her body, wearing high heels, dying her hair, wearing jewelry, etc., and society does not even bat an eye at her behavior. Yet, if a man stares at her for longer than 3 seconds, he is the scum of the earth.

What’s more is that “the head of the woman is the man” (I Corinthians 11:3). “For the man is not of the woman; but the woman of the man. Neither was the man created for the woman; but the woman for the man” (I Corinthians 11:8-10). What this means is that God has entrusted the man with the responsibility to be the thinker, and the woman has the responsibility to be the doer. Let’s go back to our verses in Titus 2:2-6. Young men are told only to be sober minded. Young women are told “to be sober, to love their husbands, to love their children, to be discreet, chaste, keepers at home, good, obedient to their own husbands, that the word of God be not blasphemed.” In other words, because the man is the head of the

woman, he is responsible for clear thinking. He then needs to tell his wife sound doctrine, and she is to obey that doctrine. For saved men, God's Word is blasphemed when they do not **think** right. For saved women, God's Word is blasphemed when they do not **act** right.

Therefore, it is up to the women to act appropriately when it comes to sexual relationships. While the man would instantly have sex, the woman is more reserved, and so she needs to keep the man's passion in check so that they do not both fall into sin. At the same time, it is the breakdown in American society, from going to the country to the city in the 1920s, that caused women to lead men astray in this area.

As previously mentioned, once leaving country life for the city, unmarried women left the protective care of their family. Even if the unmarried woman still lived at home in the city, her interactions with men moved away from the home to the automobile, movie theater, restaurants, bars, and other areas where she was left to fend for herself. Now, interactions with the opposite sex were largely unsupervised. Therefore, women began to look for ways to please the men they were with in order to get them to marry them, rather than the men looking for ways to please the woman's family so that they could have sex with and marry their women. In other words, in the country, families guarded unmarried women so that marriage came before sex, so that men would readily marry women they liked. In the city, women have no such guard. They are left to find husbands themselves, and so they started giving sex to men in order to lure the men into marrying them. This means that, the more attractive a woman can make herself and the more loose she is with sexual morality, the more likely she is to get a man to like her. This caused American society in the city to become looser and looser so as to undermine the sanctity of marriage. Now, the woman was in control of the relationship, rather than her family, and the only leverage she had was sex. Thus, she may have been the "weaker vessel" (I Peter 3:7) physically, but mentally she now had to trick a man into marriage, by using sex against his simple, one-track mind.

Sex as Power for Women

"Alfred Kinsey found that American women who became sexually mature during the 1920s were much less likely to be virgins at marriage than those who became mature before World War I." (https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Premarital_sex accessed August 28, 2018). This is because, as previously discussed, the majority of Americans lived in the city beginning in 1920. God has placed within most people the desire to be one with a member of the opposite sex in order for man to multiply. This is seen by the Bible's statement: "It is good for a man not to touch a woman. Nevertheless, to avoid fornication, let every man have his own wife, and let every woman have her own husband.... It is better to marry than to burn" (I Corinthians 7:1-2,9). In other words, Christians should remain single in order to devote more time to the things of Christ. However, because the sexual desire is so strong, most Christians would end up committing fornication (sexual sin). In this case, it is better for Christians to get married, because it is better to marry than to burn with sexual desire. By

getting married, the sexual desire is filled in God's way with only one member of the opposite sex for the lifetime of the couple.

However, sin takes occasion by the commandment to work all manner of concupiscence within a person (Romans 7:8). When it comes to sex, if driven entirely by the flesh, people will "work all uncleanness with greediness" (Ephesians 4:19). Therefore, both men and women have a great desire to have sex with each other. The desire for men is greater than it is for women, and women are much more particular about who they have sex with.

CHAPTER 6

Men's Counterattack: Fantasy World

Creating a Fantasy World

Contrary to popular belief, sexual sin does not take place when you physically commit adultery. Rather, sin comes from the heart. Jesus said, “For from within, OUT OF THE HEART of men, proceed evil thoughts, ADULTERIES, FORNICATIONS, murders, thefts, covetousness, wickedness, deceit, lasciviousness, an evil eye, blasphemy, pride, foolishness: All these evil things come from within, and defile the man” (Mark 7:21-23). Therefore, sexual sin occurs in the heart, before it is manifested physically. This is why Jesus also said, “Whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her hath committed adultery with her already in his heart” (Matthew 5:28).

This means that sin is a heart issue. As we mentioned before, God made marriage so that the woman could keep man’s sin in check and vice versa, since the heart is “desperately wicked” (Jeremiah 17:9). However, “man looketh on the outward appearance, but the Lord looketh on the heart” (I Samuel 16:7). Men usually love “the praise of men more than the praise of God” (John 12:43), especially getting the approval of a spouse. This means that most people are only interested in what other people think rather than what God thinks. Therefore, most people will seek to keep a good outward appearance, while getting away with as much evil as possible in the heart.

Since we live in a capitalistic society, the more successful a system is at creating a good outward appearance while continuing to “work all uncleanness with greediness” (Ephesians 4:19), the more money is received by the creators and propagators of such systems. The city has been more than happy to oblige with these systems.

As we already mentioned, in the country before 1920, there was not much of a chance for sexual sin. You might be able to find a prostitute, but everyone knows everybody else’s business in the country. So, your marriage would probably be destroyed by stepping out on your wife, and you really needed a wife to help out around the farm. Therefore, most men remained faithful to their spouses. Perhaps there was a woman or two at church that they liked, but it could never go beyond a passing glance.

However, in the city, prostitutes and one-night stands were more readily available. A man could get away with an affair much more easily in the city, because the number of people made it much less likely for someone to recognize the person with another woman. Even if the man was caught, his wife had very few rights and no means of supporting herself. So, even if she knew her husband was fooling around, she knew there was nothing she could do about it. Even if she did leave, the man could take of himself in the city and could replace her with another woman if he wanted to. Therefore, affairs and pre-marital sex became much more common in the city.

As mentioned previously, before 1920, only prostitutes wore makeup and showed off their skin. Why? Because a man would only sleep with a prostitute if he found

her sexually attractive. After all, if your wife is just as pretty as a prostitute, you might as well just sleep with her, since it is a lot less trouble, a lot less dangerous, and does not cost you any extra money. Therefore, to make a living, prostitutes had to make themselves more sexually appealing than ordinary women, which is why they wore makeup and showed off their skin.

Technology

However, in the city, ordinary women were in competition with prostitutes. They were also in competition with other women, who would also be willing to have affairs with their husbands in order to get them to leave their husbands and marry them. With cosmetics and clothing becoming much cheaper to buy, due to advances in technology, ordinary women started wearing makeup and showing off more skin so as to snag men to marry and take care of them. Therefore, as time went on, women began wearing more makeup and showing off more skin in an attempt to outdo other women so that they could find husbands of their own.

In other words, in the country, there was a set standard of a woman's family, who would see to it that she was married off to a good man. However, in the city, a woman had to fend for herself, and the only thing she had to offer a single man was her sex appeal. Therefore, over time, women in the city had to become more sexually appealing to men in order to get married, resulting in a reduction in sexual morals, as opposed to the set standard of sexual morals by a woman's family in the country, which did not change over time. Stated another way, single women had to "prostitute" themselves to single men in the city in order to get the men to marry them. ("Prostitute themselves" sounds dirty. So, this process is called "flirting" instead.) Therefore, it makes sense that they would start dressing and acting like prostitutes around these men.

In addition to this, advances in technology created a whole new fantasy world, which caused the sexual morals of women to decline even more rapidly! **Movies** were big business by the mid-1920s. These movies are one of the leading causes of starting the city's downward spiral into sexual sin over the last 100 years. The reason is because men and women in the movies were made to be attractive so that they became idolized. Now, men could fantasize in their minds about being with someone as attractive as Louise Brooks (movie star from 1920s and 1930s) or Gloria Swanson (movie star from 1910s to early 1930s). Fantasizing about these girls became very popular, leading to Esquire, the first men's **magazine**, in 1932. From there, **pin-up models** became famous. These were photos of attractive women that a man could "pin up" in his locker or at work. Two famous pin-up models were Betty Grable (https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Pin-up_model accessed October 3, 2018), as one pin-up photograph of hers from 1943 sold millions of copies, mainly to military men overseas in World War II (https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Betty_Grable accessed October 3, 2018), and Rita Hayworth, whose August 1941 photo in Life magazine, along with her successful movie career, earned her the nickname "The Love Goddess" (https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Rita_Hayworth accessed October 3, 2018). (Today, a man sees more seductive looking women in unavoidable advertisements, which shows how bad society has gotten.) This gave rise to the **sex symbol**. "The term was first used in

the mid-1950s in relation to the popularity of certain film stars, including Marilyn Monroe, Brigitte Bardot, Marlon Brando, and Raquel Welch”

(https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/List_of_sex_symbols accessed October 3, 2018).

Then, the girlie magazines, which started with Esquire in 1932, became more risqué, with Playboy coming out in December 1953 with Marilyn Monroe on the cover.

Attractiveness Contest

You see, entertainment girls have to look more attractive than ordinary women, or else men will not pay money to see them, since, all things being equal, looking at a woman in the flesh is more appealing than looking at the same woman on the big screen. But, then, ordinary women copy what the entertainment girls do, which leads to the entertainment girls having to become more attractive again, or else they will lose their money. The most successful way for a woman to set herself apart from other women is to come up with a look that most women cannot easily replicate. Hundreds of years ago, this meant that the most attractive women were really fat, because ordinary women could not afford enough food to gain a lot of weight. Now, with chemically enhanced food being readily available, the skinnier a woman is, the more attractive she is considered to be, because it is hard to be disciplined to be ultra thin. Plus, being so skinny is not conducive to normal living. (I have heard that pornographic actresses have bodyguards, because they look more attractive than normal women do. Therefore, men may try to force physical contact with them, yet they are so skinny and out of proportion in other areas that they are too physically weak and unable to defend themselves.)

The point is that, the more an entertainment woman can make herself attractive over an ordinary woman, the more money she can make, which means that entertainment women will go to much more extremes to make themselves look “beautiful.” Because wealth as a result of attractiveness is hard to quantify, we will use major league baseball to illustrate this point. Up until about 1988, baseball players looked like average men. They spent their time learning baseball skills, which resulted in them all being athletic, skinny men. They knew they could get stronger through weight training and taking steroids, but why go through all the pain of muscle building and the danger of damaging their bodies with illegal drugs, when the average salary in 1967 was only \$19,000 and in 1980 it was \$143,756. Granted, that was still good money for playing a boy’s game, but it was not something you got rich on. However, the bigger the hitter’s muscles were or the quicker the pitcher’s muscles could recover (both are the effects of steroids), the more money he could make. So, in 1985, Jose Canseco made his major-league debut, and he was taking steroids. Soon, other players began taking steroids. In 1988, the average salary was \$438,729. By 1992, the average salary had jumped to \$1,028,667. Then in 1999, they began to skyrocket again, as the average salary reached \$1,611,166, since most players were taking steroids now. By 2010, the average salary was \$3,095,183.

(https://www3.nd.edu/~lawlib/baseball_salary_arbitration/minavg salaries/Minimum-AverageSalaries.pdf accessed October 3, 2018). In 2018, the average baseball player made over \$4,500,000!

(<https://www.statista.com/statistics/236213/mean-salaray-of-players-in-majpr-league-baseball/> accessed October 3,

2018). Now, it is extremely rare to find an athletic, skinny baseball player like you could in 1980. Back then, if you did not recognize the baseball player's face, he would blend in with "normal" looking people. Now, all major league baseball players stand out as looking different.

This teaches us that, the more a person makes himself above average, the more potential there is for him to make money. The way for a baseball player to make himself above average is to do damage to his body in ways that will make him that money.

Therefore, while the Bible commands a woman to be shamefaced and wear modest apparel (I Timothy 2:9), entertainment women show off more and more skin. They dye their hair, wear physically damaging high heels, wear fake eyelashes, get various piercings, have multiple plastic surgeries, including breast enhancements, vomit up food to stay as skinny as possible, go through many painful surgeries, wear expensive clothing that accentuates their attractiveness, wear all kinds of makeup and jewelry, get tans, and a host of other things in an effort to make themselves look attractive to men.

Hair Dyeing and Styling

As an example, let's look at the practice of women dyeing their hair. A 2015 study concluded that 75% of women now color their hair compared to 7% in 1950. The average woman spends 7 months of her life, by the time she is 65, fixing her hair. <https://southfloridareporter.com/75-women-now-color-hair-compared-7-1950/>, "75% of Women now Color their Hair Compared to 7% in 1950", October 1, 2017, accessed October 4, 2018). So, why spend all of this time changing the color of amino acids growing out of her skull that are dead above the surface? Because looking different makes women more attractive to men. "The more common a hair color becomes, the less often it is preferred," Frost [Peter Frost, an anthropologist at Laval University in Quebec City] said. "It's a kind of novelty effect. The moment you become ordinary, you no longer have the same appeal. There's selection for being a bit different and eye-catching." "Some research has shown that single men prefer pictures of blonde women if embedded in a series of brunettes. But if the men see mostly blondes, brunettes become more attractive to them. Scandinavian men, who are surrounded by blondes from birth, often say they prefer women with darker hair." (<https://www.foxnews.com/health/why-do-so-many-women-go-blonde> "Why do so many women go blonde?", Fox News, 11/14/14, accessed October 4, 2018). Right now, it appears that light-colored hair, especially blonde, is what attracts men, since only 5 percent of white women in the United States are naturally blonde. Yet, 48% of female CEOs of S&P 500 companies are blonde, while only 2.2% of male CEOs are blonde. (https://www.huffingtonpost.com/entry/blonde-leaders-sexism_us_57bdd4f5e4b00c67eca12176 "Why an Outsized Number of Blondes are leading the country" Huffingtonpost, 8/24/16, accessed October 4, 2018). This shows that a woman can get ahead, both in a career and in finding a man, if she merely dyes her hair blonde.

What happens is that entertainment women try something different, men eat it up, and the ordinary women copy the entertainment women, or else men will not be interested in them, because they will not find them attractive. (This is why

women's clothing is more expensive than men's clothing, as women are much more particular about what they wear than men are.) For example, in 1994-1996, Jennifer Aniston, a star from a TV show called "Friends", sported a haircut in which her hair was straight and parted down the middle. She thought it was "the ugliest haircut" she had ever seen. (<http://www.startribune.com/jennifer-aniston-really-hated-her-famous-hairstyle/114074164/> "Jennifer Aniston really hated her famous hairstyle", written 1/18/11, accessed October 4, 2018). A lot of men probably thought that as well, because it probably reminded them of a popular hairstyle of a previous generation. However, she had a cute face and sexy legs that were prominently displayed on the show. Therefore, men thought she was hot. Ordinary women, in an effort to get men to look at them like they looked at Jennifer's character "Rachel", "barraged their hair salons with photos of Jennifer Aniston to copy her haircut." "The Rachel cut is the most popular hairstyle in British history. More than 10.6 million women copied the style from the Friends character played by sexy Jennifer Aniston." (<http://www.startribune.com/jennifer-aniston-really-hated-her-famous-hairstyle/114074164/> "Jennifer Aniston really hated her famous hairstyle", written 1/18/11, accessed October 4, 2018). In other words, Jennifer had a different hairstyle that she thought was ugly. Men thought she was sexy, regardless of what her hair looked like. Ordinary women copied her ugly hairstyle, thinking that men would now think they were sexy like Rachel Green of Friends.

The Danger of Physical Pursuits

Now, you may think. So what? What is the harm in women trying to look physically attractive to men? The harm is that it puts the focus on the flesh, rather than on the soul. God's ONLY criteria for an unmarried woman to marry an unmarried man is that the man be "in the Lord" (I Corinthians 7:39). Hair style, hair color, skin color, height, weight, personality, pretty smile, makeup, jewelry, clothing, etc. are of NO concern to God. In fact, look at God's Son, the Lord Jesus Christ. God prepared a body for Jesus (Hebrews 10:5). This body had "no form nor comeliness; and when we shall see Him, there is NO beauty that we should desire Him" (Isaiah 53:2). In other words, God is the only Father Who had complete control over how His Son looked, and He purposely chose to make Him look as ordinary as possible. Why? Because the outward man perishes, but the inner man can be renewed day by day (II Corinthians 4:16), and God only wanted people who valued spiritual beauty to come to His Son for eternal life. Yet, we look at the world, and ALL they are concerned about is outward appearance and the things of the flesh. For example, a poor, godly man under 5 feet tall will never have the opportunity to marry a normal woman, while a corrupt, tall, dark, and handsome guy will have women to choose from, because a woman's main criteria in a spouse are that he is at least 4 inches taller than she is and has money.

The dangerous thing about all of this is that going from prostitutes (1800s) to movies (1920s) to sexy magazines (1950s) to television (1960s) to pornographic movies (1980s) to internet pornography (2000s) to virtual reality (2010s) has led to more and more realistic sexual encounters that are more and more stimulating, but they are all in a fantasy world. This means that the great focus on the physical attractiveness of a person means that all a person is concerned about is sexual pleasure, as opposed to the lifelong companionship that God intended sex, which

equals marriage, to be. By primarily focusing on sexual pleasure and it all coming from a fantasy world, a man can work all uncleanness with greediness in his mind with little risk to losing a marriage. It creates two worlds for a man. The real world is one in which he has a loving, caring wife who takes care of his companionship needs and is a help to him in life. The fake world is one in which he can seek sexual pleasure without physical consequences except for the possible danger of his real-life wife or girlfriend finding out. However, even if she does, there is nothing she can do about it, because all other men are doing the same things as well. So, she either breaks things off with him and lives by herself, or she puts up with it from him or some other man.

Fantasy World Is Preferred

This has led to the fantasy world actually replacing the real world. A great example of this is what happened on October 30, 1938. On that day, Orson Welles caused “a nationwide panic with his broadcast of ‘War of the Worlds’—a realistic radio dramatization of a Martian invasion of Earth.” The Martians “annihilated a force of 7,000 National Guardsman, and after being attacked by artillery and bombers the Martians released a poisonous gas into the air.” “Perhaps as many as a million radio listeners believed that a real Martian invasion was underway. Panic broke out across the country. In New Jersey, terrified civilians jammed highways seeking to escape the alien marauders. People begged police for gas masks to save them from the toxic gas and asked electric companies to turn off the power so that the Martians wouldn’t see their lights. One woman ran into an Indianapolis church where evening services were being held and yelled, ‘New York has been destroyed! It’s the end of the world! Go home and prepare to die!’” (*“Welles Scares Nation” by History.com Editors on 10-29-09, <https://www.history.com/this-day-in-history/welles-scares-nation>, accessed April 9, 2019*).

You may say, “Ah, everyone knows that movies are fake, and that movie stars wear makeup and have plastic surgery to make themselves more attractive.” Yes, that is true. However, the lusts of your flesh do not care whether sexual pleasure comes from a fake source or a real source, just as long as the flesh feels good. Therefore, when all you care about is sexual pleasure, why even get married? Why not just go into your fantasy world, pretend it is real enough for your flesh to feel good, then go back to the real world until you want to escape again?

After all, marriage is a prison, where the woman has to look out for the desires of the man, and the man has to look out for the desires of the woman. I Corinthians 7:4 says, “The wife hath not power of her own body, but the husband: and likewise also the husband hath not power of his own body, but the wife.” “No man ever yet hated his own flesh; but nourisheth and cherisheth it” (Ephesians 5:29). When a husband and a wife both recognize that the two have become one flesh (Ephesians 5:31), they work together to please each other, in spite of the very different ways they both act and think, and it is a mystery how two people, who are so different in mind, become one and work beautifully together as a unit. However, when man changes his own conscience to think that sex is just a pleasurable act with no marriage at all, then “no man ever yet hated his own flesh” means that he pursues individual pleasure without any regard for anyone else, including the 100th

different woman that he just married by having sex with her. Therefore, the differences between the man and the woman are not seen as an opportunity for them to grow together, but they are seen as hindrances to individual satisfaction.

Therefore, only sexual pleasure is sought. Now, the way God designed sex was that it is a marriage between a man and a woman. Therefore, the NATURAL way to experience sexual pleasure is between one man and one woman. In other words, sexual pleasure is at its peak when one man and one woman are completely faithful to each other for their entire lives. God designed it this way because He knew that man would follow his own lusts. Therefore, if man receives the greatest pleasure doing things God's way, he is more likely to marry a member of the opposite sex, which keeps God's checks of marriage and family in place so that man does not destroy himself. In other words, the thoughts of man's heart are only evil continually (Genesis 6:5), and he never does good (Romans 3:12). Therefore, if man is left to his own devices, he will work all uncleanness with greediness, resulting in the destruction of society. Therefore, God ties man's greatest fleshly pleasure to natural checks of a different thinking spouse and wanting to be good examples for children so that man does not completely follow his own lusts to keep society functioning. Actually, a more accurate way of saying this is that the lusts of the woman to rule over the man keep the lusts of the man in check, and the lust, to have children in your own image who do well in life, keeps the lusts of both the man and the woman in check, as well as the lusts of the children. So, in a sense, marriage and family are a delicate balance of God using each person's lusts against each other in a way of cancelling out the evil effects of that lust on society as a whole, since "all that is in the world" are lusts and pride (I John 2:16). This delicate lust balance is destroyed when the sanctity of marriage is destroyed in man's eyes. **Once the fantasy world and the desire for sexual pleasure overcome man's willingness to keep his own lusts in check through marriage and family, mankind is on the dangerous, downward spiral of sin of no return apart from the Lord Jesus Christ.** This is why Jesus said, "What therefore God hath joined together, let not man put asunder" (Matthew 19:6).

Now, lest you think this is a one-sided deal, women are doing the same thing to men. That is, women have their own fantasy world. It is very common for women to fantasize after movie stars, as well. They read romance novels and women's magazines and watch romantic movies, where they become in love with their fantasy men. They then become disappointed with their husbands because they are not the perfect behaving, good-looking men like the ones in their novels, soap operas, or romantic movies. After years of being frustrated with their spouses not measuring up, they then may go to Facebook or some other social media where they meet men and have affairs, or even divorce their husbands to run off with other guys who promise them more financial security, more love, and more of everything else their husbands fall short in, because they have attributed characteristics of their fantasy men to these new men that they have met. They do not do the same with their husbands, because they know their husbands too well to know that they are not like their fantasy men.

In short, fantasy worlds have made both men and women unsatisfied with the

ordinary world, and they have caused both sexes to try to become something they are not in order to please the opposite sex, resulting in countless broken-up marriages. Even if couples stay together, it is generally understood that they are unsatisfied with their spouses. Women nag men to become more like their ideal men, while men find their wives unattractive because they are not as attractive as entertainment women. Moreover, fantasy people always do what real people want them to do, while real people rarely change.

Therefore, married couples go along in the drudgery of their daily lives, being miserable, staying together for the children, while sneaking away to their fantasy worlds as much as possible for forbidden pleasures. This is why women have “girls’ night out” and get together for other activities with women, in which they complain about how bad their husbands are. This is also why men get away from their wives by mowing the grass for exceptionally long periods of time, going golfing, watching sports in their “man caves” (Now you know why baseball salaries have skyrocketed so much!), or going drinking. Since a person’s spouse can never measure up to the fantasy world, the next step is:

Polygamy of the Heart

Romans 1:21 says that, when man “knew God, they glorified Him not as God..., but became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened.” Psalm 14:1 says, “The fool hath said in his heart, there is no God.” Therefore, if their FOOLISH heart was darkened, it means that man knew God but decided to say that there is no God. That way, he could do whatever his vain imaginations were. This is why, 3 verses later, we are told: “Wherefore God also gave them up to uncleanness through the lusts of their own hearts, to dishonour their own bodies between themselves” (Romans 1:24). I Corinthians 6:18 says, “Every sin that a man doeth is without the body; but he that committeth fornication sinneth against his own body.” Therefore, to dishonour your own body must mean to commit fornication. Since they dishonoured their own bodies BETWEEN themselves and between means “across the space separating two objects,” this means that the first thing man does, once he rejects God, is to commit sexual sin with multiple partners. We are not talking about multiple partners in the sense of group sex, since the word “between” is used, rather than “among,” but multiple partners in the sense of having sex with different people of the opposite sex at different times.

In other words, sex becomes a pursuit of pleasure, rather than a lifetime bond between one man and one woman. When sex is a pursuit of pleasure, you can never get enough of it, as Proverbs 27:20 says, “The eyes of man are never satisfied.” A man will sleep with a woman, but then he sees another woman who is more attractive so he needs to sleep with her now. Then, he hears that another woman is really good at sex, and so he wants to sleep with her. Even if he does not know if a woman is good in bed or not, he will at least try different women in hopes that the next one will be the best one yet. He can then brag about how many women he has slept with, much like a hunter brags about how many deer he has killed and how big their antlers are. The same applies for women, but in a different way. A woman tries to find intimacy and love by sleeping with every hot guy who

comes along. Therefore, she sleeps around, not for a good feeling during sex, but for a good feeling of love after sex. Even though the motivations for men and women are not the same, the result is the same. Once they abandon the knowledge of God as their standard, they start pursuing sex for the sheer pleasure of it.

For the most part, this pursuit of multiple partners started with the Roaring '20s for men with the mass production of condoms, and it started for women with the legalization of the birth-control pill in 1960. In other words, once sex is separated from marriage in people's minds and finances/technology allow them to do so, people start pursuing sex merely for pleasure, resulting in multiple partners.

It is sort of like the rise in sports entertainment in the United States. The reason that baseball salaries have skyrocketed since 1980 is because disposable income has skyrocketed during that time, as well. When someone just has enough money to get by, he cannot pursue worldly pleasure so much. This is why hemlines were up in the Roaring '20s, down in the depression of the '30s, and back up for the sexual revolution of the '60s. (<https://womenshistorynetwork.org/the-history-of-hemlines/> accessed October 8, 2018, "The History of Hemlines", 9/1/13). In other words, because men are "lovers of pleasure more than lovers of God" (II Timothy 3:4), men will "work all uncleanness with greediness" (Ephesians 4:19), and their pursuit of pleasure becomes more overt when their bank accounts are fatter.

Since prosperity has been around, by and large, since the 1960s, and inexpensive contraceptives have made sex readily available to the masses without the danger of pregnancy, sexual promiscuity has increased. A 2018 study found that men said they have had 14 sex partners in their life, while women have had 7 sex partners. (<https://bigthink.com/21st-century-spirituality/men-claim-they-have-more-sex-partners-than-women-but-is-it-true> "Men claim they have more sexual partners than women. But is it true? By Derek Beres July 30, 2018, accessed October 5, 2018). Now, the nature of men is to exaggerate their numbers, while women naturally decrease their numbers. Even if we look at just women, we can see that they are involved in multiple marriages (sex partners), even as young adults. A 2010 survey in the United Kingdom found that 24 year-old women had had 5.65 sex partners on average. In the early 1980s, 24 year-old women had had 3.72 sex partners, and 24 year-old women in the early 1960s had had 1.67 sex partners. (<https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/health/news/7450868/Young-women-have-three-times-as-many-sexual-partners-as-grandmothers-did.html> "Young women have three times as many sexual partners as grandmothers did" by Kate Devlin, 3/16/10, accessed October 5, 2018). Back in the early 1960s, it was taboo to have sex before marriage. Now, it is not uncommon for young men to say how they seek to "get lucky," even on first dates with women.

Silicon Valley

A great example of the increase in sexual promiscuity today is seen in Silicon Valley, which is a place in central California where many of the billion-dollar computer companies are located.

Emily Chang wrote an article in Vanity Fair on January 2, 2018 that highlights what goes on in Silicon Valley. She said, "Some of the most powerful men in

Silicon Valley are regulars at exclusive, drug-fueled, sex-laced parties—gatherings they describe not as scandalous, or even secret, but as a bold, unconventional lifestyle choice.” Parties are about once per month on a Friday or Saturday night. Sometimes, they last all weekend. “Many participants don’t seem the least bit embarrassed, much less ashamed. On the contrary, they speak proudly of how they’re overturning traditions and paradigms in their private lives.”

Note how, not only do they marry different women every month, but they are also not afraid that people find out about it. The article says, “They’re not hiding anything, not even if they’re married or in a committed relationship. They’re just being discreet in the real world. Many guests are invited as couples—husbands and wives, boyfriends and girlfriends—because open relationships are the new normal.” One girl said she took the drug Molly, her guard dropped, and she started making out with a guy. She said, “Your wife is right there; is she O.K. with this? The founder’s wife acknowledged that, yes, she was O.K. with it.” When questioned about word getting out, the man said, “The people that know me know what is going on, and the people that don’t, I don’t really care.” Not only do they not care, but, “when they look in the mirror, they see individuals setting a new paradigm of behavior by pushing the boundaries of social mores and values.” In other words, these men believe they are championing a new era in which sexual fantasies can be fulfilled without any consequences.

The men have money and power, and the women are “attractive, willing, and (usually) young.” The ratio of women to men is 2 to 1. Sex goes on for several hours thanks to drugs, like Ecstasy and Molly, that get rid of inhibitions. The men are just in it for the fun of having sex. The women usually do it less for the fun and more for the possibility of getting money out of the man, or simply for the glamour of being close to rich and famous men.

This is right in line with Romans 1:23-24, “And changed the glory of the uncorruptible God into an image made like to corruptible man, and to birds, and fourfooted beasts, and creeping things. Wherefore God also gave them up to uncleanness through the lusts of their own hearts, to dishonour their own bodies between themselves.” God said that, when man starts worshipping man as God, they will commit rampant, sexual sin, and this is exactly what is happening in Silicon Valley right now. Where are the morals? They are out the window, because the philosophy of a godless society is “Let us eat and drink; for to morrow we die” (I Corinthians 15:32).

The men say they were virgins into adulthood, but suddenly, now that they have money, women want to sleep with them. Their attitude is, “Why do I have to compromise? Why do I have to get married? Why do I have to be exclusive? If you’ve got a couple girls interested in you, you can set the terms and say, ‘This is what I want.’ You can say, ‘I’m happy to date you, but I’m not exclusive.’” Note how good has become evil, and evil has become good (Isaiah 5:20). The true good that God set up is marriage between one man and one woman for life. The true evil is any sexual activity outside of this. However, in this culture, good is sleeping with as many women as possible, while evil is “compromising” by getting married.

These sex romps take place in Silicon Valley because men have the money to get multiple women interested in sleeping with them. The same is taking place in the United States as a whole, but to a much-lesser extent. In other words, because society is prosperous enough to go beyond basic necessities, it works all uncleanness with greediness by pursuing pleasure in life, rather than just trying to survive. The more prosperous people are, the more pleasure they seek.

For those who have trouble completely flip-flopping God's rules for sex and marriage, the tech crowd has obliged again. One married couple, who freely attend these parties, have invented "Molly," "a "nonjudgmental (artificially intelligent) friend who will support your path to more self-awareness." In other words, they are replacing God's conscience with an artificial "intelligence" that will assure you that everything you are doing is okay. Note how "Molly" is named after a drug that lets down your inhibitions. She is leading people down the path to hell, as they seek pleasure, rather than God. However, the inventors say that she is really you down the path "to more self-awareness." (<https://www.vanityfair.com/news/2018/01/brotopia-silicon-valley-secretive-orgiastic-inner-sanctum> "Oh my God, This is so F---ed up: Inside Silicon Valley's Secretive, Orgiastic Dark Side" by Emily Chang, January 2, 2018, in Vanity Fair magazine, accessed October 8, 2018). Translation: Get rid of God in your conscience and focus on yourself and the pleasures that you want to seek! Then, you will be aware that YOU are God and can do whatever you want!

Pornography

Now, you may say that these sex parties only apply to the rich crowd. After all, similar parties like these probably went on at the Playboy Mansion in the 1970s. Therefore, you may think this is just a fad that will pass once society wakes up to how they are damaging themselves. However, the danger now is that technology has made free sex available to everyone.

First, it was the girlie magazines. There may have been real sex going on at the Playboy Mansion, but there was plenty of sexual sin in the minds of those who viewed Playboy, Playgirl, and many other "girlie" magazines during that time. Many women denounced and still denounce these magazines. However, women's objections are not mainly moral ones. What they really object to is that men find these girlie-magazine women attractive, making the ordinary women unattractive. A godly woman's response is not to get the latest hair style, wear fancy jewelry, and done the latest fashions. Rather, her adornment is "the hidden man of the heart" with "a meek and quiet spirit" (I Peter 3:3-4). This is why both the man and the woman must work outside of the home—to "keep up with the Joneses." In other words, in today's world, material pursuits have replaced godly pursuits.

These girlie magazines led to "The Golden Age of Porn." This occurred between 1969 and 1984, when pornography was growing and was publicly discussed by celebrities. It was the celebrities who made pornography's popularity grow, and there were several pornographic movies that made it to the silver screen in the 1970s. With a decrease in morals, the laws were changed to match this. In 1973, the Supreme Court, in *Miller v. California*, narrowed the definition of obscenity,

which greatly reduced the number of prosecutions.

“The Golden Age of Porn” is merely the title given to the “classier” side of porn. Therefore, pornography did not end in 1984. In fact, it grew exponentially. That is because the VCR being in most everyone’s homes by 1984 made it possible for pornography to be privately viewed, resulting in low budget and more gratuitous films being produced. (https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Golden_Age_of_Porn accessed June 28, 2018).

The VCR gave rise to the DVD player, which made the pornographic images sharper. Then, the Internet came out, which took away the shame of having to go to a video store wearing dark glasses to rent a movie or going to a store to buy a girlie magazine. Now, a simple Internet search can pull up the same images found in girlie magazines in the 1960s, but for free. As Internet speeds got faster, people could now stream videos right onto their computers. Then, as phones came out with the ability to stream videos, people could look at pornographic pictures and videos without any family members knowing that they were doing it. Therefore, today, pornography is not just for the single man in his bachelor’s pad, but it is also for the married man on his iPhone.

“Every year, Hollywood releases roughly 600 movies and makes \$10 billion in profit. And how much does the porn industry make? 13,000 films and close to \$15 billion in profit.” “PornHub, one of the industry’s biggest providers, claim their site streamed 75 GB of data a second last year—enough to fill 175 million 16 GB iPhones—a total of 87.8 billion views, up ten billion from 2014, another 15 billion over 2013. And according to statistics, Porn Sites get more visitors each month than Netflix, Amazon and Twitter combined.” “12% of all content on the internet is pornographic.” The “porn industry is the fastest growing industry in the world. And after introduction of Virtual Reality(VR) it is estimated that the Porn industry would double its pace in the future.” (https://medium.com/@Strange_bt_True/how-big-is-the-porn-industry-fbc1ac78091b accessed October 12, 2018 “How big is the porn industry?”, 2/19/17).

“35% of all internet downloads are porn-related.” “624,000+ child porn traders have been discovered online in the U.S.” “In 2016 alone, more than 4,599,000,000 hours of porn were consumed on the world’s largest porn site.” “64% of young people, ages 13–24, actively seek out pornography weekly or more often.” “Teenage girls and young women are significantly more likely to actively seek out porn than women 25 years old and above.” (<https://fightthenewdrug.org/10-porn-stats-that-will-blow-your-mind/> accessed October 12, 2018 “18 Mind-Blowing Stats About the Porn Industry And its Underage Consumers” 8/28/18).

The world may argue that there is no harm in having a little fun online, because it does not affect anyone. However, “people who admit to having extramarital affairs were over 300% more likely to admit consuming porn than those who have never had an affair, according to a 2004 study in *Social Science Quarterly*.” (<https://fightthenewdrug.org/10-porn-stats-that-will-blow-your-mind/> accessed October 12, 2018 “18 Mind-Blowing Stats About the Porn Industry And its Underage Consumers” 8/28/18). This statistic backs up the old adage: “Garbage in; Garbage Out.”

Boys play sports. When they become men and cannot play the sports, they enjoy

watching the sports. Similarly, men have sex. However, very few men can have sex whenever they want to. First, they have to find women willing to have sex with them. This is unlike sports, where you can just pick up a basketball and start shooting hoops whenever you want. Women put many more criteria upon sex than men do. This means that men have to go through a long, drawn-out process to get women to sleep with them. Men may not even understand this process. Even if they do, they may be too old, ugly, short, or poor for good-looking women to have sex with them. Even if a man goes through the long process to woo a woman, the woman still will not be willing to have sex with him as often as he wants. Therefore, even when men follow God's rules for marriage, if they are consumed by the lusts of their flesh, their sexual urges will still not be satisfied. Meanwhile, pornography sits there as cheap and easy to obtain with a plethora of good-looking women to choose from for a man to have good, sexual feelings whenever he wants to. This temptation is often too good to pass up, which is why pornography is such a huge industry.

However, it is not just men, who watch pornography. "About 30% of porn users are now female" (<https://tolovehonorandvacuum.com/2012/01/is-porn-cheating/> accessed October 15, 2018 "Is Porn Cheating? If your husband watches porn, is he breaking a marriage vow?", Sheila Wray Gregoire, 1/11/12), which now leads us to women's sexual sins.

Romance Novels

Psychologist Dr. Julia Slattery, author of *Finding the Hero in Your Husband*, says there are similarities between what happens to a woman when she reads a romance novel and what happens to a man when he views pornography. "There is a neurochemical element with men and visual porn, but an emotional element with women and these novels," she writes." (*Is It Wrong for Women to Be Addicted to Sexually Explicit Romance Novels?*" by Michael Snyder, July 25, 2016, <https://www.charismanews.com/opinion/58816-is-it-wrong-for-women-to-be-addicted-t>, accessed May 9, 2019). This is why about 90% of romance-novel readers are women (*Why Romance Novels Turn Women On*" by Melanie Wilcox, accessed October 12, 2018, <https://acculturated.com/why-romance-novels-turn-women-on/>), just like a majority of pornography viewers are men.

A lot of people defend romance-novel readers, but no one defends men watching pornography. This is not to say that pornography is okay, but it is to say that most people do not see the danger in reading romance novels. Many wives would think very negatively and be very disappointed if they found out that their husbands viewed pornography, but most husbands do not mind that their wives read romance novels.

Another clue as to how people do not see the danger of romance novels is that there are actually "Christian" romance novels, and some of them differ nothing from secular ones except that they say they are "Christian." However, I cannot go to a Christian bookstore and purchase "Christian" pornographic movies. Moreover, public libraries and Christian thrift stores are filled with secular romance novels, but neither has pornography. Pornography is seen as something that only seedy,

disturbed men view, but a woman can read trashy romance novels on a regular basis and still be considered honorable and well respected.

What's more is that romance novels are not rare books. Rather, they are the most popular of all book categories. "They...account for more than half of all mass-market fiction paperbacks sold." (*Is It Wrong for Women to Be Addicted to Sexually Explicit Romance Novels?* by Michael Snyder, July 25, 2016, <https://www.charismanews.com/opinion/58816-is-it-wrong-for-women-to-be-addicted-t>, accessed May 9, 2019). "Nearly 75 million people read at least one romance novel in 2008." (*Lusty Tales and Hot Sales: Romance E-Books Thrive*, by Julie Bosman, 12/9/10, <https://www.cnbc.com/id/40586418>, accessed May 9, 2019). "By 2012, romance novels were a 1.5-billion-dollar-a-year business that made up nearly seventeen per cent of fiction sales. But, for the past several years, Harlequin's sales have declined as people started getting their romance from erotic—and often self-published—e-books instead of grocery-store paperbacks" (<https://www.newyorker.com/business/currency/what-happened-to-the-harlequin-romance> accessed October 12, 2018 "What happened to the Harlequin romance?" by Adrienne Raphel, May 8, 2014). "Romance readers tend to be women ages 31 to 49." "They frequently fly through a book or more a week." (*Lusty Tales and Hot Sales: Romance E-Books Thrive*, by Julie Bosman, 12/9/10, <https://www.cnbc.com/id/40586418>, accessed May 9, 2019).

If 90% of romance novels are read by women and 75 million people in the United States read a romance novel every year, this means that about 67.5 million women read romance novels. With about 100 million women in the United States between 18 and 64 years old living in the United States, about two-thirds "of American women are covertly consuming literary pornography." "One survey found that 64 percent of all Christian men were willing to admit that they have looked at 'adult material' within the last 30 days. A different survey discovered that 68 percent of all Christian men view this stuff on a regular basis."

(*Is It Wrong for Women to Be Addicted to Sexually Explicit Romance Novels?* by Michael Snyder, July 25, 2016, <https://www.charismanews.com/opinion/58816-is-it-wrong-for-women-to-be-addicted-t>, accessed May 9, 2019). So, here are Christian women being appalled at men looking at pornography, when the same percentage of Christian women look at sexually stimulating material as men do! Where is the Christian community's outcry against women addicted to sexual stimulation outside of marriage? (It is not found because women control Churchianity.)

Hallmark TV

If romance novels are not enough, add to them the **visual** romance novels that women watch, in the form of Hallmark movies, romantic comedies, and soap operas. You may say, "What's wrong with Hallmark movies? They are family friendly with no sex scenes." Well, they may be clean by pornographic standards, but women are usually repulsed by pornography and their objectifying of women, anyway. Instead, women are sexually stimulated by thinking of a romantic relationship with a guy. They do NOT need visual, sexually-explicit content in order to be sexually stimulated, like men do.

Hallmark movies follow the same formula as romance novels, but in a "cleaner" format, and this is what is so dangerous about them. Remember that Satan has transformed himself into an angel of light and his ministers have been transformed

into ministers of righteousness (II Corinthians 11:14-15). Satan “beguiled Eve through his subtilty” (II Corinthians 11:3), and he beguiles Christian women into thinking they are watching wholesome shows through Hallmark movies. In fact, in 2016-2018, Hallmark released a total of 95 original, Christmas movies.

<https://people.com/tv/hallmark-releasing-34-new-christmas-movies-2018/>, accessed October 15, 2018, “Deck the Halls! Hallmark will release a record 34 new Christmas movies this year” by Maria Pasquini, 3/23/18). All of these movies follow the same formula, as we will soon see. You would think that women would get bored of movies that are exactly the same, but they like the movies because they are sexually stimulating, just like men like pornographic movies that all look the same.

A 2016 article from Vulture.com gives the 10-step formula for a Hallmark Christmas movie. Step 1: The main character is “a ‘90s actress you almost forgot about.” Why? Because this will be a woman who is in her mid-40s, which is the typical age of a woman with her husband and kids, who are watching these movies. (Hallmark’s core demographic is women 25-54.

<https://www.foxnews.com/entertainment/hallmark-is-keeping-it-family-friendly-and-its-working>, accessed October 15, 2018, “Hallmark is keeping it family-friendly... and it’s working” by Diana Falzone, 12/13/16). By using an actress about her age who she grew up watching, the woman is more likely to think of herself as being that woman in the movie.

Step 2: Insert “a hot actor you (probably) don’t know.” (You do not know him so that you can picture yourself being with him, just like women actresses in pornographic films are also women you (probably) don’t know.) He has to be a hunk, and he is probably in his late 30s. In other words, the man is the hottest looking guy that the main actress has a realistic shot at being with. This makes the man “attainable” in the romantic fantasy that the viewing woman is playing out in her mind during the movie. (While women usually marry men a few years older than themselves, they find slightly younger men more physically attractive. Therefore, while the older woman/younger guy setup may not be realistic, it works perfectly for a woman’s sexual fantasy, just like the women in pornographic movies are not realistic for the viewing men.) Step 10 is that the woman and the man meet and fall in love in the movie, just like your typical romance novel. The falling in love with a hot guy is what gets the woman’s sexual excitement going.

Now, remember that Hallmark is supposedly “family friendly.” While I could not find any statistics on it, I think it is safe to say that Hallmark has a large, Christian audience, especially given how immoral the rest of television is. This is why step 6 in the Hallmark Christmas movie formula is to have “a supernatural element that changes everything.” It will not be a Christian element, because this would offend non-Christians. But, a supernatural element makes the Christian viewer think that God is leading the couple together. Many Christian women, who leave their husbands for another guy, claim that God has “led” them to do so in order to be with a more godly man. Sounds like watered-down “Christian” values from Hallmark have given church attending women a way to rationalize disobeying God’s rules about marriage.

Still, we cannot have the woman in the movie leave her husband to fall in love with

this hot guy, because that would offend the Christians. (At least it does in theory, albeit not in practice.) At the same time, we do not want the actress to be unmarried, because the woman, having the sexual fantasy at home, is married. Otherwise, she would be out trying to find a guy, rather than at home fantasizing about a different guy. Therefore, another step in the formula is that the main actress has a dead spouse. This way, she has a couple of kids, just like the woman watching the movie. At the same time, it is morally “okay” for her to fall in love with a new man. The problem is that, if this is the woman’s sexual fantasy, then she ends up secretly wishing that her husband would die so she could meet someone like this. This means that is not that far of a leap to just have an affair or leave her husband for another guy, because the scenario of having a dead husband is, in reality, very unlikely to happen for her. Therefore, while Hallmark appears to be family friendly, it is actually contributing to the breaking up of families. (<http://www.vulture.com/2016/12/hallmark-christmas-movie-essentials.html>, accessed October 15, 2018, “The 10 essentials of any Hallmark Christmas movie” by Brian Moylan, 12/19/16)

How popular are these “inspirational” (“Inspirational” means “Christian” if you are a Christian and “wholesome” if you are not.) Christmas movies? In 2017, “Hallmark Channel's ‘Countdown to Christmas’ programming reached more than 72 million viewers!” (“People can’t stop watching Hallmark’s cheesy TV movies”, accessed October 15, 2018 by Jill Disis, 2/14/18 <https://money.cnn.com/2018/02/14/media/hallmark-channel-movies/index.html>) What’s more is that more men are watching these movies now, because they are watching the movies with their wives.

(“The feel-good Hallmark channel is booming in the age of Trump”, by Heather Long, 8/21/17, accessed October 15, 2018 <https://www.washingtonpost.com/news/wonk/wp/2017/08/21/the-feel-good-hallmark-channel-is-booming-in-the-age-of-trump/>). In other words, in the last two months of 2017, there were 72 million views of movies that are the equivalent of pornography for females. It would be absolutely abhorring if a husband, wife, and two kids sat in their living rooms in front of a fire, in their Christmas sweaters, opening presents, and drinking egg nog, while watching an x-rated movie of a porn star having sex with some random guy. But, put on a movie to inspire married women to leave their husbands, and it is “family-friendly and inspirational,” such that the whole family watches it! Wives know that pornography can break up their families, but husbands usually have no idea that Hallmark movies can lead to their wives leaving them.

This is what is so dangerous about Hallmark movies. They are out in the open, and they are breaking families apart by being “family friendly.” Hallmark even says that they are “committed to family friendly programming. Our Standards & Practices (“S&P” — the things that are or are not acceptable for a particular network) are very conservative. There are words and phrases commonly used on other cable channels and broadcast networks that Hallmark Channel's S&P guidelines deem unacceptable.” (https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Hallmark_Channel accessed October 15, 2018). Therefore, by “having a form of godliness, but denying the power thereof” (II Timothy 3:5), women can have their sexual fantasies created for them on television, and their unsuspecting families eagerly watch along like Hallmark is a good thing!

Even if the women have no intention of ever leaving their husbands, as women are

much more family oriented, at least in appearance, than most men are, they are still having affairs with other men in their minds. Jesus said, “Whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her hath committed adultery with her already in his heart” (Matthew 5:28). Therefore, the family is broken up by the woman merely entertaining the idea in her mind that it would be nice to be with another man. Did you know that a 2015 survey revealed that 46 percent of women think about other men while having sex with their partner, while only 42 percent of men have those same thoughts about other women? Given that women would probably be more ashamed to admit this than men, I am guessing that the real percentage for women is probably even higher than what this survey reported.

https://www.huffpost.com/entry/i-fantasize-about-other-men-when-im-with-my-husband_b_58c17194e4b070e55af9ec1a, accessed October 15, 2018 “I fantasize about other men when I am with my husband” by YourTango, 3/9/17).

So, more women commit adultery in their minds than men do. Why? Because at least some men avoid pornography so as not to get in trouble with their wives, while women entertain sexual fantasies on the television, while their husbands and kids feel good about what is going on. In fact, the wife may actually criticize the husbands’ viewing of sports just so she can get the whole family to watch her erotic movie of choice with her!

Why? Because, just like with Eve, Satan’s attacks are more subtle with women. Thus, they are more effective. This is why men are to be the head of women so that they can see past the deception of Satan and not allow such sin to ruin their families. However, because most men want to fulfill the lusts of the flesh, these sexual sins by their wives go unnoticed right under their very noses.

Remember that, apart from Christ, man’s heart has thoughts that are only evil continually (Genesis 6:5). Man’s conscience, at times, will convict him of his sin (John 8:9). However, man’s heart is so desperately wicked and deceitful above all things (Jeremiah 17:9) that it will do whatever it can to make its sin look like it is okay, so that man can “work all uncleanness with greediness” (Ephesians 4:19). It is hard for a man to justify the wholesomeness of watching pornography, but Hallmark movies are a different story. Therefore, Hallmark’s ratings’ soar, while pornography is still popular, but is watched in secret.

Romantic Comedies and Soap Operas

At the beginning of the Hallmark section, I mentioned how romantic comedies and soap operas are visual romance novels, just like Hallmark is. The only difference is that romantic comedies and soap operas have more nudity and other physical, sexual elements that the Hallmark movies do not have, as well as having other more immoral things go on in the movie. Since romantic comedies and soap operas are like Hallmark movies on steroids for women, it is much easier to see how damaging they can be for women.

My grandmother and my mother would never watch these types of shows because their church, a very legalistic one, taught them how damaging they can be, while I

know of no church that speaks out against watching Hallmark movies. Therefore, I have devoted much more time in this book to the Hallmark movies. Still, we should not neglect the contribution that romantic comedies and soap operas make to women following a fantasy world and committing adultery against their husbands in their hearts, if not physically, as well.

Pornography for Women in Scripture

As we have seen, men are the normal viewers of pornography but the viewing of pornography by women is growing. This is because women, through liberal feminist movements, are trying to take the man's role of ruling over society. As will be seen later in this book, when women control a society, things are far worse. Amos 4:1-5 shows that women were controlling Israel's society. Therefore, this was probably also true later in Ezekiel when Israel had gone into captivity. This is a significant point because there are scriptures in Ezekiel, which talk of women viewing pornographic images. Therefore, the increase of female viewing of pornography in America today is a sign of how we are just as bad as Israel was when they went into Babylonian captivity for their sin.

In Ezekiel 16, God likens Jerusalem to a woman. In Ezekiel 16:17, God says that Jerusalem, "Madest to thyself images of men, and didst commit whoredom with them." Now, you may argue that this is referring to creating and bowing down to idols, which makes sense in light of Ezekiel 16:20,36, which shows Jerusalem sacrificing unto idols by killing their children in the idols' hands. However, verses, which are to be taken spiritually, are also often literally true.

A literal interpretation, in this case, does seem to be accurate, especially in light of Ezekiel 23:14-16 which says, "And that she increased her whoredoms: for when she saw men pourtrayed upon the wall, the images of the Chaldeans pourtrayed with vermilion, girded with girdles upon their loins, exceeding in dyed attire upon their heads, all of them princes to look to, after the manner of the Babylonians of Chaldea, the land of their nativity: and as soon as she saw them with her eyes, she doted upon them, and sent messengers unto them into Chaldea." These verses show that it was women, looking at pornographic images of Chaldean men upon the wall, who then pursued after these men. These women got so bad that they were involved in bestiality, having sex with asses and horses (Ezekiel 23:20)!

Ezekiel 23:3, 8, 21 also refer to having their breasts pressed. Is this a reference to a push-up bra to make their breasts appear bigger and more attractive to men? Probably so, since women do this today, and, as Ecclesiastes 1:9 says, "There is no new thing under the sun."

Virtual Reality

As we have already noted, the annual profit on pornographic movies is \$15 billion, while the annual sales (a higher number than profits) of romance novels is only \$1.5 billion. The reason for the huge difference is that pictures, especially moving pictures, make it much easier to visualize a sexual act in your mind's eye than the

printed word does, because the picture has already been created for you. This is why Hallmark, romantic comedies, and soap operas are replacing romance novels for more women now-a-days.

Television and movies also make the fantasy world more real. After all, without pictures, we could only lust after real people, not made-up people. Since the more lustful the pictures are, the more likely men and women will desire to look at them, television and movies also portray fake people. Sure, they may be real people, but they do not look like any real people I know. These “stars” are worshipped as gods (Is it any wonder they are called “stars,” when stars is a term used in the Bible to represent gods?), because they have superhuman bodies, thanks to plastic surgery, extreme diets, workout regimes, and physically appealing genetics. Therefore, although a man may lust after a porn star or a woman may lust after a leading Hollywood man, none of us would ever actually be able to be with someone like that, because we are not “stars,” as they are.

Therefore, because our fantasy worlds are not realistic and we desire the things of the fantasy world, the pleasure we receive from our relationships with “ordinary” people may be greatly diminished. Perhaps this is why God told Israel that, when they went into Canaan, they were to “destroy all their pictures” (Numbers 33:52). This admonition is serious enough that, even today, the Amish will not look at movies or pictures or have their pictures taken. God said to “have no other gods before Me” (Exodus 20:3), and the Amish view these pictures as idols. (The honesty of this is also seen in the title of the popular TV show: “American Idol.”) I realize that pictures and videos can be used for the good, as I have my own YouTube channel with sermons on it. However, with regard to sexual sin, it would be good to remove completely movies, television, and pictures. Perhaps the Amish have it correct by banning all pictures, so that the temptation will not be there to use them for evil.

Of course, this is not happening in today’s world. Instead, the world is moving to more video images. First, we had written erotic stories in which you had to use your imagination to visualize what these sex encounters look like. Then, we had videos of movie “stars,” who are real people, but are extraordinary, in the sense that they look and act different than people in our lives. In our minds, the problem is that those stars are with other stars, when they should be with us. This is where virtual reality comes in.

In the early 1990s, virtual-reality glasses came out to be used in video games to make the person feel like he was in the game itself; thereby, joining reality with fantasy. As time goes on, virtual-reality technology continues to be improved. It is touted as being good for society with good applications, such as allowing people to travel to all places around the world in their mind’s eye or as a way for elderly people to see loved ones who have died.

However, as with all other technology, virtual reality can be used for good and for evil, and, since man’s imaginations are only evil continually (Genesis 6:5), you can bet that most applications will be for evil. As such, it would not surprise me if the

most common use of virtual reality will end up being for sexual pleasure, if it is not that already.

God made man in His Own image (Genesis 1:26), and man changes God's image into "an image made like to corruptible man, and to birds, and fourfooted beasts, and creeping things" (Romans 1:23). We have already seen man change his own image into things that please corruptible man, such as larger breasts and skinnier waists for women and bigger muscles and more desirable personalities for men, which are seen on the movie screen. Therefore, man is probably already changing himself digitally for sexual fantasies on the Internet, meaning that the ordinary man can transform himself on the virtual-reality screen to become an extraordinary person, or a "god" or "star" himself. No doubt this will become extremely popular, since it feeds into man's pride.

The Evolution of the Perfect, Fake Woman

The moment that men began to pursue women for sexual pleasure, rather than for a "help meet" (Genesis 2:18) in life, is the moment that women became sex objects in men's eyes. Men had then "given themselves over unto lasciviousness, to work all uncleanness with greediness" (Ephesians 4:19). In other words, men pursued women for the lust of the flesh. This meant that, in men's minds, the more physically beautiful the woman was, the more desirable she became to the man. But, remember that "the eyes of man are NEVER satisfied" (Proverbs 27:20). Therefore, no matter how beautiful a man thought a woman was, it was never enough. Men would always pursue more and more beautiful women.

For the most part, men's focus shifted with the move to the city in 1920. If you lived on a farm, you needed a woman who could help with work and was healthy enough to have kids. If you did not stay true to one woman, you could lose her and your livelihood right along with it. Therefore, men were more likely to look for practical qualities in a woman, rather than superficial qualities. However, once men moved to the city, a woman's practicality was not as important. You did not need her to be strong to help with work, nor did you need her, necessarily, to produce kids, because kids are assets on the farm and liabilities in the city.

However, men still had to same sexual desires that they always had and now had more time to seek pleasure. After all, if you are on a farm, you are just trying to survive, and you may be caught up in your work all day. However, if you work in the city, once you go home, your work is over for the day. You are also less likely to enjoy your work, since city work tends to be more repetitive in nature with a boss breathing down your neck to work faster or make fewer mistakes. Therefore, once the work day is over, the working man in the city is looking to relax and enjoy himself. He may use his deceitful heart (Jeremiah 17:9) to rationalize partaking in sin because he has "earned" the chance to do what he wants to do after working for "the man" all day long.

This attitude shift resulted in the explosion of the entertainment industry, which includes movies, bars, and prostitution. The result was that a woman, rather than

being a practical, integral part of home life, now became a part of man's entertainment life. Since man was now looking for sexual beauty in a woman, rather than practical considerations, women were now in flesh contests, trying to outdo each other in order to get men interested in them.

The reason that the majority of Americans were living in cities for the first time in 1920 is because technology had advanced to the point that goods could be made cheaper and more quickly in the city. For example, on December 1, 1913, Henry Ford started the first assembly line, on which the time to build a car was reduced from 12 hours to 2 ½ hours (<https://www.history.com/this-day-in-history/fords-assembly-line-starts-rolling>, accessed March 5, 2019). Soon, most everything was produced on an assembly line. This called for more workers, which meant that more money was available in the city. Soon, city workers had money in their pocket and time on their hands after work.

Therefore, the entertainment industry blossomed. What do single men with money want? They want women. Therefore, as mentioned previously, men and women started going to bars, and women were in competition with each other for men's affections. In addition, technology brought about another formidable competitor for men's affections, and that was the fake woman.

The fake woman was an image of a woman on the silver screen of the movie theatre or the woman of the girlie magazine. "In the early 1920s, roughly 50 million Americans—half the population at that time—attended the movies every week." Clara Bow was in her first movie in 1921. In 1927, she was known as "The It Girl," because she starred in a movie called "It," and she had "It", i.e., the quality that men found attractive. This made her the leading sex symbol of the 1920s. (https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Clara_Bow, accessed March 5, 2019).

By the late 1800s, technology had also caused magazine production and readership to explode. This led to the popularity of girlie magazines. For example, the 1932 Esquire men's magazine introduced "its Vargas girls." During World War II, "9 million copies of the magazine-without adverts and free of charge was sent to American troops stationed overseas and in domestic bases." (https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Pin-up_model accessed August 29, 2018).

What this shows is that, by the early 1930s, men could get sexually excited about women in movies and in magazines. Granted, these were women who really existed in real life (Although Betty Boop was a cartoon sex symbol beginning in 1930, she was probably based upon the real life Helen Kane and Clara Bow. (https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Betty_Boop, accessed March 5, 2019).), but men were getting sexually excited over images of them, which means that, to the average man, they were "fake" women, rather than real women.

Granted, a real woman can provide much more sexual pleasure than a fake woman can. However, fake women have several advantages over real women:

1) Fake women are cheap. Buying a magazine or a movie ticket is much cheaper

than buying a woman a drink, dinner, and whatever else she requires in order for her to be nice to you.

2) Fake women are what you want them to be. As a kid, you may have created an imaginary friend, because other kids were mean to you or did not like you. So, you pretended you had a friend, and that friend was always nice to you, never complained, and did what you wanted him to do. That is what a fake woman is to a man. You can make her be to you what you want her to be, while a real woman probably has to be wined, dined, pampered, and lied to, and then you MAY get the reaction from her that you desire.

3) Fake women are attractive. If you go to a bar to find a woman, you may not find any of them attractive. However, if you know that an attractive woman will be on the silver screen, you know you will become sexually excited watching her. (This is not unlike why women went to see the first “Lethal Weapon” movie, because they thought Mel Gibson was cute, and they got to see his butt. Would they have seen a cute butt otherwise that night? Probably not.)

4) A fake woman is a guaranteed winner. If you go to a bar, you may or may not “get lucky” that night, but you always get lucky with a fake woman, because she is an attractive woman in front of your face who pays attention to you (At least, you make your mind believe that she is paying attention to you.).

5) A fake woman involves no commitment. You can use her for your sexual pleasure and then discard her for the next fake woman of your choosing.

6) A fake woman can be accessed when you want. You do not have to wait until a date, when you may be too tired or just not interested. Just like a man may go to a bar for a drink on Friday night to celebrate the weekend, a man may also go to the movie theatre or buy a girlie magazine to celebrate the weekend and BOOM! Instant woman!

I have heard women say, “Who needs men, when we have chocolate.” Well, men may think, “Who needs women, when we have movies and magazines.” As such, women started to conform to the image of these fake women so that men would start paying attention to them again (I realize this is not the only reason.).

Now, I realize that rich women had been doing this for a long time. In the 1800s, it was popular for rich women to use makeup to create the porcelain-doll look. However, what changed in the city in the 1920s was that even the common woman started competing for men’s affections by trying to look like the fake women that men were seeing in movies and magazines.

“Before the 20th century, ‘nice girls’ did not wear makeup, which was commonly called ‘paint....’ Even into the 1910s, what we would call makeup today was associated with prostitutes, dancing girls and movie stars. It was the silver screen that made young women flock to the beauty section of their local department stores....In [women’s] eyes, makeup was intended to draw attention to their face, to

illicit reactions, to look like a movie star.” For example, “for the eyes, the look many aspired to was the dramatic appearance of Clara Bow’s dark, smudged kohl rims.” The sudden appeal of makeup to the average woman is seen in the fact that “the number of products went from a few dozen [in 1920] to 450 by 1924. By the end of the twenties, there were 1300 brands and shades of face powder, 350 rouges, and a hundred red lipsticks.” “By the end of the decade,...the use of makeup was now not only accepted but also welcomed as a form of self-expression and femininity.” (*1920s Makeup Starts the Cosmetics Industry- History*, <https://vintagedancer.com/1920s/makeup-starts-the-cosmetics-industry/>, accessed March 5, 2019). In May 2017, 2/3 of all women age 18 and over use makeup at least several times per week (<https://www.statista.com/statistics/713178/makeup-use-frequency-by-age/>, accessed March 5, 2019), and it all started with the makeup that movie stars started wearing 100 years ago.

Marilyn Monroe was the leading sex symbol of the 1950s, if not for the time since then, as well. She was known as a “blonde bombshell.” Since men now went after blondes, due to Marilyn Monroe, women started dying their hair blonde. This is seen by the fact that only 5 percent of white women in the United States are naturally blonde. Yet, 48% of female CEOs of S&P 500 companies are blonde, while only 2.2% of male CEOs are blonde. (https://www.huffingtonpost.com/entry/blonde-leaders-sexism_us_57bdd4f5e4b00c67eca12176 “Why an Outsized Number of Blondes are leading the country” *Huffingtonpost*, 8/24/16, accessed October 4, 2018). This is why blondes are said to have more fun.

Marilyn Monroe also had big breasts. Therefore, big breasts were now popular. As mentioned previously, the Golden Age of Porn was 1969-1984. After 1984, VCRs brought pornographic movies into homes, and the sex acts in those movies became more extreme, as did the proportion of breasts among the women in those movies. Therefore, “real” women started getting breast implants.

The first silicone breast implants were done in the same year that Marilyn Monroe died—1962 (http://www.twoop.com/medicine/archives/2005/10/breast_implants.html, accessed March 6, 2019). “From 1962 to 1970, only about 50,000 women received gel implants in the United States. Subsequently, the number of women rose annually. In 1982, about 100,000 women received breast implants. From 1983 to 1991, this number remained constant at 120,000 to 130,000 per year.” (<https://www.pulsus.com/scholarly-articles/the-evolution-of-breast-implants.pdf>, “The Evolution of Breast Implants” by Walter Peters PhD MD FRCSC, *Can J Plast Surg Vol 10 No 5 November/December 2002*, pages 223-236, accessed March 6, 2019). Today, breast augmentation is the most popular cosmetic surgery in the United States with about 300,000 performed each year. It is estimated that about 4% of American women have breast implants. (This does not include those who get them due to breast cancer.) (<https://fivethirtyeight.com/features/dear-mona-what-percentage-of-women-have-breast-implants/>, accessed March 6, 2019, by Mona Chalabi on 10/30/2014). This, in spite of the fact that a May 2004 study concluded that “women who undergo breast augmentation surgery are three times as likely to commit suicide in the first years after their surgery than women who have not undergone breast augmentation surgery”. (http://www.twoop.com/medicine/archives/2005/10/breast_implants.html, accessed March 6, 2019). (Good looks do not buy happiness.)

Hollywood’s Brainwashing

Now, you may say, “Clara Bow had small breasts, and men loved her in the 1920s. Marilyn Monroe had big breasts, and men loved her in the 1950s. So, did men’s tastes change?” Not really. One study found that “Rich men love women with small breasts, the poor love those with big” breasts (<https://punchng.com/poor-men-love-big-breasts-the-rich-prefer-them-smaller-study/>, accessed March 6, 2019, “Poor men love big breasts, the rich prefer them smaller – Study”, August 16, 2018). (The article states that poor men like big breasts because they are hungry, while rich men like small breasts because they are overfilled.)

To understand what is going on with the small and big breasts, let’s look at men’s ties. Skinny ties were popular in the 1950s, extremely wide ties were popular in the 1960s, ties got skinner in the 1990s and even skinnier in the 2000s, and the 2010s has the skinny tie still being popular, but wider ties are making a comeback. (<https://fillingsclothing.com/2018/03/ties-through-time/>, accessed March 6, 2019, “Ties Through Time”, March 15, 2018). So, do men prefer wide or skinny ties? Answer: They don’t care! However, if the tie stays the same width all the time, tie sales go down, because men keep wearing the same ties for 40 years. Therefore, the industry changes the width of ties back and forth and markets their new width to convince men that they need to buy the new ties. Once many of the old ties have been replaced, the industry changes the width again so that you have to get rid of your new ties for even newer ties.

Similarly, when it comes to small vs. large breasts, it is not that men’s tastes change. Rather, it is that Hollywood is in the moneymaking business. Billions of dollars are made by the movie industry from sex and hot women. (To a fallen world, sex is everything. To a godly man in marriage, sex is the least important thing. Based on this criterium alone, there are not many godly men left.) In order to make money, the women on the silver screen must stand out as being different. Clara Bow was different in the 1920s because she wore makeup, while average women did not wear makeup. So, average women started wearing makeup to look like her. Now, there was no need for men to pay to see Clara Bow on the movie screen, when they could see a bunch of women, who look just like Clara, walking down the street. Marilyn Monroe then became the sex symbol of the 1950s because she had blonde hair and big breasts, both of which were rarities back then. So, women started dying their hair blonde and undergoing breast augmentation surgery. Again, Hollywood was in danger of losing their money.

So, then Hollywood started casting ultra-skinny women. Granted, Hollywood has always used skinny women, but they have gotten skinnier as time has gone on. Why? Because Americans have gotten fatter as time has gone on. It used to be that being skinny was a sign that you were poor, because you could not afford enough food to be fat. Now, most Americans have sedentary lifestyles and enough money to buy whatever food they want. Therefore, they have become fatter over time. Remember that Hollywood’s billions of dollars are based upon showing women to men who are not average looking. Therefore, Hollywood’s women have become skinner with some of them having bones showing through their skin. Now, the average women, who 100 years ago would have been thrilled to have whatever they wanted to eat, refuse to eat the food they want, even though they can afford it, and

spend billions of dollars per year, not on good food, but on diets so that they can look just like poor women looked 100 years ago!

This shows that, when real women match the look of fake women, the movie industry has to up its game. This competition is a lot like the computer industry. Hackers figure out how to get into computer systems and steal information, and virus writers figure out how to profit from infecting your computer. Then, the computer industry sells anti-virus software and writes programs to keep hackers from getting in, and it is an ongoing battle between the computer industry and rogue people, as they compete for money in the computer industry.

Similarly, Hollywood creates fake women, who look unusual compared to the average woman, so that they get men's attention—not that men like the fake women better, but because they are different from real women. (This also caters to the lust of the flesh. Men have problems with women because they think differently than men do. Since most men walk by sight, not by faith, men become attracted to the fake women in movies, not because they like the look, but because the women look different from real women. Thus, the men assume that the fake women act differently than the real women who cause them problems, causing the men to be attracted to the fake women, because they are more conformed into their image of what a woman should be than real women are.) Then technology is created so that real women can turn into these fake women. Then, Hollywood has to come up with a new look that real women cannot duplicate. First, they did it with makeup, then they did it with blonde hair. Next came breast implants, followed by ultra-skinny women, tattoos, and women who look like men and vice-versa.

This is all part of Hollywood's game to create a fake woman that real women cannot look like. Then, they brainwash men with hundreds of millions of dollars in advertising into thinking that the fake woman is more attractive than the real woman. Then, real women demand products and technology so that they can look like the fake women who men like. Once enough real women look like the ideal fake woman, Hollywood changes the ideal fake woman, gets men to like the new look, and real women seek to become like the new ideal fake woman, in a never ending cycle, which keeps the economy going due to men spending money on fake women and real women spending money to look like the fake women.

All of this occurs because man is following sexual pleasure, rather than marrying a godly woman and being with her for life. After all, who cares what the fake or average woman looks like when you already have everything you need in this life with the woman to whom you are married? But, if all you want is to feel good with sexual pleasure, you are following feelings, rather than what is real. Since feelings change all the time, the ideal woman changes all the time, and you are constantly pursuing something that does not exist, i.e., the perfect woman.

The Fallen Angels

Revelation 12:3-4 tells us that 1/3 of the angels rebelled with Satan. These are

“the angels which kept not their first estate” (Jude 6). Due to their unbelief, these angels fell, and God had to set boundaries on them. However, they rebelled against those boundaries also, by having sex with women and creating giants (Genesis 6:2,4). This is what is meant by the phrase: “Left their own habitation” (Jude 6). We also see confirmation of this in II Peter. “God spared not the angels that sinned, but cast them down to hell, and delivered them into chains of darkness” (II Peter 2:4), and this is stated in the context of God saving Noah from the flood (II Peter 2:5). Therefore, we can conclude that the angels leaving their first estate refers to devils leaving the spiritual realm and entering the physical realm so that they could have sex with women, creating “giants in the earth,... men of renown” (Genesis 6:1-4). Because of this God has reserved them “under darkness unto the judgment of the great day” (v. 6). From Revelation 9:13-16, we can conclude that there were 200 million of these fallen angels!

Why is this important? Because angels are made higher than man (Psalm 8:4-5), and yet sex with women is so appealing to them, that 200 million of them deliberately disobeyed God to enjoy sex with a creature that is lower than they are!

This leads us to our next topic...

Beastiality

With virtual reality, man can make the world look however he wants it to look like. Therefore, virtual reality is sure to bring impossible sizes to body parts and even change certain parts and characteristics to those of “birds, and fourfooted beasts, and creeping things,” as Romans 1:23 says. These changes may sound sick to you, but that is only because your mind says that they are sick. The Bible says, “Neither shalt thou lie with any beast to defile thyself therewith: neither shall any woman stand before a beast to lie down thereto: it is confusion” (Leviticus 18:23), and it pronounces death for anyone who does so (Leviticus 20:15-16). God would not have mentioned it, if man would not ever do it. Ezekiel 23 even describes Israel multiplying her whoredoms by doting upon the paramours of the Babylonians, “whose flesh is as the flesh of asses, and whose issue is like the issue of horses” (Ezekiel 23:19-20), which shows that this at least happened spiritually, if not physically, as well.

What, then, is to stop those in virtual-reality glasses from obtaining sexual pleasure from beastiality? Then, once that takes hold, the conscience’s objection to such a practice will be removed, and it will take hold as an accepted practice in the real world! This is not unthinkable, because God says it has happened before. Also, why would beastiality be any worse than sodomy or an affair with a member of the opposite sex? All of these are abominations and punishable by death in the eyes of God, yet sex outside of marriage and sodomy acts happen all the time today, when they were abhorred practices in the past. As “evil men and seducers...wax worse and worse” (II Timothy 3:13), the only thing that will stop beastiality from become a common practice will be the removal of Satan as the god of this world (II Corinthians 4:4) at Jesus’ second coming (Revelation 20:2-3).

Death for sex outside of marriage: “And the man that committeth adultery with another man’s wife, even he that committeth adultery with his neighbour’s wife, the adulterer and the adulteress shall surely be put to death” (Leviticus 20:10).

Death for sodomy: “If a man also lie with mankind, as he lieth with a woman, both of them have committed an abomination: they shall surely be put to death; their blood shall be upon them” (Leviticus 20:12).

Death for sex with a beast: “And if a man lie with a beast, he shall surely be put to death: and ye shall slay the beast. And if a woman approach unto any beast, and lie down thereto, thou shalt kill the woman, and the beast: they shall surely be put to death; their blood shall be upon them” (Leviticus 20:15-16).

Note how quickly we moved from Hallmark movies to bestiality. This is because the downward spiral of sin can move just as quickly, and it all starts with the fantasy world. This is precisely why Jesus said not to even look at a woman with lust in your heart. While in the oval office, President Jimmy Carter admitted that lusting after a woman in his heart was a sin, and the world laughed at how silly he was. Well, who is laughing now? We see the progression of sexual sin from lusting in the heart to all unrighteousness in Romans 1:24-28. The first thing man does when he does not recognize God is that he starts dishonouring “their own bodies between themselves” (Romans 1:24). Since sexual sin is the only sin that can be committed against your own body (I Corinthians 6:18), this must refer to people having sex with members of the opposite sex that are not their spouse. The next step in the downward spiral of sin is sodomy, as “women...change the natural use...: and likewise also the men, leaving the natural use of the woman, burned in their lust one toward another; men with men working that which is unseemly” (Romans 1:26-27). Then, the final step is to do “all unrighteousness, fornication,” etc. (Romans 1:29). If they do ALL fornication, then it must also include bestiality.

Avatars

When I typed “meaning of avatar” into the Google search engine, two definitions came up: 1. In Hinduism, “a manifestation of a deity or released soul in bodily form on earth; an incarnate divine teacher.” “2. An icon or figure representing a particular person in video games, Internet forums, etc.” (Accessed March 26, 2019). This tells us that Hinduism came up with the word to mean “a god in bodily form,” and modern technology has adopted the term to apply to a figure representing a person on the Internet. In other words, you can be like god yourself in Internetland by creating a character of yourself there. The reason is because you can make yourself to be whoever you want to be. You can accentuate your best features and diminish your worst features. Then, you can go about in a sexual fantasy land, doing all kinds of perverse things, and you appear to get away with it. Thus, man says “I will be like God” by fulfilling the lusts of his own flesh, but God says that such behavior is not godlike. Rather, it is the behavior of “brute beasts” (Jude 10). In other words, men, in their effort to be like God, degenerate into beasts, who are “lovers of pleasures, more than lovers of God” (II Timothy 3:4).

In other words, they are “incontinent” (II Timothy 3:3), meaning that they are so consumed by their own lusts that they are unable to restrain their sexual appetites.

Note how much man cheapens sex. God says that you can only have sexual pleasure if you vow to take care of and spend the rest of your life with the other person. Man says that you can create a fictitious character of yourself and have sex with another fictitious character online with no strings attached. (In actuality, you are sinning against your own body (I Corinthians 6:18), but man ignores this truth in order to satisfy the lusts of his own flesh.)

The Antichrist

In 2019 in the United States, most people, I think, are not involved in sodomy. However, most people think it is okay, and the rationale is because “what you do in the privacy of your own bedroom is okay.” In other words, the attitude of today’s conscience is that there are no objective, moral standards. Rather, I am my own god, you are your own god, and, as long as I do not interfere with you and you do not interfere with me, we can do whatever we want to do. So, sex between two men is okay, as long as both want to do it, but child rape is not okay, because the child is not old enough to make the decision. (Give it time, and child rape will also be sanctioned. After all, child killings are already sanctioned as “abortions of unwanted tissue.”)

Such a mentality, blended with virtual reality, means that people can do whatever they want to, and no one can stop them. As long as it takes place in “virtual reality,” no harm, supposedly, is done in raping, killing, pilfering, etc. We already see incredibly violent video games that many children play. What is to stop people, then, from creating all kinds of heinous, sexual fantasies and fulfilling them in virtual reality?

The Bible says that “EVERY way of a man is right in his own eyes” (Proverbs 21:2). We are kept from doing everything we want to do because of our conscience, our families, and laws. However, with the death of right and wrong, the conscience is free to do the lusts of the sin nature. With virtual reality, there are no families and laws to answer to; therefore, everyone can do what he wants to do. The book of Judges ends with this statement: “In those days there was no king in Israel: every man did that which was right in his own eyes” (Judges 21:25). Similarly today, with no king on the Internet, every man does that which is right in his own eyes.

In Genesis 6:11-13, God said that He would destroy the earth, because the earth “was corrupt,” and “filled with violence.” The one sin that is mentioned that resulted in this was women having sex with devils to create superhumans (see Genesis 6:2-4).

In Genesis 19:13, God says He will destroy Sodom and Gomorrah. The one sin that is mentioned in this was that ALL the men of Sodom wanted to have sex with the two men, who were in Lot’s house (Genesis 19:4-5).

In Luke 17, Jesus says, “As it was in the days of Noe, so shall it be also in the days of the Son of man” (Luke 17:26). “Likewise also as it was in the days of Lot...; Even thus shall it be in the day when the Son of man is revealed” (Luke 17:28,30).

Since sexual sin caused the destruction of the world in Noah’s day and the destruction of Sodom in Lot’s day and the world will be like those times at Jesus’ second coming, we can safely conclude that Jesus’ second coming will be during man’s height of sexual sin.

Halfway through the tribulation period, which is about 3 ½ years before Jesus’ second coming, God tells us that a beast will “rise up out of the sea, having seven heads and ten horns, and upon his horns ten crowns, and upon his heads the name of blasphemy. And the beast which I saw was like unto a leopard, and his feet were as the feet of a bear, and his mouth as the mouth of a lion: and the dragon gave him his power, and his seat, and great authority” (Revelation 13:1-2). The dragon is Satan (Revelation 12:9), and the beast is the Antichrist. Once he rises out of the sea, the beast will kill God’s two witnesses (Revelation 11:7), and take over in the temple, declaring himself to be God (II Thessalonians 2:4).

Once he does this, all the world will wonder after the beast, “and they worshipped the beast, saying, Who is like unto the beast? who is able to make war with him?” (Revelation 13:3-4). Now, if I saw a seven-headed, ten-horned beast with names of blasphemy on his heads and he looked like a leopard with bear’s feet and a lion’s mouth, I would not bow down and worship him. I would be scared of such a grotesque thing and would run as far away as I could from him. Not so with the world. They wonder after him and worship him. Why? Because, through an evil conscience and virtual reality, this beast is beautiful to them. (This should not shock us when we see the grotesque beasts that people flock to see in movies today.) It will probably be the most popular and beautiful creature with which people will have sex in their virtual worlds. Therefore, when they see him, they wonder after him, wondering how such a fictional creature could be reality. The answer will probably come that it is the power of the mind to create anything man wants to create. This is probably why the world will gladly put the beast’s mark on their foreheads, as the mark will cover their minds, as a testament to their “godliness” in being able to create whatever they want to create (Revelation 13:16-17).

Also, note II Peter 2 and Jude. Both chapters refer to people, who do the most vile, heinous things imaginable. They say that these people go “after strange flesh,” and are “filthy DREAMERS” (sounds like bestiality in virtual reality to me) (Jude 7-8). Jude 15 says that they are ungodly with “their ungodly deeds which they have ungodly committed.” Note that II Peter 2:12 calls them “natural brute BEASTS,” and Jude 10 calls them “brute BEASTS.” In other words, they worship the ultimate beast, i.e., the Antichrist, and they have sex with beasts; therefore, they ARE beasts, spiritually speaking. (This also makes sense in light of the fact that sex is often tied to religion as justification for participating in the sex. In other words, religion changes sexual sin into something that is viewed as good. (“Woe unto

them that call evil good, and good evil; that put darkness for light, and light for darkness” (Isaiah 5:20).)

In light of all of this scriptural evidence, it seems probable that the rampant sin of the world that will destroy it and cause the Lord Jesus Christ to come back will be rampant sex between people and animals!

The Release of Sex

“All is fair in love and war.” God destroyed the world at the flood, He divided the world into nations at the Tower of Babel. God told Abram that all families of the earth would be blessed in him (Genesis 12:3). God saves people from every nation that was in existence 4,000 years ago! The way He does this is through nationalism. A national pride is created. Now, instead of warring against God, e.g., Tower of Babel, man wars against man. By warring against man, some people from every nation see how evil man is; thereby, recognizing their sin, and believing the gospel. Thus, war gets man’s blood lust out so that we see how bad we are and are saved.

Similarly, God created sex between one man and one woman for life. I Corinthians 7 says it is better to be single so you can concentrate on doing the things of God. When you are married, you end up doing the things of the flesh in order to please your spouse. However, “it is better to marry than to burn” (I Corinthians 7:9). What this means is that, although it would be better to remain a virgin and spend your entire life devoted to the things of God, most Christians, without a sexual outlet, would end up burning in sexual lust, such that they would concentrate on sex instead of the things of God. Therefore, it is better to get married. Then, you fulfill the lusts of the flesh through sex in a defined setting approved by God (just like what happens in war) so that you can then concentrate on the things of God for at least some of the time.

Also, as all married people should attest, in marriage, you learn very quickly that you are not God, and so this also serves as a way for you to believe the gospel and come unto the knowledge of the truth. As you see, the release of sex is a lot like the release of war. When someone sees the sexual immorality of the world, it is easier to see man’s sin and believe the gospel (Sin becomes exceeding sinful (Romans 7:13).), just like it is easier to see man is not god when you see man warring against each other. Also, the release of sex, in God’s pre-allowed way of marriage, keeps a Christian from seeking the flesh and from focusing on the things of God instead.

Stormy Daniels and Donald Trump

In her 2018 interview with 60 Minutes Australia, Stormy Daniels (a porn star) stated that, many years ago, she was in a house with Donald Trump. After about 2 hours of talking, she went to the bathroom. When she got out, Trump was standing there in his underwear. Stormy had sex with him. In the days after this, they talked from time to time, because Trump said he wanted to get her on his

television show, but then she broke it off with him when that did not happen.
(<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=qzCXdkFN3mQ> accessed November 1, 2018).

My point in telling this story is to demonstrate the casualness of sex today. God says that sex = marriage. In God's eyes, Donald Trump and Stormy Daniels were married on that day. However, neither one of them saw it that way. In fact, neither one of them would even go out on a date with each other after that, and they both knew that going in. In other words, they see sex as pleasure with no consequences to the soul. Trump probably just wanted to have sex with her for pleasure, while Stormy agreed to it in order to get something out of it (being on a television show). The thought that sex makes two people one never occurred to them because they were so consumed by their own lusts (pleasure for Trump; fame for Stormy) that they ignored what God has to say about it.

“Having eyes full of adultery, and that cannot cease from sin; beguiling unstable souls: an heart they have exercised with covetous practices; cursed children” (II Peter 2:14).

CHAPTER 7

Sex Maniacs

The Sexual Appetite

In order to understand why sex has become so casual, we need to talk about how the sexual appetite works. Jesus said, in Matthew 19:12, that some eunuchs are born that way, some are made that way by men, and some make themselves that way for the kingdom of heaven's sake. This tells us that, regardless of the sexual drive you are born with, you can alter it yourself, and you can allow others to alter it for you.

Proverbs 22:6 says, "Train up a child in the way he should go: and when he is old, he will not depart from it," which means that the way that your sex drive is USUALLY altered is by what you learn as a child. With today's society being so sex-crazed, most kids are made into sexual perverts by society, even if they were born eunuchs. This means that, in today's society, most everyone needs to get married in order to maximize the in-Christ life working in them. Otherwise, they will burn with sexual lust and live in sin, instead of walking in the Spirit.

Sex and Food

To illustrate how the United States society's attitude toward sex has changed over the last 100 years, we will look at changes in food attitude, as I believe the two are closely correlated.

100 years ago on a farm, people ate to live; they did not live to eat. What I mean by this is that, on a farm, you ate to survive. You grew crops and raised animals. You bartered some of these things with neighbors in order to have more of a variety of food, and then you bought basic supplies, such as flour and sugar, at a general store. That is how you came up with enough food to eat. Today, most people are far removed from the food process. They work jobs that have nothing to do with food. Therefore, instead of getting paid in food, they get paid in money, and money can be used to buy whatever food they want. Many people eat at restaurants on a daily basis, depending on what food they are "in the mood for." They grow tired easily of the food that they eat, and switch to something else. They often ask, "Do I want Italian, Mexican, American, or Chinese food tonight?" Such a question was completely foreign to the farmer 100 years ago. It did not matter what he wanted to eat; it only mattered what food he had. He did not ask after a hard day's work, "What food am I in the mood to eat?" Rather, he asked, "What food do I have in the house?" In other words, on a farm, food choices are severely limited, while, in a city, food choices are so great that they can be overwhelming. While a farm couple 100 years ago argued over how they were going to get enough food on the table to feed the family, a city couple today argues over what type of food will satisfy their taste buds tonight. A farmer would be thrilled to have enough green beans to eat them every night for one month, while a city dweller would complain over having to eat green beans every night for one month.

This difference in attitude is seen in Israel as they came out of Egypt. They said, "Would to God we had died by the hand of the Lord in the land of Egypt, when we sat by the flesh pots, and when we did eat bread to the full; for ye have brought us

forth into this wilderness, to kill this whole assembly with hunger” (Exodus 16:3). God was not going to kill Israel with hunger. He gave them enough manna to survive on, but that was not good enough for them. For Israel said, “Who shall give us flesh to eat? We remember the fish, which we did eat in Egypt freely; the cucumbers, and the melons, and the leeks, and the onions, and the garlick: But now our soul is dried away: there is nothing at all, beside this manna, before our eyes” (Numbers 11:4-6).

First, Israel did not trust God to keep them from dying from hunger. So, God had to feed them every day with manna. Then, Israel’s flesh wanted more, such that they complained about the food God gave them, as they wanted a greater variety of food to eat. God was so disgusted with Israel lusting after other food that “the anger of the Lord was kindled greatly” (Numbers 11:10). The Lord then gave them quail to eat, but He said: “Ye shall not eat one day, nor two days, nor five days, neither ten days, nor twenty days; But even a whole month, until it come out at your nostrils, and it be loathsome unto you: because that ye have despised the Lord which is among you, and have wept before him, saying, Why came we forth out of Egypt?” (Numbers 11:19-20). “And while the flesh was yet between their teeth, ere it was chewed, the wrath of the Lord was kindled against the people, and the Lord smote the people with a very great plague” (Numbers 11:33), such that He “slew the fattest of them, and smote down the chosen men of Israel” (Psalm 78:31), meaning that God destroyed the worst lusters among them.

Now, you may say, “What is the big deal? So, they got tired of manna and wanted to eat meat. Why would God kill them for that?” The reason is because they were not trusting in the Lord. In the wilderness, God intentionally gave them the same simple food over and over so that they would learn to live by God’s Word, not by whatever food lust they had at a particular time. (“And he humbled thee, and suffered thee to hunger, and fed thee with manna, which thou knewest not, neither did thy fathers know; that he might make thee know that man doth not live by bread only, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of the Lord doth man live.” (Deuteronomy 8:3).) In other words, the point was not that they could not eat meat. The point was that they needed to learn to seek after the things of God, rather than the things of this world. They should be satisfied with God’s provision.

I bring this up because a similar thing has happened in the United States over the last 100 years. The United States’ population 100 years ago was satisfied with the same, simple foods over and over again. About 100 years ago, my grandfather ate flour gravy and biscuits every night. Sunday nights was when they splurged by using milk in the gravy instead of water. If you fed your child like that today, you would probably be accused of child abuse and have your child taken away from you! Today, kids yell, scream, and complain until they get exactly what they want to eat. Today, a husband and wife could argue for 30 minutes over where to eat, because they complain about certain things they do not like about every restaurant.

My point is that society’s attitude over food has gone from contentment to

complaints, even though there is much more variety today than there was 100 years ago.

I see a correlation between food appetites and sex appetites. The reason God gave manna to Israel every, single day is because He wanted them to be content with what they had. Once you start complaining and get other foods, it is very easy to follow the lusts of the flesh in other areas, and not learn the lesson that Paul did: “I have learned, in whatsoever state I am, therewith to be content” (Philippians 4:11). When you are not content, you end up following after the things of this world, and you are never satisfied. Proverbs 27:20 “Hell and destruction are never full; so the eyes of man are never satisfied.”

This helps us to understand why God only wants you to have sexual relations with one member of the opposite sex for your entire lifetime. Once you start engaging in any type of sexual sin, even if it just in your mind, then you are no longer content with your spouse, and the downward spiral of sexual sin has begun. This is why we have seen sexual appetites in America change over the last 100 years just like food appetites have changed. Whether on television, the internet, movies, or in real life, men are constantly bombarded with half-naked women made up to look like prostitutes, leading men to follow their sexual lusts, whatever they may be, and not trust in God’s provision of one woman for life. Since God was wroth with Israel and smote them with a very great plague just because they lusted after meat instead of manna because they did not trust in God’s provision, how much more do you think God is wroth with America for lusting after members of the opposite sex instead of being satisfied with the one woman God has given them?! This is why God says, “Rejoice with the wife of thy youth. Let her be as the loving hind and pleasant roe; let her breasts satisfy thee at all times; and be thou ravished always with her love” (Proverbs 5:18-19).

By the way, we should note that God requires sexual restraint for all people, even those who rejoice with the wife of their youth. Practically speaking, even young, married people do not have sex whenever they want to. Many times, the cares of this world get in the way. Maybe you have to work a really long day or you go through a lot during the day so that you do not feel like having sex. Maybe there is an illness or injury that keeps you from having sex. Then, there are pregnancies which also stop sex from taking place. God also designed men and women differently so that they are “in the mood” for sex based upon different things that take place. All of this is meant to keep sexual lust from guiding a person.

Appetites of the Flesh

Isn’t it interesting how God made the body? We have a body that can adapt to pretty much anything. When the lusts of the flesh are pursued, we enjoy “the pleasures of sin for a season” (Hebrews 11:25). Then, our bodies get used to that level of lust, and we have to pursue an even greater level of lust to try to get pleasure. It then gets to the point where your flesh is more dissatisfied with the lust of the flesh you are fulfilling than it was when you were not fulfilling the lust of the flesh at all.

This is why Paul says that younger widows will “wax wanton against Christ” (I Timothy 5:11). They may have been fine without sex if they remained virgins. However, after experiencing the pleasure of sex, they must get re-married to keep from pursuing the lusts of the flesh. I have also heard of drug addicts who want to get off of drugs, but they do not want their families to know they are on drugs. Therefore, they take drugs when they are going to be around them. Otherwise, they cannot even behave normally.

This flesh mechanism is part of God fearfully and wonderfully making us (Psalm 139:14) so that we realize that, when it comes to pursuing the lusts of the flesh, “vanity of vanities; all is vanity” (Ecclesiastes 1:2). God wants our pursuit of the lusts of the flesh to END in recognizing our “exceeding sinful” condition (Romans 7:13), such that we will have the reaction of the Lost Son (Luke 15:17-21) and pursue the gospel and the in-Christ life, as opposed to our own lusts. Sadly, today, we see America doing just the opposite.

Sexual Appetite Growing in America

Matthew 19:12 “For there are some eunuchs, which were so born from their mother’s womb: and there are some eunuchs, which were made eunuchs of men: and there be eunuchs, which have made themselves eunuchs for the kingdom of heaven’s sake. He that is able to receive it, let him receive it.”

There are two, main things to learn here: 1) People are born with differing sexual appetites (Again, God probably did it this way so that a husband and wife will learn not to be led by their sexual desires), and 2) Sexual appetites can be altered by men and by yourself.

When it comes to altering the sexual appetite yourself, we should note that, when referring to widows, Paul says that widows under 60 years old should not be taken care of by the church (I Timothy 5:9). The reason is because, “when they have begun to wax wanton against Christ, they will marry” (I Timothy 5:11). Note that it does not say, “IF they have begun to wax wanton against Christ,” but “WHEN.” Basically, what this means is that: 1) Sexual appetite will naturally will have gone away by age 60, such that you will not desire to have sex after that age, and 2) Those, who get married, are used to having sex such that, when their spouses die, they need to get re-married or else they will follow other lusts of the flesh, such as learning to be idle, being tattlers, and being busy bodies (I Timothy 5:13).

It makes logical sense that your sexual appetite would go away by age 60, since you are not able to bear children any more. However, many men over 60 take Viagra and still have a very active sex life. The reason is because you can alter your sexual appetite and others can alter your sexual appetite. Instead of saying, “Well, I can’t have kids any more. So, there is no need to have sex,” most older men are saying, “Sex is a lot of fun. I want to have sex as much as I can.” They are even willing to risk health problems and even death by taking drugs so that they can continue an active sex life! Such an idea was foreign to seniors in the United

States just 30 years ago.

However, because sexual pleasure has been separated from family responsibility, our society inundates everyone with sexual images. The result is that society's sexual appetite, as a whole, has increased. Therefore, you hear of people as young as 7 and as old as 90 having sex because they follow their lusts, rather than seeking the things of God.

A virgin, on the other hand, can avoid a lot of this. Granted, he is in a society that seeks after sex, and he has natural, sexual desire within him. However, if that desire is not strong enough to make him burn, such that he will commit sexual sin if he does not get married, he is better off never getting married. That way, he does not have an increased sexual appetite by getting married, and he can concentrate on serving the Lord, rather than also having to please his wife. "I say therefore to the unmarried and widows, It is good for them if they abide even as I. But if they cannot contain, let them marry: for it is better to marry than to burn" (I Corinthians 7:8-9).

A big problem in today's society is that love has been confused with sex. Women often think that, by having sex with a man, the man will love her. Another problem is that people go by their feelings, thinking that the desire to have sex with someone means that they love each other. Churchianity has only helped to confuse people on this matter, because big churches say they spread Christ's love by making people feel good. It is no wonder since Hollywood portrays young passion as love. However, true love is seen in Jesus' giving his life for his friends. ("Greater love hath no man than this, that a man lay down his life for his friends" (John 15:13).) Love is the unconditional giving of yourself to another. This may or may not involve good feelings. So, by glorifying sex, man ends up rejecting God's love, because man thinks love is feeling good, rather than Christ dying for us (Romans 5:8). Therefore, a wrong view of sex can have eternal consequences!

The Sexual Appetite Explained Chemically

When we discussed romance novels, I quoted a psychologist, who said that "women experience a euphoric high when reading romance novels, and men experience the same addicting chemical release when watching porn." (*Why Romance Novels Turn Women On* by Melanie Wilcox, accessed October 12, 2018, <https://acculturated.com/why-romance-novels-turn-women-on/>). According to that psychologist, men watch pornography and women read romance novels due to an "addicting chemical release" that they experience in those activities.

I do not want to spend a great deal of space on this "addicting chemical release" in sex, because God's Word is always accurate, while "scientific" knowledge can be "science falsely so called" (I Timothy 6:20). It is interesting how we have chemical/scientific explanations for things, and God has spiritual explanations. This shows that we are "fearfully and wonderfully made." In other words, there are scientific explanations for things, but that is only because God made our bodies as patterns of the heavenly so that we can understand the spiritual by looking at the

natural. This is what is meant by Romans 1:19-20. “Because that which may be known of God is manifest in them; for God hath shewed it unto them. For the invisible things of him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even his eternal power and Godhead; so that they are without excuse.” In other words, God shows us the things of Himself and the spirit realm by creating the material realm to replicate the spiritual realm. Therefore, some important information regarding sex can be gleaned from science here.

Science says that “dopamine, serotonin, oxytocin, and endorphins are the quartet of chemicals responsible for your happiness.” (*Time to activate your happy chemicals ... dopamine, serotonin, endorphins and oxytocin*, October 19, 2018, <https://www.thegeniusworks.com/2018/10/time-to-activate-your-happy-chemicals-dopamine-serotonin-endorphins-and-oxytocin/>, accessed May 8, 2019).

Amphetamines, cocaine, heroin, and other addictive drugs increase your body’s dopamine levels by up to 10 times more than usual. As you continue to take these drugs, your brain gets used to these higher levels and will produce less dopamine and become less responsive to those dopamine levels. “As a consequence, addicts build up a tolerance to a drug, needing larger and larger amounts to get high. In severe addiction, people also go through withdrawal—they feel physically ill, cannot sleep and shake uncontrollably—if their brain is deprived of a dopamine-stimulating substance for too long.” (*How the Brain Gets Addicted to Gambling* by Ferris Jabr, November 2013, <https://www.scientificamerican.com/article/how-the-brain-gets-addicted-to-gambling/>, accessed May 8, 2019).

Because illegal drug use is so rampant in our society, you are probably familiar with this. What you may not be familiar with is that a similar thing happens with compulsive gamblers. “Whereas experts used to think of addiction as dependency on a chemical, they now define it as repeatedly pursuing a rewarding experience despite serious repercussions. That experience could be the high of cocaine or heroin or the thrill of doubling one's money at the casino.” “Just as substance addicts require increasingly strong hits to get high, compulsive gamblers pursue ever riskier ventures. Likewise, both drug addicts and problem gamblers endure symptoms of withdrawal when separated from the chemical or thrill they desire.” “Even more compelling, neuroscientists have learned that drugs and gambling alter many of the same brain circuits in similar ways.” (*How the Brain Gets Addicted to Gambling* by Ferris Jabr, November 2013, <https://www.scientificamerican.com/article/how-the-brain-gets-addicted-to-gambling/>, accessed May 8, 2019).

Now, you may wonder what all this has to do with sex. Well, if a gambling addiction produces similar results to a drug addiction, and the reason it does so is because gamblers are “repeatedly pursuing a rewarding experience despite serious repercussions,” then the same can be said for those who cheat on their spouse, view pornography, go after sodomy relationships, view pornography, and everything else that is seen as deviating from a person’s conscience regarding sex. (*How the Brain Gets Addicted to Gambling* by Ferris Jabr, November 2013, <https://www.scientificamerican.com/article/how-the-brain-gets-addicted-to-gambling/>, accessed May 8, 2019). Therefore, we can conclude that those, who pursue sex for the sheer pleasure of it, are addicted to that high, not unlike a drug addict.

In addition, “sex causes increased production of oxytocin, which is often referred to as the ‘love hormone.’ “Before orgasm, oxytocin, released from the brain, surges and is accompanied by the release of endorphins, our natural pain-killing hormones.” (*More sex is the secret to a longer, healthier life*, by Natasha Turner, ND, accessed May 7, 2019, <https://www.chatelaine.com/health/sex-and-relationships/more-sex-is-the-secret-to-a-longer-healthier-life/>).

Therefore, when you have sex, your body automatically produces two of the four “happy chemicals,” even if you are not a “sex addict,” per se. (This is the scientific explanation for why Paul tells widows under 60 to get re-married.)

Now, we learned that dopamine gives you a high. It was originally thought to be chemically induced only, which means you would have to take a chemical, i.e., drugs, in order to feel the dopamine release. However, studies have shown that compulsive gamblers behave in a similar manner to drug addicts, which means they also must receive a release of dopamine. Therefore, it makes sense that sex addicts would also have dopamine released in their bodies. This would explain why it is hard for a man not to look at a half-naked woman going down the street, because his body releases dopamine when he does so. The same is true for a woman who gets an approving glance from an attractive man, which is why it is hard for a woman not to dress sexy and flirt with men. In other words, our society has become addicted to the dopamine release from being sex addicts. This is not to say that everyone is having sex, but it is to say that, for those who have been conditioned by society (This probably includes nearly everyone who lives in a city.) to get sexual pleasure from an attractive person, dopamine is released when we see an attractive person.

The last of the happy chemicals is serotonin. “Serotonin flows when you feel significant or important.” (*Time to activate your happy chemicals ... dopamine, serotonin, endorphins and oxytocin*, October 19, 2018, <https://www.thegeniusworks.com/2018/10/time-to-activate-your-happy-chemicals-dopamine-serotonin-endorphins-and-oxytocin/>, accessed May 8, 2019).

If you are in a loving, monogamous relationship with your spouse, sex produces all four of these chemicals at the same time. 1) Oxytocin is produced when you have sex. 2) Endorphins are produced to block pain from occurring that you would normally have from two bodies coming together. 3) Dopamine is produced when you see how sexy your spouse is. 4) Serotonin is produced when you feel significant or important in the eyes of your spouse.

With this knowledge, we can see how sexual sin can abuse these things. If you are addicted to pornography, romance novels, or other outward manifestations of sexuality, you are getting a dopamine high from viewing such things. You can then produce oxytocin and endorphins without the pain from another person’s body clanging with yours. Serotonin is missing in this equation, because there is no one to feel significant or important with when you are having a sex high by yourself. This explains why people rape others, including children, to get that serotonin high.

In summary, sex produces all kinds of good feelings. It seems to be the all-natural high without any negative consequences. Well, there is the negative consequence

of having a child born for whom you are now responsible. Therefore, man steps in with contraceptives, so he can still have sex and feel good, but without the responsibility. Still, sex is a lifetime partnership with one person. However, once you get rid of the natural result of pregnancy, you can also trick your mind into thinking that short-term, casual sex is okay. But, it is difficult to make these sex arrangements because men and women need different things to happen in order to get the good feeling from sex. Therefore, sodomy and rape are followed. But, people may have moral issues to these things, since they destroy other people's lives. Therefore, pornography for men and fake romance for women are created so that people can have the good feeling chemical releases of sex without needing another person around to get in the way of the good feeling by trying to impose their will on you. This is the draw of imagined sex. Since better technology creates better imagined sex, as a society progresses, it becomes more and more addicted to imagined sex and more sexually depraved.

The Natural Use of the Woman

Sometimes, you will hear women complain that men have "USED" them for sex, while you will hear men complain that women have "USED" them for material possessions. Neither of these complaints should come as a surprise.

In fact, God refers to "the natural use of the woman" in Romans 1:27, which tells you that it is God's intention that men USE women for sex. Now, that is not to say, that men are to lie to women, get them in bed, and then leave them. Rather, it says that the natural reason that men marry women is for sex. It is certainly not for their minds, because men already have minds that are more logical than women's minds. Therefore, women's minds serve to confuse men, making it a hindrance to them, rather than a help.

"Dana McClendon, a divorce and family law lawyer from Nashville, TN" is credited with coming up with the "hot/crazy women" and the "cute/rich men" matrices Youtube videos. These videos basically say that the hotter a woman is, the crazier she is. Men try to have sex with the hottest women they can find, while they will marry those who are less hot, because the hottest women are too crazy to live with. (This shows that women look hot by illogical means.) On the flip side, women only want to marry cute guys. However, if a man is rich, a woman will marry him no matter how ugly he is. Therefore, men look for hot women, while women look for rich guys. (*"We Talked to the Gun-Toting Lawyer Who Made the 'Hot/Crazy Women Matrix' Video"* by Patrick McGuire, August 1, 2014, https://www.vice.com/en_ca/article/mvkv38/we-talked-to-the-gun-toting-lawyer-who-made-the-hotcrazy-women-matrix-444, accessed March 4, 2019).

This analysis may have been meant as a joke, but it is not far from the truth. Personally, I think God made men to think that women are crazy so that men will not pursue other women. The reason I say this is that a man is much more susceptible to seeing a hot woman and wanting to have sex with her immediately than a woman is in seeing a cute guy, because men are more concerned with outward beauty than women are. Therefore, if women were not crazy, in men's minds, men would have no problem abandoning their wives for the next, hot-

looking woman to come along. However, because women seem to be crazy to men, a man invests a lot of time into his wife to make the relationship work and to keep it working. Committing adultery with another woman would require a lot of time, since women are very complicated to men. The married man is already overwhelmed trying to keep up with his wife. Plus, if his wife finds out about the other woman, he may lose her forever, and he would have to start all over with another woman, trying to figure her out. There's a gospel song called, "I've Come Too Far To Look Back," and that title is appropriate for married men. They simply have too much time invested in their wives to pursue other women, and this is because men view women as being crazy.

Furthermore, God made men to think with their heads, and women to think with their hearts. There is nothing wrong with either one, but men view how women think as being crazy, while women view how men think as being stupid. But, both put up with each other because it is "natural" for a man and a woman to be joined together as one and raise a family. However, the more that men and women follow their own lusts, the more they leave nature. This results first in sleeping around with members of the opposite sex (Romans 1:24-25), second in engaging in sodomy relationships (Romans 1:26-27), and third in giving up on all other people in order to follow your own lusts exclusively, apart from everyone else (Romans 1:28-32).

The "Christian" Teenage Mentality

Teenagers have a great problem with sexual sin. We will now examine why. I think that most teenagers, who are raised in a Christian home, think that, since God approves of sex only between a married man and woman, they will have no problem with sexual sin if they get married. In other words, if they burn, they think the burning will be cured if they get married. Therefore, if they are engaging in sexual sin before marriage, they think that sin will magically disappear once they are married. This is NOT the case.

As we just saw, sex addicts get a high from imagined sex that is much different from the high that a married couple gets from each other. Chemically speaking, the wonderful feeling from imagined sex is more dopamine and endorphins than real sex is. Furthermore, real sex imposes physical limitations between the two bodies to keep them from working themselves up into an uncontrolled frenzy. Such a control is not on imagined sex. Since a dopamine high requires more and more to get the same, good feeling, a pursuit of imagined sex will get worse and worse, and the person will become more and more depraved.

Let's say that normal teenagers with a sex drive that God put there has a value of 100. These teenagers will desire to have sex, have kids, and raise families. They can then recognize their sex drives and decide to fulfill them in a godly manner. Therefore, they do not act on their sexual desire until they get married, and they only have sex with their spouse. As such, their sex drive is always restrained by the spouse. The only time they have sex is when they agree upon it with their spouse. This is how God intended things to be.

However, we are in a society that almost makes this an impossibility. (I say “almost” only because “with God all things are possible” (Matthew 19:26).) A 2005 book states that “the average young American will watch over 14,000 sex acts (or references to sex) with corresponding messages about sexuality every year on TV” (*No Perfect People Allowed: Creating a Come as you are culture in the church* by John Burke 2005, Zondervan, Grand Rapids, MI, pg. 229). This number is probably much higher today. Even if it is the same, this means that AVERAGE teenagers see over 100,000 sex acts or references to sex during those seven years of their life!

Therefore, average teenagers have their normal sex drives of 100 and have added, let’s say, 200 to it. Now, their sex drive is triple what God gave them. What do they do with this? Well, God would say that it is even more important for them to get married, but exactly how are they going to accomplish that? It is not like time past when parents had arranged marriages for their children, and so the children knew how their sexual desire would be fulfilled. Today’s parents probably want their kids to go to college and get good paying jobs before even thinking about getting married. (The Census Bureau says that, in 2017, the average age at first marriage for women is 27.4 and for men is 29.5. (*“Marriage Has Become a Trophy”* by Andrew Cherlin, 3-20-18, https://getpocket.com/explore/item/marriage-has-become-a-trophy?utm_source=pocket-newtab, accessed May 16, 2019). In 1920, it was 21.2 for women and 24.6 for men. (<https://www.infoplease.com/us/marital-status/median-age-first-marriage-1890-2010>, accessed May 16, 2019).) Even if teenagers are Bible believers regarding what God says about sex, they probably cannot get married until they are at least 18. By then, their sex drive has already been tripled by society.

As mentioned, God can give teenagers the victory over their sex drive until they get married. After all, He did this with Jesus Christ. However, teenagers have hearts that are “deceitful above all things, and desperately wicked” (Jeremiah 17:9). Therefore, teenagers will probably allow their deceitful hearts to work sexual sin in their lives, where they pursue imagined sex, rationalizing that they will stop these things once they can be sexually satisfied by a spouse. So, now they have actively pursued imagined sex, increasing their sex drive to, say, 400. The problem is that, if they are pursuing sexual sin, it is like a drug that requires more and more to get the same “high” that they experienced before. The result is that they will end up working “all uncleanness with greediness” (Ephesians 4:19), increasing their sex drive to, say, 500.

We should also note that Christian teenagers probably face greater sexual temptation than unbelievers. Have you heard that waitresses are treated worse on Sundays after church than they are on any other day of the week? This is because people going to church get so frustrated in trying to act good at church, that they take it out on the waitresses at the restaurant where they have lunch afterward. Similarly, Christian teenage boys have hormones going like crazy, they go to church, and see girls dressed like prostitutes, and they have all of this sexual energy within them that is hard to control once they leave the church. It is no wonder that they watch pornography more than unbelievers do!

The problem is that our society is so materially driven, that it has become completely sex-crazed. Then, the only God-given outlet, i.e., marriage, has been stopped by society, because people are taught to pursue economic and material prosperity over obeying God's rules. ("Forbidding to marry" (I Timothy 4:3)) Therefore, teenagers are brought up in such sexual sin that they become addicted to it. Then, even if they do get married in their late 20s, they still have sexual addictions that are not satisfied by their spouse. This results in everyone, including married couples, becoming more and more sexually depraved, which is why our whole society is given over to sexual sin.

Teenagers need to be taught that God did not create sex so you would have loads of fun. Rather, He created it: 1) To make man and woman one, which creates a family, 2) To create children, which keeps humans alive, and 3) To teach you that you should live by the Word of God, rather than by your own lusts. If teenagers follow their own lusts before they get married, they will follow their own lusts after they get married. However, if they have faith in God and do not seek out sexual sin before marriage, they will do the same after marriage. As such, sex in marriage is meant to satisfy the sex drive so that you do not fall off the deep end. In other words, if you burn and you do not get married, you will be consumed with the burning such that it will become difficult to allow Christ to live in you. Therefore, you can get married, have the burning curtailed with your spouse, and then serve Christ in marriage. What marriage does, then, is it teaches you sexual contentment and restraint. It DOES not solve the problem of committing sexual sins.

This is seen in I Corinthians 7:3-5. There, Paul says, "Let the husband render unto the wife due benevolence: and likewise also the wife unto the husband. The wife hath not power of her own body, but the husband: and likewise also the husband hath not power of his own body, but the wife. Defraud ye not one the other, except it be with consent for a time, that ye may give yourselves to fasting and prayer; and come together again, that Satan tempt you not for your incontinency." "Incontinency" means the inability to restrain sexual lust. In other words, if you are able to restrain sexual lust, do not get married. However, if you are unable to restrain sexual lust, you should get married and have sex on a regular basis. If you do not have sex on a regular basis, Satan will tempt you with sexual lust and you will sin because you are unable to restrain sexual lust. This shows that sexual lust is not satisfied and does not magically go away when you are married. Rather, when you get married, sexual lust is satisfied by your spouse when you have sex, and then you are to learn to be content with not having that satisfied during the times when it cannot be satisfied (pregnancies, injuries, illnesses, lack of privacy/time, etc.). You then have learned sexual contentment, which will keep lusts from taking control of your life.

Sexual Freedom Leads to Sex Maniacs

The sexually content teenage is a rarity in today's society. A major reason for this is because arranged marriages are no longer part of our society. This leaves it up to the individual teenager to decide what to do with his sex drive. This is a recipe

for disaster! To illustrate this, let's use the example of food. Let's say that one teenager come from a rich family. Where his next meal comes from is never an issue. He just tells the right person what he wants, and it is given to him. By contrast, let's say another teenager comes from a poor family. Where his next meal comes from may be constantly on his mind. When his stomach grumbles, he searches for food that he can afford and also tries to save money so that he can afford to eat the next time that he is hungry.

Similarly speaking, a teenager, who has an arranged marriage, need not think about sex when his sex drive is burning. He already knows that his sex drive will be satisfied by his wife, whether that happens right then or years down the road when he actually gets married. However, a teenage, made to fend for himself in the sexual arena, is looking to see where his next meal will come from, so to speak. If he desires for God to live through him, he will seek to get married so that he does not commit sexual sin. But, how does he do this when his parents keep him from getting married until he graduates from college and gets a good paying job? Even if his parents allow him to get married just after high school, finding a godly woman to marry, who will want to marry him and her parents approve, will be next to impossible. This is seen in Ecclesiastes 7:27-29, "Behold, this have I found, saith the preacher, counting one by one, to find out the account: which yet my soul seeketh, but I find not: one man among a thousand have I found; but a woman among all those have I not found. Lo, this only have I found, that God hath made man upright; but they have sought out many inventions." In other words, there may be 1 man in 1,000, who is willing to seek after God, but not a single woman can be found in 1,000!

Let's say, by some strange miracle, that this teenage boy is able to find a godly woman to marry, and his sexual desire is fulfilled by her. Even in this case, the boy has a problem. First, because marriage was not arranged for him, he is like that poor boy, who does not know where his next meal will come from. He keeps looking all over the place for a godly woman. In looking, he must look at countless, half-naked girls, which only increase his sexual burning. Then, he has a girlfriend, who also increases his sexual burning, since she actually express interest in him but does not marry him. Chances are, he will go through several girlfriends before he finally finds one who will marry him. Society is so concerned with finding "the one" with whom to spend the rest of your life, that it causes you to burn sexually until you can get married. This can be likened to the poor boy who looks everywhere for a meal. He must go to restaurant after restaurant, looking at many people enjoying delicious food, but yet the food never comes to him. What is worse is that he is promised food at some restaurant, only to have it taken from him just before he gets to eat it. Such teasing is pure torture for a starving teenager. Therefore, he may take matters into his own hands by trying to force restaurants to feed him. If only he was rich, he would not have given food a second thought and would not have sinned.

Similarly, a godly, teenage boy, without an arranged marriage, must fend for himself. He pursues marriage in order to curb his sex drive, but much rejection actually increases his sex drive, resulting in more sexual burning. He is, then,

much more likely to commit sexual sin because that is the only avenue he sees to getting rid of the sexual burning. After years of sexual burning, he finally gets married and enjoys real sex with his spouse. Now, he thinks his sexual problem is solved. WRONG! Real sex is not the same as the imagined sex he experienced before he got married.

Chemically speaking, he has less of a dopamine and an endorphin high from the sex with his spouse, than he got with the imagined sex in his brain. Therefore, his sexual-sin problem has not been magically cured by getting married. More importantly, his mind has already been conditioned by society to look at the opposite sex as potential sex/marriage partners. An old saying is, "You can take the boy out of the country, but you can't take the country of the boy." Similarly, "you can take the boy out of the single life, but you can't take the single life out of the boy." Because society has taught him to look at members of the opposite sex as potential sex/marriage partners, he will continue to think of them as such, even after he has already married someone and does not need to find a marriage partner.

Similarly speaking for teenage girls, they dress provocatively and flirt with teenage boys in order to try to land them a man. When they actually get married, they still dress and flirt with other guys, because it makes them feel sexy and a goddess to get attention from other men. Therefore, society is filled with married people, who act just like single people with each other. It is no wonder, then, that there are so many extramarital affairs and divorce, when society values the freedom of sexual choice over the stability of arranged marriages. Thus, the freedom to choose your spouse may sound like a wonderful thing, but the delay it creates in satisfying your sex drive and the increase in your sexual burning that results from this freedom actually causes society to become sex crazed.

Sex Maniacs

I recently made the statement that I do not know of anyone who was born without a sex drive, even though Jesus specifically said that "there are some eunuchs, which were so born from their mother's womb" (Matthew 19:12). This is because, just like our society has created sodomites, they have also pretty much trained everyone to be a sex maniac.

As previously mentioned, a 2005 book states that "the average young American will watch over 14,000 sex acts (or references to sex) with corresponding messages about sexuality every year on TV" (*No Perfect People Allowed: Creating a Come as you are culture in the church* by John Burke 2005, Zondervan, Grand Rapids, MI, pg. 229). This means that the average teenager sees over 100,000 sex acts during those seven years of his life. When you include smartphones, Internet, and the degradation of society in the last 14 years, I am sure this number has increased dramatically. The result is that kids have a great amount of sexual energy without the knowledge of what God says about sex. This is why I have heard stories of 10 year-old girls sending pornographic pictures of themselves to boys on their smartphones in order to get them to have sex with

them. Then, the girls become suicidal when the boys make fun of them and forward those pictures to other boys.

With all of these sex images in society, it is nearly impossible to get away from them. You will see nearly naked girls (not just women, but girls) walking around town like there is nothing wrong with it. Or, just turn on the TV, and you will see explicit sex acts all over the place. Even if you flip the channel to watch an episode of *The Andy Griffith Show*, which was made over 50 years ago as a wholesome show, you will still see half-naked women in the commercials that are played in the middle of the episode. Jesus said, “That whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her hath committed adultery with her already in his heart” (Matthew 5:28). Therefore, a man, who simply just wants to relax and watch a rated “G” TV show, will still end up committing sexual sin. It is no wonder, then, that I know of no one without a sex drive—society has forced sex upon everyone of us!

Things are even worse when we look at popular music. A 2008 study of 279 top songs from 2005 across music genres found that “37% of songs made some sort of reference to sexual intercourse.” An examination of America’s top 40 songs by decade has shown a significant increase as well. Sex/sexual desire was mentioned in 18% in the 1960s, 24% in the 1970s, 29.5% in the 1980s, 34% in the 1990s, and 41.7% in the 2000s. (*“What has America been singing about? Trends in themes in the U.S. top-40 songs: 1960–2010”* by Peter G. Christenson, Silvia de Haan-Rietdijk, Donald F. Roberts, Tom F.M. ter Bogt on 1-23-18, “*Psychology of Music*”, <https://journals.sagepub.com/doi/full/10.1177/0305735617748205>, accessed March 25, 2019).

What makes it so bad is that society thinks that you must have sex on a regular basis in order to be a normal, healthy person! Therefore, society becomes more and more sexualized, and nothing is done about it. This gives every person no escape from sexual sin. Therein lies the problem. If someone is addicted to heroin, for example, he could enter a drug-rehabilitation program, get over his addiction, and move back home. However, if he moved back to his old house, he would be back in his old environment, and his old drug suppliers and friends would hound him until he returned to his drug problem. In order to stay drug free, he needs to move to a new environment, where it would be much more difficult for him to obtain drugs.

By contrast, society has made nearly everyone a sex addict, maybe not in action but at least in thought, which is just as bad of a sin as the action itself, as Jesus pointed out in Matthew 5:28. “Whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her hath committed adultery with her already in his heart.” Given all of the sexual images available in society today, there are probably men and women in the United States today who have committed adultery in their hearts hundreds of thousands of times each! All saved people “delight in the law of God after the inward man” (Romans 7:22), but “I see another law in my members, warring against the law of my mind, and bringing me into captivity to the law of sin which is in my members” (Romans 7:23). So, what do you do? The drug addict can move someplace else, but the sex addict has nowhere to hide. Society has forced sexual sin upon everyone.

Possible solutions are: 1) Move to a colder climate where people will cover up their naked bodies more, 2) Move to the country, where you are not bombarded with so many sexual images, 3) Never watch television, 4) Never look at the Internet, and 5) Find a country that is not so sexually charged (Where? I don't know.). However, for most people, these options are not practical. In fact, the Bible says that the only way you can completely get away from fornicators is by going out of the world (I Corinthians 5:9-10). In other words, **all unbelievers, due to their sin nature, are sexual fornicators in their minds.**

By contrast, because “Christ liveth in” us (Galatians 2:20), we can “abstain from fornication” and “possess [our] vessel in sanctification and honour” (I Thessalonians 4:3-4). In a world that is sex-crazed, this is a rare and powerful testimony by which we can show the in-Christ life to others so that they may be saved.

We should also address the common misconception that having sex or being sexually stimulated will keep you from wanting to have sex for a while. This simply is not true. Viagra has allowed millions of men to have sex in their 60s and 70s, but Viagra does not increase sex drive. Growing up, I lived with my grandparents, and I cannot even imagine them having sex in their 70s, even with Viagra, because the drive was not there. In fact, I can only remember seeing them kiss each other a handful of times before my grandfather died when I was 13 years old, even though I saw them together all the time. Yet, today, the sex drive is still there for seniors, because they are sexually stimulated by this society. “Among 45- to 59-year-olds with sexual partners, some 56 percent said they had sexual intercourse once a week or more. Among 60- to 70-year-olds with partners, 46 percent of men and 38 percent of women have sex at least once a week, as did 34 percent of those 70 or older.” (<https://consumer.healthday.com/encyclopedia/aging-1/misc-aging-news-10/sex-and-seniors-the-70-year-itch-647575.html>, “Sex and Seniors: The 70-Year Itch” by Loren Stein, M.A., accessed December 13, 2018). Yes, you read correctly, 34% percent of married couples age 70 or older have sex at least once per week! Why? Because society keeps stimulating their sex drive with sexual images, when God says it would have naturally diminished away by about age 60 (I Timothy 5:9).

Sex Statistics

Perhaps some sex statistics will further drive home the point of how sexualized our society has become.

“The divorce rate tripled from 1962 to 1981.” “40% of teens will be pregnant before age twenty, 80% of those out of wedlock. Nearly one of every three babies born in the US is born out of wedlock, the highest anywhere in the world.” (*No Perfect People Allowed: Creating a Come as you are culture in the church* by John Burke 2005. Zondervan, Grand Rapids, MI., pg. 236.) These statistics were published in a book in 2005. Things have only gotten worse since then.

“In the early 1970s, 29% of Americans...believed that premarital sex was ‘not wrong at all’.” 55% had that same belief in the 2010s. “Among 18- to 29-year-olds,

21% of Boomers in the early 1970s believed same-sex sexual activity was ‘not wrong at all,’ ... and 56% of Millennials in the 2010s.” “5% of GenX’ers in the late 1980s had sex with a casual date or pickup...compared to 45% of Millennials in the 2010s (55% of men, 31% of women).” “The marriage rate in the U.S. reached a 93-year low in 2014.... Marriage is also increasingly disconnected from parenting: More than 40% of babies were born to unmarried mothers in 2012, up from 5% in 1960.” (“Changes in American Adults’ Sexual Behavior and Attitudes, 1972–2012” November 2015, Volume 44, Issue 8, pp 2273–2285, by Jean M. Twenge, Ryne A. Sherman, and Brooke E. Wells, 5-5-15, accessed at <https://journalistsresource.org/studies/society/public-health/changes-americans-attitudes-sex-reviewing-40-years-data/>, on March 25, 2019).

92.3% of women in 1920 and 90.2% in 1950 were currently married. In 2010, only 31.1% were currently married. (“Marriage: More than a Century of Change” by Julissa Cruz, <https://www.bgsu.edu/content/dam/BGSU/college-of-arts-and-sciences/NCFMR/documents/FP/FP-13-13.pdf>, accessed March 25, 2019).

“In the 1950s, it was pretty easy to publicly decide to save yourself sexually for that one special person and a lifelong commitment.” “In the fifties, actress Ingrid Bergman was chased out of Hollywood for conceiving a child out of wedlock.” By contrast, “in the 1990s, when actress Connie Seleca and entertainer John Tesh mentioned that they were not going to engage in sex before their marriage, Hollywood treated the couple in almost as shame-inducing and derogatory a fashion as they treated Ingrid Bergman decades before.” (“No Perfect People Allowed: Creating a Come as you are culture in the church” by John Burke 2005. Zondervan, Grand Rapids, MI., pg. 228.)

“Two-thirds of college students have been in a "friends with benefits" [sex between friends] relationship, citing the lack of commitment required as the main advantage to such an arrangement.” (“10 Surprising Sex Statistics” http://www.nbcnews.com/id/37853719/ns/health-sexual_health/t/surprising-sex-statistics/#.XJkiWaB7mCg, accessed March 25, 2019). In other words, the majority of college students have married someone in God’s eyes, and they have never considered that person to be more than just a friend!

How Bad Can It Get?

As we see things getting worse and worse, you may wonder when we will hit rock bottom. Well, Judges 19 is a great example to show that things can still get worse!

There, we are told the story of a concubine who prostitutes herself out to other men (Judges 19:2). Her husband fetches her to bring her back home with him. On their way back home, they stay with an old man. The men of the city beat the door down because they want to rape the husband (not the concubine). The men end up gang raping and abusing the woman all night long, such that she died (Judges 19:25-28).

How far are we away from this happening today?

Child Rape

In the last 100 years, the city and technology have worked with the lust of the

flesh to change a woman from being a loving spouse, mother, and helper in life, to an object of pleasure with whom to have sex. In other words, city life caused men to look at women as sex objects or trophies of economic prosperity, rather than as lifetime companions. Women obliged by dressing like prostitutes, being half naked with makeup, jewelry, and a host of other things to feel sexy in men's eyes. This means that women were now sought out strictly for their outer beauty. In general, this has translated into men seeking women who look young and thin with no wrinkles.

This is why women do not want to tell their age and feel like you are complimenting them if you say that they look to be an age less than what they really are. They need to believe Proverbs 31:30. "Favour is deceitful, and beauty is vain: but a woman that feareth the LORD, she shall be praised." Instead, they become obsessed with trying to look young, thin, and pretty, because this will get the attention of men, not just for sex but also to get good paying jobs and other favors that men may give them. "All flesh is grass, and all the goodness thereof is as the flower of the field: the grass withereth, the flower fadeth: because the spirit of the Lord bloweth upon it: surely the people is grass" (Isaiah 40:6-7).

"The human body is made up of fat, lean tissue (muscles and organs), bones, and water. After age 30, people tend to lose lean tissue." "The amount of body fat goes up steadily after age 30. Older people may have almost one third more fat compared to when they were younger. Fat tissue builds up toward the center of the body, including around the internal organs." "Women usually gain weight until age 65, and then begin to lose weight." (*"Aging Changes in Body Shape"*, <https://medlineplus.gov/ency/article/003998.htm>, accessed May 13, 2019).

What this tells us is that, in terms of body shape, you can divide women into three, general categories: 1) Young and thin (age 30 and under), 2) Middle-aged and fat (age 30 to 65), and 3) Old and thin (age 65 and over). The only category, where women are both thin and have no wrinkles, is age 30 and under. Therefore, it is these women who are featured on television and the internet. These women then compete with each other by wearing makeup and jewelry and showing off their naked bodies to maximize their sex appeal so that men find them attractive.

When I was growing up, looking sexy was reserved only for adult women. What is particularly disturbing now is that makeup, jewelry, and other things to beautify women has become so accepted that many young girls now wear these things as well. I have been appalled to see girls younger than 10 march in parades with barely half of their bodies covered. The same is true for girls under 10 at public swimming areas. Since these young girls are half naked and wearing makeup and jewelry just like older women and they are less likely to resist sexual advances by men, it stands to reason that child rape and pornography would be the result.

Women say, "That is sick that a man would rape a 10 year-old girl!" Yes, it is. However, the city and technology have caused men to look for attractive women to have sex with. Since men are looking for a body type, rather than a lifetime companion, and the body type they find attractive is in women 30 and under, it

stands to reason that all women, including those under 18, would be attractive to men. 30 years ago, girls were differentiated from women by covering up their bodies, not wearing makeup, and acting like girls, who are not interested in sex. Now, most girls are interested in sex by the time they are 10, they try to make their breasts look bigger, even at age 10 before they have breasts, and they dress just like they will when they are 20, i.e., they wear makeup, jewelry, and are half naked. Therefore, the lusts of the flesh cause girls to try to look like they are adults, and those same lusts in men cause them to desire women who look just like those girls. Therefore, it is quite natural for men to pursue girls. After all, if body type is all that is important and a 15 year-old girl looks just like a 20 year-old woman, the lusts of the flesh will cause a man to desire the 15 year-old girl. Only two things will stop him: 1) His conscience, and 2) Laws. However, the lust of the flesh knows no bounds. It will continue to “work all uncleanness with greediness” (Ephesians 4:19). Since women are seen as sex objects and the younger they look the sexier they are, it stands to reason that some men would go against their conscience and the laws of the land and seek to have sex with girls.

In other words, the city has morphed the body type that men find attractive into a young woman, who looks very similar to kids. The flesh desires this body type and makes no differentiation between a 20 year-old and a 10 year-old. In fact, our society makes no difference between the two in practice. For example, I saw a Target commercial that showed two, young women in bathing suits followed by two, young girls in bathing suits. Both the women and the girls had a similar percentage of skin being revealed and a similar amount of makeup on. In other words, the women and the girls looked exactly the same, except for their age difference. (We should not be surprised that Target did this, as they also were the first major retailer to promote transgenderism.) When society makes young women out to be gods and young girls look just like them, it makes sense that the lusts of the flesh for a man would not differentiate between the two. Yes, the child rapist is at fault, but society is equally to blame for setting him up for failure.

Therefore, child pornography and rape are a huge problem in the United States. While I did not research this, I can tell, just from daily news stories, that child rape has become a bigger and bigger problem over time. I have also heard that child sex trafficking is an incredibly flourishing market in the United States. This just goes to show you that the depths of sin’s depravity has no bounds.

Yes, men, who rape 10 year-olds, should be killed, but what about the parents of the 10 year-olds? They are supposed to train up their children in the way they should go. Instead, they have allowed their children to dress up like prostitutes. One time, my wife saw a girl in a public restroom, who looked to be about 8 years old. She was half naked with heavy makeup on, because she was going to be in a parade. She was very self-conscious, trying to stretch her clothes to cover more of her body. She wanted to look like a girl, not like a prostitute. However, she had to wear the skimpy outfit and the heavy makeup to match what all the other girls were wearing. So, now, child rapists can stand on the street, look over the girls in the parade, and decide which one(s) he wants to rape. If parents covered up their children and did not allow them to wear jewelry and makeup, the child rapist

would not be as attracted to them. He would be more likely to see them as cute girls having fun marching in the parade, rather than as sex objects to bring him pleasure. Therefore, the parents, who allow their kids to go out of their house half-naked, are to be blamed, as well.

CHAPTER 8

Women's Rule Destroys Society

The World Watches Women

The fact is that the world watches women. Men look at them because they are attracted to them. Women look at other women to see how successful they are at attracting men. This is why women are so concerned with their looks. However, if women “adorn themselves in modest apparel, with shamefacedness and sobriety; not with broided hair, or gold, or pearls, or costly array” (I Timothy 2:9), both men and women take note, and the result will be that at least some people will be saved and come unto the knowledge of the truth. However, if a woman tries to be like other women, getting the latest hairdo, makeup, clothing, etc., she will not stand out, spiritually speaking.

This is why young women are instructed to DO a lot of things. They are “to be sober, to love their husbands, to love their children, to be discreet, chaste, keepers at home, good, obedient to their own husbands, that the word of God be not blasphemed” (Titus 2:4-5). Meanwhile, young men are only instructed to think correctly: “Young men likewise exhort to be sober minded” (Titus 2:6). This is because the word of God is not blasphemed when women’s actions are based upon sound doctrine in their inner man, because everyone watches what women do. By contrast, men are only watched for their intelligence. Therefore, men only need to be sober minded so that they develop the mind of Christ within them.

Society Is the Worst when Women Rule

Whenever the roles are reversed in a society so that women are ruling the men, society suffers for it. This is why, whenever a wife is mentioned in the Bible, it is usually in a bad context. Eve got Adam to eat of the forbidden fruit; Abraham’s wife told him to have a child with her servant (Genesis 16:2); Lot’s wife was killed for her disobedience (Genesis 19:26); Job’s wife told him to “curse God, and die” (Job 2:9); even Mary, the mother of Jesus, tried to commit Him to the funny farm (Mark 3:21,31-35). (Granted, there are some faithful women in the Bible, such as Jael, Ruth, and Esther. However, it is when a woman is identified as acting as someone’s wife is usually when she is rebellious, because she is not submitting to the rule of her husband.)

The reason society is the worst when women rule is because it shows that they have already gone away from their God-given role to serve the man. Therefore, before they do anything, they are already in rebellion. A society has to go a lot farther into sin in order for women to rule than when men rule in a godless society.

Today, there is the “Me Too” movement in America, in which almost everything a man says or does is deemed to be sexual harassment of women. In a society like this, men stop pursuing women and give themselves over to sodomy. This is why “ALL the [men] from every quarter” of the city of Sodom wanted to have sex with the two “men” who were staying in Lot’s house (Genesis 19:4-5). After all, if the natural means to find sexual pleasure is not available because women are unreachable due to suing men for sexual harassment, men will find sexual

pleasure with other men. This is borne out in a prison, where no women are around.

How did the “Me Too” movement start? It started because women rule the American society now. Remember that men are concerned with the solution (summary-level thinking), while women are concerned with the process you go through to get to the solution (detail-level thinking). Our society, today, is ultra-sensitive. Freedom of speech is alive in name only, because whatever you say may be interpreted as sexism, racism, stereotyping, or anything defined as hateful or judgmental. I am even a member of a gym that prides itself in being a “judgement-free zone.” None of these things happened when I was a child. Why? Because men ruled the society. We got a lot more things done, because we did not worry about hurting anyone. But, now that women rule the society, very little can get done because creativity and ingenuity are punished in the name of fairness and tolerance. When kids compete with each other, “Everyone is a winner,” because women are afraid of their kids having hurt feelings. The result is a lazy society that feels good about itself but is destroying itself due to the new roles of a woman-run society. Who cares if you get the job done, as long as you feel good about yourself? So, all that matters is how everyone feels, and since everyone feels differently in the same circumstances, independent thought and a hard-work ethic have left our society.

But, Paul said, “I have learned, in whatsoever state I am, therewith to be content. I know both how to be abased, and I know how to abound” (Philippians 4:12). The godly person rejoices evermore (I Thessalonians 5:16). In other words, God’s solution to your circumstances is for Christ to live in your circumstances, but woman’s solution is to change your circumstances so that everyone feels good because of the circumstances and not because of your attitude. Since “all that will live godly in Christ Jesus shall suffer persecution” (II Timothy 3:12) and mothers have trained up their children to feel good about themselves, almost all godly men and women have been eliminated from our society.

God said about the women of Amos’ day: “Ye kine of Bashan, that are in the mountain of Samaria, which oppress the poor, which crush the needy, which say to their masters, Bring, and let us drink.” (Amos 4:1). God would say the same thing to the women of today. They order their masters around and tell them to live it up today and in doing so they oppress and crush those who need to hear the gospel and be saved, because they do not hear about their wretchedness in today’s “feel-good” society.

The Mother-in-Law Problem

Mother-in-laws pose problems on both sides of the marriage. Since women care about the process, mothers are intimately involved in raising their own children. Even if a husband and wife grow up in the same neighborhood, their mothers raised them differently. Therefore, in a mother’s mind, the spouse of her child does not follow the correct processes, since she did not raise the spouse. This means that the mothers naturally take the side of their children.

Also, the relationship that the mothers have with their children change, because now they have an in-law that they did not raise. The mother may have gotten along just fine with her daughter, but her daughter is now submitting to the authority of her husband, rather than her mother. Therefore, the daughter is living differently, the mother blames it on the husband, and the mother does not have a good relationship with her son-in-law. The mother may also not have a good relationship with her daughter any more, because the mother is still trying to treat the daughter like a child, telling her what to do, when the daughter is now an adult, who needs to make her own decisions, since the daughter has been given away by her father to the daughter's husband.

The mother of the son also does not get along with her daughter-in-law, because the processes she follows are not the processes that she follows. Therefore, the mother has criticisms of the daughter-in-law, how she is not like her, which means that the mother-in-law does not think her daughter-in-law makes a good wife for her son. At the same time, the mother's relationship with her own son is strained, because she still tries to control him, when he is now the head of his own household. Therefore, the son wants the mother to stop treating him like a child. Meanwhile, the daughter-in-law gets upset that the mother keeps interfering. In fact, what often happens is the son spends less time with his mother and thinking about her, since he needs to please his wife now. So, the mother may try to interfere with the marriage to manipulate her son to spend more time with her and less time with his wife. Now, two women are competing for the attention of the husband, instead of just one.

The Father-in-Law

Meanwhile, it is rare that a father-in-law is ever a problem on either side of the marriage. Why? Because men do not care about details. They only care about the end result. Fathers never tried to control all the details of their children. This is why a father's common response to a child's request is: "Go ask your mother." This does not mean that the father does not love his children. Rather, it is that he does not care about the details. He is not going to say that you should spend your time with Timmy and Billy and not Johnny and Bobby, because he does not care. However, if a friend will lead his children to drink, smoke, or do any other bad things, the father will step in, because his child's friends are turning his child into a bad child.

Fathers are very protective of their daughters, because they do not want them to ruin their lives with the wrong guy. However, once a marriage takes place, the father is much more likely to see that his children are adults and no longer under his watchful eye. While a father may encourage his daughter to leave her husband if he is abusive or may give helpful advice to his son when asked, he is not going to meddle in the affairs of the marriage, for the most part. Rather, he will leave them be to make their own decisions. Therefore, the father-in-law is usually easygoing, as compared to the mother-in-law, and he does not cause a problem for his in-law son or daughter. Again, this is because of how men think.

Problem Areas for Married Couples

In addition to the mother-in-law problem, married couples have enough problems of their own. This is because each person tries to follow the lusts of his flesh, rather than giving up what he wants for the sake of his spouse. We will now look at some of these problem areas.

Driving

Since the man is concerned with the solution while the woman is concerned with the process, the husband is criticized by his wife for driving too quickly, taking chances, reckless driving, and not stopping enough for breaks. Meanwhile, the wife is criticized by the husband for not knowing how to merge, stopping for no reason, worrying over other cars, taking forever to turn, and driving so slowly. Why? Because, when in a car, the man thinks: "PROBLEM: Need to get to destination. SOLUTION: Get there as quickly as possible." The woman thinks: "PROBLEM: Need to avoid accidents and get to destination safely. SOLUTION: Drive carefully so that everyone gets there safely."

What if the couple is lost? The wife wants to ask someone for directions, while the husband does not. Why? The wife is worried about getting lost, going into an unsafe neighborhood, and running out of gas. The husband is worried about looking like an idiot, thinking that he is too stupid to figure this out himself. On the other hand, if he figures out the correct road by himself, he looks smart. (This is the same reason why men ignore directions on how to put things together, while women are careful to follow directions. Therefore, if the husband and the wife try to assemble something together, it will end up in disaster.)

Communication

If two women are watching a television show together, they will probably be talking to each other most of the time. If two men are watching a television show together, they can sit in silence for hours at a time. If women sit in silence, it is only because they are mad at each other. If men talk to each other, it is probably because they are mad at each other. Why? A woman is concerned about how the other woman is feeling (the process), while a man is only concerned about the task (watching television) at hand (the solution).

A wife will ask her husband, "What are you thinking?" A husband will never ask his wife this question. Why? Because the man does not care what his wife is thinking. This does not mean that he does not love her. It just means that he is not concerned with the process of marriage. To a man, the fact that he works a full-time job, pays the bills, and buys his wife nice things is proof enough that he loves her. To the wife, she is only concerned about the process. So, she does little things for her husband around the house, and he never notices. Then, she gets mad at him for not considering her feelings, when he has no clue that she is upset with him, because he has no idea that he did anything wrong, because his default

thinking is that everything is fine. This is why the husband usually is not thinking anything, while the wife is always thinking something. She cannot not be thinking of something, because she is concerned with the process. Meanwhile, the husband sees no problem; therefore, he is thinking nothing.

Wives are always complaining that their husbands do not communicate with them enough. The reason for this is not because husbands are trying to withhold things from their wives. Rather, their wives have an emotional response to everything, while men look at things logically. Therefore, a wife may have a problem with what her husband says, and now the husband has to try to calm the wife now. However, if he says nothing, this problem may be avoided.

For example, let's say that Memorial Day is coming up. The wife wants to spend it with her parents. The husband wants to spend it at the beach. If the husband tells his wife, "I want to go to the beach for Memorial Day," she will probably get upset. She may say, "You are so selfish. You only want to do what you want to do. You've always hated my family. Why can't you just get along with them?" The husband thinks, "Where did this come from? I never even mentioned her family. Now, I am in the dog house just because I want to go to the beach." A long argument ensues. The husband agrees to go to his wife's parents' house, or else she will not be happy. Next year, the wife asks, "What do you want to do for Memorial Day?" This time, the husband says, "I don't care." Actually, he does care. He wants to go to the beach, but there is no way he will say that, because his wife will get upset with him. Now, the wife nags him about not communicating with him. The next year, he answers his wife with, "I want to go to your parents' house for Memorial Day." Her response is, "No, you don't. You're just saying that, because you know that is where I want to go. Stop patronizing me!" As you can see, no matter what the husband says or does not say, he gets in trouble with his wife. So, he speaks as little as possible.

Man's brain is made to want what it wants. If a man says, "Let's go to the beach," and his wife says, "Okay," that is the end of the discussion. However, women want what they want AND they want their husbands to want the same thing that they want. So, she will say, "I would like for us to go to my parents' house for Memorial Day." He will say, "Okay." Then, the wife will say, "Why did you pause before you answered? Do you not want to go to my parents' house for Memorial Day? Why don't you like them?"

In summary, because women are emotional, communication is more important to them because the "why" behind a decision is more important to them than the actual decision. To the man, only the decision matters. Therefore, the woman communicates more than the man and is frustrated that the man will not communicate with her that much. On the flip side, the man is frustrated that the woman wants to communicate because, the more he communicates, the greater the chance that he will say something that gets her upset, which creates a problem for him.

Where to Eat

When asked, “Where should we eat?”, the husband thinks: PROBLEM: Need food. SOLUTION: Find cheap food close by to fill my belly. ANSWER: Let’s eat at McDonald’s one block from our house.

When asked, “Where should we eat?”, the wife thinks: PROBLEM: Need good tasting food that we can afford. It should look good on the plate, the server should be friendly, and both the inside and the outside of the building need to look nice. ANSWER: Let’s eat at Olive Garden.

Now, the wife does not want to eat at McDonald’s because the food is too greasy, the people there are not nice, the bathrooms are filthy, the chairs are hard, there is too much noise, and no one brings the food to you. Meanwhile, the husband does not want to eat at Olive Garden because it takes longer to drive there, it takes longer for the food to come out, he has to endure idle chit-chat with the server, there are hundreds of options to choose from that he does not care about, he feels like he cannot be himself there because he has to act a certain way, and he has to pay more for all of this!

Okay. So, the husband and the wife cannot agree on where to eat, so why not eat at home? The husband does not mind grilling something, but his wife probably will not like the look of it and will want something other than charred meat. So, grilling is out. The wife could cook something, but she does not want to go to the trouble of putting a whole bunch of ingredients together and washing the dishes afterward and then worrying if her husband will like it or not. Remember that the wife cares about every single thing that goes into the process, while the husband does not. Then, the wife will feel bad afterward for not meeting her own self-imposed standards, and she will not be complimented by her husband, because he does not care what he eats. So, the wife does not want to cook.

Okay. We could just heat something up, but then the quality of food is not going to be what the wife wants.

The bottom line is that the couple needs to eat something, and at least one of them will probably be unhappy about whatever it is they get. This is all because the wife cares about the process, while the husband cares only about the end result.

Inviting People Over

The husband and wife know another married couple named Bob and Sue, and they invite them to “come over to the house for dinner tonight.” The husband sees the problem as making sure we have enough food for four people. The wife sees the problem as needing to clean the whole house so Bob and Sue do not think we live like slobs. We need to make sure we have enough clean dishes and place settings that all match. Do we have enough drinks? What do Bob and Sue like to eat? Are they allergic to anything? Do we have enough time to take items in the living room that we do not want them to know that we have and hide them somewhere? Do we have enough toilet paper? What are we going to do after dinner?

Therefore, if the husband is at work, he may invite the boss to have dinner with him tonight, thinking that it will be fun. He thinks that there is nothing special to do except get a little extra food. Therefore, he does not tell his wife until he gets home. However, since the wife cares about the details, she will be in an absolute panic for the rest of the night, trying to think how to make the house look exactly how she wants it to look, when she only has an hour to prepare.

Since the wife has a lot more things to consider than the husband, she may get angry at her husband for not giving her more time to prepare. “How do you expect me to get the house ready on such short notice?” may be something she would say, to which the husband replies, “What do you mean? It’s already ‘ready!’” Again, the husband does not care about the process, so, he honestly has not thought about any of this.

Decorating the House

When a husband and wife move into a house, they need to decorate it. At least, that is what the wife said to the husband. The husband figured that, as long as the house has enough room and all of their furniture fits in there, then they are completely moved in. The wife, though, is concerned with the process, not with the end result. Therefore, she says they need to go to Bed, Bath, and Beyond, which is the husband’s worst nightmare. In that store, the husband will be asked hundreds of questions that he does not care what the answers are.

The wife says, “What kind of silverware do you want?” The husband says, “Let’s get some forks, knives, and spoons.” The wife says, “I know that! But, would you rather have Rose Point, Grande Baroque, Chantilly, Old Master, Prelude, Repousse, Fairfax, Strasbourg, Candlelight, or Francis I?” The husband is now in a daze, not even knowing what the question is. The wife now has to explain that these are different types of flatware patterns. To the husband, all of the patterns look fundamentally the same, so, he says, “I don’t know. Just pick the one you like best.”

The husband thinks the decision is made, but it is not, because the wife really wants her husband’s input. So, after 15 minutes of careful consideration on this vitally important decision, she finally narrows it down to her top 3 choices and wants her husband to pick from the 3. Because he wants to please her, he carefully examines the 3 choices and decides, again, that they all look the same. This infuriates the wife, because, to her, there are obvious differences, and it took her 15 minutes of agony to figure out the best 3. This means that he obviously does not care about her. In addition, this choice will impact several other choices that will be made that day. When the pattern is finally chosen, the husband now has to pick out cookware sets, tablecloths, napkins, kitchen towels, bathroom towels, bedspreads, and a host of other things.

The husband, by himself, would have purchased all of these things in 20 minutes, but now he has been in this store for 4 hours, answering questions that he does

not care what the answers are, and they are only halfway done. If they do not leave now, he will miss the football game. So, he yells at her and storms out. Now, his wife is crying. To the husband, he cannot understand what she is upset about. He has just endured 4 hours of hell for her, and she does not appreciate it.

The reason she is crying is not because she is so emotional, but it is because she now thinks that he does not love her. After all, if he does not care, it means he does not care about how their home looks, which means he does not care what others think about her, which means he does not appreciate all the effort she is putting into this to make everything at home look perfect, which means he must not love her. (HGTV's popularity has compounded this problem, since most women now think that their house has to have a perfect look, like the ones on HGTV.)

The wife had seen hundreds of problems that needed to be solved during the last four hours, and the husband had seen zero problems to solve. Now, though, the husband sees a problem. PROBLEM: Wife is crying. SOLUTION: Get her to stop crying. Meanwhile, the wife is thinking. PROBLEM: My husband does not love me. Both problems are solved by buying her something expensive. In this way, the wife realizes that her husband does love her, which solves her problem. She then stops crying, which solves his problem. Of course, now they have another problem of more debt, which is why credit-card debt is so high in the United States. ("Total U.S. household debt is now \$993 billion higher than the peak of \$12.68 trillion in the third quarter of 2008, according to a new report by the New York Fed.")

("Household debt hits \$13.6 trillion as student loan and credit card delinquencies rise" by Aarthi Swaminathan, May 16, 2019, <https://finance.yahoo.com/news/student-loan-credit-card-delinquencies-144156981.html>, accessed May 16, 2019)).

How Do I Look?

Time to get dressed for a Christmas party that the husband and wife are attending at someone else's house. The wife told him that they need to "dress up" for this. The husband's PROBLEM: Put on nice-looking clothes. SOLUTION: Grab first dress shirt and pants in the closet and put them on. "Okay. I'm ready!" the husband announces. "Wow! You are quick!" the wife exclaims. Why did she say that? Because this is the wife's PROBLEM: "Put on nice-looking clothes that do not make me look fat, and wear a push-up bra to make my breasts look good. I also need to find matching shoes that will cause other women to exclaim, 'Wow! I love your shoes. They are so cute!' I need to wear makeup and jewelry that match and make everything else look good, not to mention getting my hair to look just right." As you can see, this is going to take the wife a lot longer than it did the husband.

Before the wife has even tried anything on yet, the husband is dressed and sitting back on the couch, watching television. 10 minutes later, when the next commercial comes on, the husband is getting anxious that they will be late, so he tells his wife to hurry up. The wife does not like that, since beauty cannot be rushed. Finally, after another 10 minutes, she is ready. She immediately sees how her husband is dressed and instructs him on what needs to be changed. Now, she

is frustrated that he wasted 20 minutes watching television, when he should have been figuring out what to wear. Now, she has to spend more time, making them even later, because he was too stupid to dress himself. However, in the end, she will STILL ask her husband, "How do I look?" The husband thinks, "Why are you asking me? I'm not even qualified to dress myself!" He finally says, "You look great!" However, because he took more than five seconds to answer that question, the wife assumes he is just saying that to make her feel good. Now, she gets upset with him for patronizing her, because she thinks that he thinks that she looks awful, because he paused, even though the pause was due to him wondering why she was asking him such a silly question (It is a silly question in his mind, because he does not care how either of them look. As long as their clothes are not torn or covered in mud, they look fine to him.). Now, that five seconds has cost him another 10 minutes, as she tries to figure out how to really look good.

Housework

Nobody likes to do housework, because of the last four letters of that word: W-O-R-K! One of women's biggest complaints is that their husbands never help out around the house. This is because of the different mentality of men and women. Women want things to look good. Men want things to function. Therefore, women vacuum and dust because they want the house to look nice, while men do not care about those things. Women may wash the bed sheets and blankets, bathtub and sinks, and polish the furniture every two weeks, while men would not even notice that any of those things need to be done for at least six months. Therefore, one reason that men do not do much housework is that they do not see much housework that needs to get done.

Among the housework that they do think needs to get done, there is no point in doing it, because their wives will end up re-doing it anyway. For example, they could load the dishwasher, but the wife would end up taking everything out and re-loading it. The woman says, "Load the dishwasher." To the man, this means: "Dishes are dirty. Put all dirty dishes into the dishwasher. If they fit, close the door, and wash dishes." To the woman, the problem is: "Dishes are dirty. Put them all in the dishwasher so that nothing gets damaged and everything gets cleaned. This involves cleaning off food particles before placing them into the dishwasher, separating out the different types of utensils, and putting the dishes in a certain order in the dishwasher." So, the man puts the dishes in the dishwasher. The woman gets upset that he did not do it right. The man gets upset that she wasted his time, since she was going to do it anyway, and the man never puts the dishes in the dishwasher again.

The same problem occurs with washing clothes. The man shoves them all in the washer, puts detergent in, and off we go. When they are done, he takes all the clothes out of the washer and puts them into the dryer. When they are done, he takes them out of the dryer, puts them away, and he is done. The woman, on the other hand, separates out the clothes so that delicates, whites, and colors are all washed separately. She puts in her pre-determined amount of detergent, not too much and not too little. When the clothes are done washing, she carefully un-

wrinkles all of the clothes, puts them carefully into the dryer, makes sure she puts fabric softener in, and then starts the dryer. Once the clothes are done drying, she takes them out carefully and puts them away in such a way to minimize wrinkling and to organize them in drawers and in the closet so they are put away according to her system. After not following these detailed instructions the first time, the man never washes clothes again.

Therefore, it is not that the man does not want to help his wife out with the housework, it is that he is not allowed to do it his way. Therefore, he mows the lawn instead. The only thing he does in the house is take out the trash, because it is too stinky for his wife to handle. However, he will do that wrong, too. He will end up tracking mud into the house or letting bugs inside. Then, while he is outside, his wife will turn the outside light on so that he can see, even though he does not need the light to see, and he is now embarrassed because the neighbors see him in his pajama bottoms with no shirt on. But, he puts up with it, because at least it is a quick task, and he knows that at least his wife will not take the trash out of the garbage and re-arrange it like she does with the dishes he puts in the dishwasher!

Free Time

Another big problem among couples is how they spend their free time. “Where are we going to go on our annual family vacation?” The man wants to go some place scenic or do something challenging, like hike the Grand Canyon. This is because the man is more interested in having an adventure and feeling like he accomplished something. Plus, he wants to feel like his vacation is worthwhile. Since he thinks of nothing when he gets home, he wants an adventurous vacation. Meanwhile, the woman just wants to go somewhere and relax, probably a beach. Why? Because she is so concerned with house details at home, that she wants a vacation where she does not have to think about anything. She probably wants to go to a beach or a spa so she can make herself feel sexier in the process. So, they compromise by taking the kids to Disneyland.

Occupations

After examining some of these issues between husbands and wives, hopefully, you can see that some occupations are geared more toward men and some are geared more toward women. Doctors and nurses are a great example of this. A man sees the problem as: Man had a heart attack. I need to perform an operation. The woman sees the problem as: The man is in a lot of pain and feels really bad. I need to make him feel better. The man’s response causes him to become a doctor, while the woman’s response causes her to become a nurse.

It is for the same reason that, in general, pilots are men and stewardesses are women; men are managers and women are secretaries; men are engineers and women are planners; and men are scientists and women are lab assistants. We could go on and on with this list, but you get the idea.

Meanwhile, society pays men for their occupations more than they pay women.

This is because men control the money, and they value different things. Men value the brain surgeon over the nurse, the pilot over the stewardess, and the accountant over the secretary. Therefore, the former occupations are paid more than the latter occupations.

Is this fair? No. I am an accountant. One time, there was an important budget hearing, and the secretary was out. So, I had to do the secretary's job. I got it done, but I did it poorly, because my brain does not work in that way. Yes, my job requires more education than the secretary's job, but the fact remains that I was not good at all with the secretary's job. Should women get paid the same as men? No. I understand that this is not fair, but the issue is not what is fair. The issue is going by God's defined roles.

God has made the man to be the head of the woman. If the woman gets paid more, then the man stays at home, while the woman earns the money. The man, then, makes a mess of the house, because he does not care about the details like a woman does. The woman also starts ruling the man, reasoning that she should make the decisions since she does the work outside the home. The result is that the reverse of what God designed is observed.

Saying that a woman should be the leader is like saying that a man should be the one who gets pregnant and has babies. This is not an unfair comparison, because I Timothy 2:12-15 mentions this very thing. Verse 12 says, "But I suffer not a woman to teach, nor to usurp authority over the man, but to be in silence," which shows that a woman is to submit to the authority of the man. Verse 15 gives her some consolation by saying, "Notwithstanding she shall be saved in childbearing, if they continue in faith and charity and holiness with sobriety." In other words, the bad news for the woman is that her desire to rule over her husband is not met, but the good news is that, if she has children and brings them up (I Timothy 5:10) in the ways of the Lord, they will not depart from God (Proverbs 22:6). They will then "save" the woman from the curse of being subject to her husband, instead of bringing her shame (Proverbs 29:15).

With this understanding from I Timothy 2:12-15, if a woman is to usurp authority over the man, then the man is "saved" from being her servant by bearing children. Since only a woman can become pregnant, then men cannot be saved by having children. Therefore, husbands are ALWAYS to have authority over their wives.

Women Controlling Society

Sadly, we do not see men ruling over women today. Ever since the feminist movement, which really gained steam in the 1920s (when most people were first living in cities), women have been gaining ground to the point that they now control society. Whenever women control society, that society will soon be destroyed. Why? Because God made men to control society, not women.

I recognize that, due to the sin nature, most male leaders do not act properly, but at least they are taking the role God has given them. When women lead, the result

is chaos. We will explain this first by starting with marriage.

Back in the country before the city became prevalent in the United States in 1920, men ruled America. If a husband beat his wife and treated her like dirt, the woman was in a terrible predicament. Maybe she could turn to her parents or siblings for help, but they probably were having trouble making ends meet themselves. She could leave her husband, but she probably would not be able to marry again. Also, how would she take care of herself and her children? Therefore, she stayed with her abusive husband. She was miserable, but at least she continued to fulfill her role of being submissive to her husband, **as God commands her to do** (“Wives, submit yourselves unto your own husbands, as unto the Lord” (Ephesians 5:22), because she had no other choice.

However, in the city, the women started getting jobs and making their own money. They started to go to college to find men who would become rich. Therefore, they started tapping into the power of money to create independence. This led to women going to college for their own careers. In 1960, women could readily buy birth-control pills, stating that they are in control of their own bodies, and they will use their bodies for their own pleasure, rather than to give birth. This is in direct violation of God’s Word which says that, at marriage, meaning when two people have sex, the two become one flesh (“Wherefore they are no more twain, but one flesh. What therefore God hath joined together, let not man put asunder” (Matthew 19:6). “The wife hath not power of her own body, but the husband: and likewise also the husband hath not power of his own body, but the wife” (I Corinthians 7:4).). Then, in 1973, women gained the right to kill their unborn children.

As time has gone on, jobs have changed from being labor intensive to being mind intensive, which has put women on an equal playing field with men in getting high paying jobs. Changes in laws have made it easier for women to get the same pay for the same job as men receive. Then, just like with affirmative action, the scales were tipped in favor of women in the workforce, as they can now take family leave and pregnancy leave and not have to worry about losing their jobs for being out for so long.

The result has been that more women graduate from college than men, and they may receive higher paying jobs. This means that women now control the marriage situation. Before, men had the economic control, since they took care of the family financially, yet men still desired to marry women because of the physical beauty that women possess. However, now that women have just as much economic power as men do, men have become useless to them. Sure, women would like a companion in life, but why choose a man for that, since men think differently from women. Also, women, desiring to have children of their own can go to a sperm bank.

This means that, if a man beats up his wife, she can leave him and take care of herself. Not only that, but the woman can now take the leadership role in the relationship. **Today, it is extremely rare to see a man lead his household.** Rather, women lead. Why? Because women care about details, while men only

care about results. Before, a woman had to put up with her husband's decisions, because he had all the money. Now, women think they should make decisions since they earn just as much money as men do. So, now the decision making is said to be equally made by the husband and the wife. However, since the husband does not care about the details and does not want his wife to be angry with him, he will usually do whatever she wants done. Thus, the wife is in charge.

(Maybe this is why Ecclesiastes 7:28 says that Solomon could only find "one man among a thousand," who was upright, "but a woman among all those have I not found.")

Women's Rule Breaks Families Apart

When you understand the different minds of men and women and how the lusts of the flesh generally control everything, it is an interesting phenomenon to observe the shift from men ruling to women ruling. 100 years ago, men ruled over women. When women used the lust of their flesh to try to gain control over men, men beat them into submission. The law was on the side of the men. Thus, women learned to be the silent partner in the marriage. Today, women have gained control over men. When men try to gain the upper hand, women use words to beat the men into submission. The law is on the side of the women. Thus, men have learned to be the silent partner in the marriage. The big difference is that, 100 years ago, most women were stuck in their situation and a woman's mind is geared more toward having children and keeping the family together. Therefore, men and women stayed together in marriage. Today, men are not stuck in marriages. They have the economic ability to make it on their own and their minds are not geared toward sacrificing to keep the family together. Therefore, marriage rates have declined tremendously, and divorce rates are high. It is not that there has been a shift in family values. Rather, there has been a shift in power from men to women, which results in the breakup of families, which is precisely why God made man to rule over the woman. Is it right that he beat up his wife? Absolutely not! Is it right that a wife verbally beat up her husband? Absolutely not! However, God knows that most everyone will live by the lust of their flesh, and, the way God made men's and women's minds makes family living realistic only when the man rules over the woman and not the other way around.

Why Women Spend More Money Than Men Do

A major source of contention between husband and wife is money. On average, women spend more money than men do. The reason women spend more money than men do is because they are concerned about the details more than men are. For example, before, a man might buy a house in a bad neighborhood because that was all he could afford, and he does not care if the neighborhood is bad or not, because he does not care about the details. He just wants a place to live, sleep, and relax. What is going on in his neighborhood makes no difference to him. The woman did not want the bad neighborhood, but she did not have a choice. However, now, the woman is contributing **her** money and so she wants nothing but the best. This will involve going into debt up to their ears, and so the man does

not want to buy such an expensive house. But, if he says anything about it, his wife will get all upset and threaten to leave him and buy a house on her own. Even if she stays with him and even if the slim chance of him buying the house that he wants comes to pass, he will never hear the end of it. She will keep nagging and nagging him about it, because she is concerned with the details, while he is not. Therefore, he will relent and go into debt. This is why America's savings rate has plummeted over the years. From 1950 to 1965, the national savings rate was about 10%. The savings rate continued to decline to the point of a negative savings rate of -2.1% around 2009. It has recovered since then, but is around 2-3% on average now. Why the difference? Because women began to have economic power around the mid-1960s, and they want to spend money in order to have nice things, as opposed to men, who are more practical and are willing to save. (https://www.pqpf.org/chart-archive/0078_Savings-Rate, 2-16-18, "The U.S. National Saving Rate Has Declined Significantly Since the Mid-1960s", accessed January 23, 2019). Thus, women disobey God's command to "owe no man any thing" (Romans 13:8).

Bachelor Party vs. Wedding Costs

If you do not believe that women spend more money than they have a lot more than men do, just compare the average expense for a bachelor party (thrown by men) to the average expense of a wedding (paid for by the bride's parents or by the bride herself)...And the bachelor party probably lasts longer, too! You may say, "The bachelor party is not important, but the wedding is." How is that? Two people are married in the eyes of the law when they go to the courthouse, and the marriage document is signed. The ceremony is just a formality that does not affect the actual marriage.

The wedding ceremony can be likened to graduating from college. I know this, because I have done both. I graduated from college when I passed all of the courses required for graduation. I filled out a form, paid some money to "apply" for graduation, and the college wrote on my official transcript that I had received a bachelor's degree. Thus, I had officially graduated. When I applied for a job that required a bachelor's degree, I sent a copy of my official transcript to my employer, and they said I had graduated. However, my mom wanted to see me don a cap and gown, walk to the front, and have my name announced as being a graduate of the college. So, I participated in the graduation ceremony.

Similarly, when my wife and I decided to get married, we went to the local courthouse, filled out an application, paid a fee, and we were officially married. However, our families wanted to see us don wedding attire, stand in front of them, and have someone declare that we are married. Therefore, just like the college-graduation ceremony was merely a celebration of the fact that I had already graduated from college, the wedding ceremony was merely a celebration of the fact that I was already legally married.

Similarly, a bachelor party is merely one, last celebration of the single life for the man before he marries his wife. Therefore, both the wedding ceremony and the bachelor party are merely celebrations related to the same event—the wedding

ceremony is for the woman and the bachelor party is for the man.

“The average wedding cost in the US is \$33,391.” (*The average wedding cost in America is over \$30,000 — but here’s where couples spend way more than that* by Sarah Jacobs, 4/2/18 on <https://www.businessinsider.com/average-wedding-cost-in-america-most-expensive-2018-3>, accessed January 28, 2019). I could not find costs on an average bachelor party. It seems that a lot of people are turning the bachelor/bachelorette party into a mini-vacation for the guys/girls. In that case, each person pays his own expenses, which, if travelling, would probably be about \$1,500 per person. This is more comparable to honeymoon costs than to weddings. The average wedding cost of \$33,391 does not include travel costs. It only includes the actual costs of the wedding in that location. Therefore, we need to compare the actual cost of a bachelor party in that location. Since I could not find this, I will have to guess. The traditional bachelor party for a guy is held at one of the guy’s apartments, at which the guys get drunk and watch a stripper take her clothes off. I am guessing that the total cost probably would not exceed \$500. **Thus, the average wedding costs 67 times the cost of the average bachelor party.**

Why the difference? Because women care about details, while men do not. The groom is generally not interested in anything related to the wedding, as the bride is generally not interested in anything related to the bachelor party. The bride’s flesh is fed by a fancy party where all the details are just perfect, while the groom’s flesh is fed through booze and a stripper, the details of which are not important, so much so that the groom does not even plan it. His best friend plans it! You will not hear the groom tell the best friend, “I wanted a blonde stripper, not a red-headed stripper,” or “I wanted Coors, not Budweiser.” Yet, you will hear the bride complain about every little detail of her wedding that does not go perfectly, such that she handles all the planning herself or actually hires someone to do all the planning for her. The wedding would never be left up to her best friend! She even chooses ugly dresses for the bridesmaids on purpose so that she will look even more fabulous than they do!

On top of this, the bride immediately dismisses the bachelor party as vile, such that she wants nothing to do with it. Yet, she orders the groom to get a certain tuxedo with certain colors and styles, and the same thing with all of the groomsmen at the wedding ceremony. The groom is dragged along to help choose all of the details of the wedding that he does not care about. On the day of the wedding, he sits in a room all by himself for hours on end, bored out of his mind, as all of the preparations are made apart from him, because he would not do things right (This is the man’s first clue that he is no longer qualified to load the dishwasher.). Then, he waits for hours after the wedding is over before they finally get to leave. The only thing he wanted to do that day was consummate the marriage, and he might not even get to do that on his wedding night because his wife is too tired after all of the wedding festivities! Meanwhile, the money from the wedding ceremony could have been used as a down payment on a house.

Average wedding cost in 1939? \$6,874 in 2018’s dollars (*How much would you spend on your bridal dress? Probably the same as your GREAT-GRANDMOTHER: The surprising history of wedding costs since the 1930s*, by Margot Peppers, 7/3/14, <https://www.dailymail.co.uk/femail/article-2679539/How-did-spend-bridal-dress->

[Probably-GREAT-GRANDMOTHER-The-surprising-history-wedding-costs-1930s.html](#), accessed January 28, 2019). This shows that the average wedding cost, after accounting for inflation, has increased by almost 5 times from 1939 to 2018. Why? Because women have much more control over finances now than they did 80 years ago. And, when women control expenses, costs go up, because they are concerned about details.

Other Cost Increases Thanks to Women

Meat costs have skyrocketed over the last few years. Why? Because recalls are more frequent because women want to make sure no one gets sick.

Health care costs have skyrocketed recently. Why? Because women want their whole family to go to the doctor when they get the sniffles, while men would only go if something major happened to them, if then.

Lawsuits are much more common now-a-days. Why? Because “hell hath no fury like a woman scorned.”

Criminals are not punished as severely as before and are harder to find guilty because women say we need to be nicer. (Ironically, “after decades of stability from the 1920s to the early 1970s, the rate of incarceration in the United States more than quadrupled in the past four decades.” (*The Growth of Incarceration in the United States: Exploring Causes and Consequences*, 2014, <https://www.nap.edu/read/18613/chapter/2>, accessed March 27, 2019) So, women want to get rid of the death penalty because we have to be nicer, yet because they are ruling society when men should be ruling society, the incarceration rates have more than quadrupled.)

Housing prices are much higher than they used to be. Why? Because women want bigger houses with nicer furnishings.

Children are spoiled, and a lot more money is spent on them than before. Why? Because women have more control over spending and the style of discipline used on children.

There is a huge anti-bullying campaign going on in our schools. Bullying has always been a problem, but no one tried to stop it before. Now, Melania Trump, the First Lady of the United States, has made anti-bullying her number-one cause. Why? Because women say, “We need to force everyone to be nice and kind to each other, because that is the best way to act,” while men say, “The bullying will toughen him up, and he will learn how to handle things himself.” In an episode of the Andy Griffith Show, Andy deliberately had Opie stand up to the bully himself (From “Opie and the Bully”, Season 2, Episode 1, originally aired October 2, 1961), while a woman would be at the bully’s parents’ house, demanding they do something about it. Since women are in charge now, our society tries to stop bullying, whereas we did not do that before when men were in charge. (We also see this change in sitcoms. Before, men fulfilled their roles. Now, men are just idiots who tell a stupid punchline every once in a while for laughs, while the women save the day.)

A family used to be able to survive on the husband's salary. Now, they cannot. Why? Because what is considered "necessary" for the family to survive is a lot more than what it used to be, because women are concerned about details and have more say over what the family purchases. So, they purchase more expensive things and deem it necessary for them to work in order to afford the nicer things of life, which are now necessities in a woman-controlled society.

Before, you could say whatever you wanted to, and it would be okay. Now, you can lose your job and people get offended just because of some off-the-cuff remark you made. Why? Because women say that the comment is racist, sexist, or whatever, while, before, men used to laugh about the comment.

Now, you have to make so many decisions about every little thing you do, instead of having no or few options which limit your choices and stress. Why? Because women want everyone to have what they want. When my grandpa took me to the local donut shop when I was a kid, the only options for coffee were regular or decaffeinated, cream, or sugar. Now, "Starbucks has been saying since at least 2006 that it offers 87,000 different drink combinations." (*Starbucks Stays Mum on Drink Math* by Carl Bialik, 4-2-08, <https://blogs.wsj.com/numbers/starbucks-stays-mum-on-drink-math-309/>, accessed May 15, 2019). My grandpa probably would have had a heart attack just trying to order a cup of coffee from them!

Overall, society has become more materialistic, more costly, more stressful, more laborious, more tedious, and harder to function in, all because women are in charge instead of men. Granted, women are not the sole cause of all of these societal changes, but they are the significant driver of them. I am not bad-mouthing women. I am just demonstrating what happens when women abandon their God-given role of servant and usurp authority over man by controlling society.

God Knows Better than We Do

You may also argue that, while things are more complicated today, society is also better as a result. After all, isn't it good to eat untainted meat, have better health, nicer homes, more possessions, and nicer treatment of others? Yes, there are certain benefits to having women run the society. However, the costs outweigh the benefits. How do I know? Because God made men to rule the women. If the benefits, **from a spiritual perspective**, of women running the society outweigh the costs, God would have put women in charge, but He did not. Therefore, we must conclude that it is better for men to be in charge of society than women.

When Israel became a nation by leaving Egypt, God called them "My people" (Exodus 3:10), a nation set "above all people that are upon the face of the earth" (Deuteronomy 7:6). God then gave them rules to show how His people should function. These rules are perfect because God is perfect. In these rules, we see men are always the masters, and women are always the servants. For example, Numbers 30:6-8 says that, if a woman vows something to the Lord, the man has the power to disallow her vow. By contrast, a wife cannot disallow her husband's

vow to the Lord. Why? Because God put the man in charge. This is why I Peter 3:5 says that women show that they are holy by “being in subjection unto their own husbands.” The next verse even praises Sara for calling her husband “lord.” Are there any wives who would refer to their husbands as “lord” today? Probably not! Therefore, **according to God’s definition**, by ruling society, women are not as holy as when men ruled them.

Since God is all knowing and He made women to serve men, then the best role for a woman must be the servant role, and the best role for a man must be the master role. In other words, society must function at a better level in God’s eyes with men ruling women, or else He would not have made men to be the rulers. In fact, God even says so in I Timothy 2:11-14. There, He says, “Let the woman learn in silence with all subjection. But I suffer not a woman to teach, nor to usurp authority over the man, but to be in silence.” Why? “For Adam was first formed, then Eve.” In other words, God made Adam first so that he would be the master of his wife. Then, God’s decision to make the man the master was proven to be the correct because “Adam was not deceived, but the woman being deceived was in the transgression.” In other words, women are more likely to be deceived into sin than men are. This does not mean that women are more despicable than men. It just means that a woman’s mind is more susceptible to being deceived than a man’s mind is, simply based upon how God made minds differently. Therefore, the man is in charge so that he can lead his wife into the right things, instead of being deceived. But, when society puts women in charge, then society is deceived and men go right along with the women in the deception, just like Adam did when Eve usurped authority over him by taking of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil.

Amos 4:1-3 shows women ruling over the religion of Israel. They “say to their masters, Bring, and let us drink.” This is not unlike what we see in Churchianity today. God says that these women leaders “oppress the poor” and “crush the needy.” You may say, “Women are more compassionate upon the poor and needy than men are.” Evidentially, according to God, they are not.

Speaking of which, panhandlers, or those who beg for money, did not exist in California when I was growing up. Now, you cannot get away from them. Why? Because women have “compassion” on them by giving them money. When panhandlers started to become common in southern California, the late Carl Karcher, owner of Carl’s Jr., offered jobs to those people begging for money. They would not take the jobs because they did not want to work when they could get paid even more by begging for money. A man’s solution to poverty is to create work which helps build up the economy. A woman’s solution to poverty is to give money to a person, which tears down the economy by making people lazy. Therefore, a woman’s “compassion” on the poor actually puts them in a worse situation, which is why so many panhandlers exist today, when they were not to be found 40 years ago. Therefore, a woman’s “compassion” often leads to hurting people, not helping them. (This is also seen in adult children, who sponge off of their parents. The father would have kicked them out a long time ago, but the mother has “compassion,” resulting in the kid’s laziness and lack of productivity.)

Women Rulers Are More Corrupt

Since women are more “compassionate” than men, they are also much more likely than men to promote communism and socialism, which have the appearance of helping out the poor and the needy. Yet, these systems create more poor and more needy people, because they take away the incentive to work hard to get ahead in society, because you cannot become rich when what you earn is given to others. This promotes laziness, which means that not as much is produced in society, leading to shortages in all material things, including food, health care, and housing. Therefore, a socialistic society, that appears to help the poor, actually oppresses them, which is why God says that the women of Samaria were oppressing the poor and crushing the needy (Amos 4:1-3).

As stated before, women were made by God to take care of family. They are generally the ones, who raise the kids when the parents divorce and set the rules for the house, because they want to make sure everything is done correctly. This is great when a woman is godly. However, when a woman has the APPEARANCE of compassion, such as with female political leaders, it makes things worse. These women talk about how loving and caring they are with their communist and socialist policies. Yet, behind the scenes, they are absolutely ruthless.

Why? Because women’s crimes are a lot harder to detect than men’s crimes are. In 2010, 0.126% of the United States female population was incarcerated, and 1.352% of the male population was in jail. (<https://www.prisonpolicy.org/graphs/genderinc.html>, accessed March 27, 2019). This means that a man is 10 times more likely to be in prison than a woman is. This is because most murderers, rapists, robbers, and other committers of violent crime are men. The ordinary woman would never think of doing such things because it goes against her gentle nature as protector of the minds of her family. However, if someone tried to harm her child, she would become the most violent person you have ever seen. In other words, because a woman naturally sees herself as the protector of her kids, she “protects” her kids from violence, but she is more than willing to use violence to protect her kids.

Such thinking is how a woman’s mind works in leadership. Now, if a woman becomes a leader in society, she is now the protector of society, which means she will use any means necessary to protect it. Therefore, she will use violence, intolerance, a judgmental attitude, and whatever means necessary for the “common good,” as she defines it. In other words, when a woman abandons her God-given role of servant, she does not handle her leadership role correctly, because God did not make her mind to be a good leader.

An example of this is found in today’s political environment in Washington DC. The book “Obstruction of Justice” talks about perhaps the biggest cover up in US political history. It says that “the Deep State,” primarily in the House of Representatives, is responsible, which implicates both Democrats and Republicans. However, in telling the story of those involved, the book says that “The Democrats portrayed here are scheming, dishonest, and cutthroat; but at least they are good at it....The Republicans, meanwhile, are apathetic, myopic,

gullible, and cowardly.” (*Obstruction of Justice*, 2019, Regnery Publishing by Luke Rosiak, foreword by Newt Gingrich). I believe this is not a party difference, but a gender difference. 87% of the women, who hold seats in the House of Representatives, are Democrats.

(<http://cawp.rutgers.edu/women-us-house-representatives-2019>, accessed March 18, 2019). These women, against God’s command, have been placed in a leadership position in this country, and, as is their nature, they defend their system at all costs. Sure, both the men and the women involved in this scheme were doing evil things, but the women were the ones who were “scheming, dishonest, and cutthroat.” In other words, when a man does evil, he lashes out and moves on. When a woman does evil, she plots and plans it out so that she can get away with more. This means that women are smarter about hiding their evil than men are. God gave women the brains to look at how things are functioning (People call this “women’s intuition.”), and how to get accomplished what they want. When they are godly and have the servant role in the family, they are absolutely wonderful raising their kids (This is why there always seems to be a special bond between a mother and her kids that a father does not have.). However, when they disobey God and take a leadership role in society, they can out-scheme any man, resulting in greater evil from women in leadership, than men in leadership. A couple of Biblical examples will help prove this.

Ahab and Jezebel

Ahab was king of Israel. God said that he “did evil in the sight of the Lord above all that were before him” (I Kings 16:30). That is quite a statement! What made Ahab so evil? The next verse answers this for us. He did more evil than the kings before him because “he took to wife Jezebel the daughter of Ethbaal king of the Zidonians, and went and served Baal, and worshipped him” (I Kings 16:31). In other words, Ahab was the most evil king so far, because his wife led him to greater evil.

An example of the difference between a man’s leadership and a woman’s leadership is seen in Naboth’s vineyard. Ahab wanted the vineyard for himself. Therefore, he offered to buy it from Naboth, but Naboth did not want to sell him the vineyard. So, Ahab got depressed. (I Kings 21:2-4). Jezebel saw his depression, and told him, “I will give thee the vineyard of Naboth the Jezreelite” (I Kings 21:6-7). She then framed Naboth for a crime worthy of death and had him killed (I Kings 21:12-14), and so Ahab took the field from Naboth (I Kings 21:16).

Although Ahab was evil, he still respected the property rights of Naboth. In other words, Ahab did his evil deeds like a normal guy would, but Jezebel used her power to do more evil than what an ordinary woman could do. The reason is because women are more likely to make decisions to protect the structure they are in, while men are more likely to make decisions out of pride. Ahab saw that Naboth would not give him the field, and so he got depressed, because his pride was hurt, thinking that people would willingly do anything he wanted them to do, when that was not the case. Jezebel got upset because she saw Naboth’s refusal as an attack on the structure of Ahab being king. Therefore, she committed murder so that everyone would see that the king could do whatever he wanted to do.

A woman's instinct to protect the structure is a great thing in her servant role. Without this instinct, she would not be able to protect herself or her kids from danger, because a servant is at the bottom of the rung. In other words, no one will come to the aid of a servant. However, in the leadership role, protecting the structure does harm, because decisions are based upon survival, rather than upon what is best, as seen in the example of Ahab and Naboth.

Athaliah & the Queen of Heaven

It is significant to note that the time when Satan came the closest to destroying the seed of Eve so that the Messiah could not be born was due to a woman named Athaliah. "And when Athaliah the mother of Ahaziah [king of Judah] saw that her son was dead, she arose and destroyed all the seed royal....And Athaliah did reign over the land." Only one young boy from the royal seed survived, and that was because another woman hid him from her (II Kings 11:1-3).

You may wonder, "How did Athaliah do that? After all, wouldn't some other man take the king's place?" II Chronicles 22:3-4 says that Athaliah was Ahaziah's "counseller to do wickedly. Wherefore he did evil in the sight of the Lord like the house of Ahab: for they were his counsellors after the death of his father to his destruction." "They" would be those of the house of Ahab. Remember that Ahab did more evil than all kings before him, and the reason was because of his wife, Jezebel. Due to Jezebel, Ahab "went and served Baal, and worshipped him. And he reared up an altar for Baal in the house of Baal, which he had built in Samaria. And Ahab made a grove" (I Kings 16:31-33).

If you look up a picture of Baal in the Encyclopedia Britannica online, you will see a picture of a god with horns and pointy ears, not unlike typical pictures of Satan. Baal was even known in some cultures as "Lord of the Heavens" (<https://www.britannica.com/topic/Baal-ancient-deity>, accessed March 21, 2019). He is called "Baal-zebub the god of Ekron" in II Kings 1:2, which is significant because the Pharisees accused Jesus of casting out devils "by Beelzebub the prince of the devils" (Matthew 12:24) and Jesus associated Beelzebub with Satan (Matthew 12:26). Therefore, the Bible supports the idea that Baal is another name for Satan.

II Chronicles 24:7 says, "For the sons of Athaliah, that wicked woman, had broken up the house of God; and also all the dedicated things of the house of the Lord did they bestow upon Baalim."

With all of this information in mind, we can conclude that, the reason that I Kings 16:33 says that "Ahab did more to provoke the LORD God of Israel to anger than all the kings of Israel that were before him" is because, by setting up Baal worship in Israel, he caused Israel to worship Satan directly. With Satanic worship being in Israel, Satanic religion would follow right along with it. Baal was also known as the god of fertility (<https://www.britannica.com/topic/Baal-ancient-deity>, accessed March 21, 2019). In order to have babies, the god of fertility would have to have a goddess of fertility, and she ends up being the queen of heaven. Therefore, Satan's religion also involves

worshipping “the queen of heaven.” Jeremiah 44:17-19 shows that is exactly what Judah ended up doing, just before going into Babylonian captivity. Since pagan religions of the time saw the king as god, it is logical for a woman to be an embodiment of the queen of heaven. Note that Judges 2:13 says about Israel, “And they forsook the LORD, and served Baal and Ashtaroth.” In other words, they served Satan and the queen of heaven.

Susan Ackerman, in her article, “The Queen Mother and the Cult in Ancient Israel”, says, “As the human mother of the king the queen mother could be perceived as the earthly counterpart of [Ashtaroth], the king’s heavenly mother. The queen mother might even be considered the human representative, even surrogate, of [Ashtaroth]” (*Ackerman, Susan. “The Queen Mother and the Cult in Ancient Israel.” Journal of Biblical Literature 112, no. 3 (Autumn 1993), pages 385-401*, <http://www.academicroom.com/article/queen-mother-and-cult-ancient-israel>, accessed March 21, 2019).

This is why II Chronicles 22:3 says that Athaliah was Ahaziah’s “counseller to do wickedly.” As the king’s mother, she was seen as the human representative of the queen of heaven. This is why she was the counseller, who led Ahaziah in Baal worship (II Chronicles 24:7). Therefore, when Ahaziah died, Athaliah was seen as the ruler of the land, even though she was a woman, which is how she was able to give the command for the seed royal to be destroyed. Thus, not only did God command that a woman is not “to usurp authority over the man, but to be in silence” (I Timothy 2:12), but Satan’s religion involves a woman ruling over people. In fact, that is what we see in Revelation 17. Satan’s religion is called, “MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH” (Revelation 17:5). This religious system is described as being “the great whore that sitteth upon many waters” (Revelation 17:1), and “the waters which thou sawest, where the whore sitteth, are peoples, and multitudes, and nations, and tongues” (Revelation 17:15), such that she “reigneth over the kings of the earth” (Revelation 17:18). The reason is because the woman is the one “with whom the kings of the earth have committed fornication, and the inhabitants of the earth have been made drunk with the wine of her fornication” (Revelation 17:2).

The way I see it is that Satan got Eve to sin, trying to become like god herself. This makes her representative of religion. “Adam was not deceived, but the woman being deceived was in the transgression” (I Timothy 2:14). Satan then uses the woman, spiritually speaking, to lead the whole world astray. Therefore, just by the mere fact that God made man to rule over woman and Satan has woman rule over man, via his religion, should be enough evidence, in and of itself, to keep women away from ruling society.

(As a side note, this also explains why women are usually nice to your face but may talk bad about you behind your back. This is not them being mean, but it is them protecting the system. By being nice to your face, their relationship with you is good, and, by talking about you behind your back, their relationship with others is good, too. Thus, they keep everyone happy and everything running as it should, provided people do not find out what you say about them behind their back.)

Bugs and Ruling Society

A good illustration of how men rule society vs. how women rule society is by looking at how the different genders treat bugs. If a man sees a bug in his house, it probably does not “bug” him, but he will get rid of it by killing it. Problem solved. However, if his wife sees a bug in their house, she immediately starts freaking out. She does not want to touch the bug because that would be gross. So, she calls her husband to take care of the situation. She does not want him to kill it because there would be bug guts to clean up, which is even grosser than a live bug. She also has compassion on the bug, not wanting to hurt it. So, now she instructs her husband to catch the bug, do not hurt it, carry it outside, and set it free. There are a couple of problems with this. First, it is harder to catch a bug than it is to kill it. The result may be that the bug goes free while the husband is trying to get it out of the house. Now, the bug roams free inside the house, and you do not know where it is. Even if you do catch the bug, not harm it, and release it outside, it can get back inside the house. It will also probably reproduce, and its offspring will get back into the house. Therefore, by following “the humane way,” you actually created a bigger problem.

Similarly speaking, there are many “bugs” in society that God said, due to sin, should be killed. God declares that the following are sins for which man should be killed:

- Killing someone (Numbers 35:30-31)
- Being in possession of a stolen slave (Exodus 21:16)
- Killing children in idol worship (Leviticus 20:2-3)
- Being a witch or a wizard (Leviticus 20:6,27)
- Cursing father or mother (Leviticus 20:9)
- Committing adultery and several other sexual sins (Leviticus 20:10-16)
- Working on the sabbath (Exodus 31:14-15; Numbers 15:32-36)
- Not killing your unruly ox that just killed someone (Exodus 21:29)
- Blaspheming the Lord’s name (Leviticus 24:16)
- Going before the Lord without being a priest (Numbers 3:10)
- Being a false prophet (Deuteronomy 13:1-5)
- Not hearkening to the Lord (Joshua 1:18)

In America in the 1800s, if a court declared someone to be killed, he would immediately be brought to the gallows behind the courthouse and killed. Now, it is rare that anyone is given the death penalty. If he is, it takes at least 20 years of appeals before the person is killed. Why? Because women have gotten involved in the justice system. Men, in the 1800s, executed killers immediately. Now, women protest the killing of death-row inmates, thinking that all life is precious. The result is that many killers get away with what they did, and the whole society is given over to evil. Ecclesiastes 8:11 is fulfilled before our very eyes. “Because sentence against an evil work is not executed speedily, therefore the heart of the sons of men is fully set in them to do evil.” This is because women have taken over, and like with the bugs, they say, “Oh, don’t hurt the man. Yes, he did bad

things, but he can be reformed.” NO! God says to kill them, and that is what we should do. God specifically says, “Ye shall take no satisfaction for the life of a murderer, which is guilty of death: but he shall be surely put to death” (Numbers 35:31). Why? Because it is a greater compassion to kill someone worthy of death so you can rid the land of evil (“That prophet...shall be put to death....So shalt thou put the evil away from the midst of thee” (Deuteronomy 13:5).), as opposed to letting the evil continue and spread in society (“Know ye not that a little leaven leaveneth the whole lump? Purge out therefore the old leaven, that ye may be a new lump, as ye are unleavened” (I Corinthians 5:6-7).). In other words, just like a bug needs to be killed so it does not bug you any more, God’s laws for a nation should be followed so that evil does not grow in a land.

God, in His wisdom, has declared what laws are worthy of death, and God, in His wisdom, has declared that men should rule over women, or else these laws will not be enforced to the degree necessary. This is why both Proverbs 21:9 and 25:24 say, “It is better to dwell in a corner of the housetop, than with a brawling woman in a wide house.” (A brawling woman is a woman who loudly disputes something with angry words.) In other words, it is better to execute swift judgment against sinful man, such that you have a peaceful corner of a housetop, than to put a woman in charge and let all criminals go; thereby, creating “a wide house” of iniquity. (We need to note that it is up to nations to set rules and declare judgment against people. It is not up to individuals to do this.)

Again, I am NOT attacking women or thinking that they are somehow less important than men are. Rather, I am recognizing the God-given role of men to rule over women. **When women rule over men in a society, that society is doomed to fail, just like man is doomed to fail when he rebels against God’s rule over him.** (I Corinthians 11:3 “But I would have you know, that the head of every man is Christ; and the head of the woman is the man; and the head of Christ is God.”)

CHAPTER 9

Unusual Sexual Situations

Unmarried Women

You may say, “A wife being subject to her husband is fine, but what about an unmarried woman?” The way God designed things is that children are the property of their parents. When a father declares a boy to be an adult (Galatians 4:1-2), he is his own boss and can seek a wife, if he wants to.

However, a woman, because she is to be the servant of a man, is always the property of another man. She does not have independence. If she remains unmarried, she is the property of her father. We see this in Paul’s statement that “if any man think that he behaveth himself uncomely toward his virgin, if she pass the flower of her age, and need so require, let him do what he will, he sinneth not: let them marry. Nevertheless he that standeth stedfast in his heart, having no necessity, but hath power over his own will, and hath so decreed in his heart that he will keep his virgin, doeth well. So then he that giveth her in marriage doeth well; but he that giveth her not in marriage doeth better” (I Corinthians 7:36-38). Note how the decision, of whether or not the woman gets married, is up to her father. This is because a woman is the property of her father, until she gets married. Then, if she gets married, she is the property of her husband, as Romans 7:2 says, “For the woman which hath an husband is bound by the law to her husband so long as he liveth; but if the husband be dead, she is loosed from the law of her husband.”

This means that if her father has the desire and the economic ability to keep his daughter unmarried, she is to remain in his house and continue to serve him as long as he is alive. Of course, society does not operate like this today. This means that, if an unmarried woman’s father will not take care of her all of her life nor will he find a husband for her, she can make her own decision. According to I Corinthians 7:39-40, she will be happier if she remain unmarried, because she will not have trouble in the flesh with a husband (I Corinthians 7:28). However, in today’s society, she probably should get married, because the society is so sex-charged that it may be impossible for her to live an unmarried life without sexual burning. (“It is better to marry than to burn” (I Corinthians 7:9).)

We also see this in Paul’s statement that, if a woman is widowed, she is to get re-married if she is under 60 years old (I Timothy 5:9-14). Otherwise, her children or nephews should take care of her (I Timothy 5:4). Note that the Bible never tells a woman to get a job, because women should serve the men who own them, and the men should, in turn, take care of them. Therefore, if a father will not take care of his unmarried daughter, she needs to get married to a man who will take care of her.

You may say, “Times have changed. A woman can take care of herself. She does not need a man.” If you say that, you are missing the point. We are not asking, “What CAN a woman do?” Rather, we are asking, “What does God WANT a woman to do?” The answer is that God wants her to serve Him. If she does not burn sexually, she can better serve God being unmarried. If she does burn sexually, she

can better serve God by getting married.

Now, regarding working outside the home for women, you may ask, “What about the case today that, due to the high cost of living, both the husband and the wife need to work outside of the home just to pay the bills?” I would say that, in most cases, this is not true. It is just that people have this idea that they need things that they really can live without. Expensive cell phones, cable television, new cars, big houses, health insurance, eating at restaurants, and many other things, that are said to be needed, are not really necessities. If a family can forego those things and survive on just the husband’s salary, they should do that. If they still cannot afford to live on the husband’s salary, they may be able to move out in the country or to a less expensive city in order for the wife to stay at home.

This is not to say that no women should ever work outside the home. It may be that, due to the course of this world, it is necessary for a woman to work outside the house. This could be due to the man responsible for her, whether it be her father or her husband, shirking on his responsibility, or it could be the corruptness of society that forces her to work outside the home.

However, the greed of society is such that many women today would not even consider staying at home to obey their husbands, be “keepers at home” (Titus 2:5), and “guide the house” (I Timothy 5:14). My point is that families should seek to do things God’s way, if possible, and God’s way is for the woman to serve the man who owns her, whether it be her father or her husband. In the language of I Peter 3:6, this man is her “lord.”

By the way, we previously mentioned that women are now ruling society, resulting in chaos. The reason for this is the failure by our society to recognize that a woman is the property of a man. In the country, a girl was the property of her father. She stayed with her father until she got married. She then became the property of her husband. Therefore, she always recognized that she was to submit to a man. However, today in the city, girls are taught that they can do whatever boys can do. They can be their own boss, get their own job, and support themselves without the help of a man. Therefore, girls are treated just like boys are treated. In other words, they go to school, go to college, work at a job, and support themselves. As a kid, instead of answering to their fathers, they answer to their mothers, their school teachers, and their peers. As an adult, they answer to their peers, their friends, and their employers. Girls/women are no longer treated as servants, but they are treated as equals. When they move out of their parents’ home, it is not to serve their husbands, but it is to make it on their own. In other words, girls/women are never taught to submit to a man. Since they are not taught their proper role of serving a man, they think they are their own boss. Therefore, when they get married, they think they have just as much right to boss their husbands as the husbands do to boss their wives. This means that, whoever desires to be the boss, is the one who will be the boss. Since women naturally desire to be the boss over men, and not the other way around (Genesis 3:16), wives become the bosses of their husbands, and women control society today.

Polygamy

Nearly all Christians will tell you that polygamy is wrong. They would say that, if you were sleeping with a mistress, you should either go back to your first wife and never see the mistress again, or divorce the first wife and marry the mistress. Those are seen as the only two options that a Christian should do. However, these options are based upon what culture and religion has placed upon us, not what God's Word says.

First, we should note that, if the mistress is another man's wife, you have committed adultery, and God says that you and your mistress should be killed for doing so. ("And the man that committeth adultery with another man's wife, even he that committeth adultery with his neighbour's wife, the adulterer and the adulteress shall surely be put to death" (Leviticus 20:10).) Of course, just like with sodomy, death for adultery does not happen today. Therefore, the solution is for the man and his mistress not to have anything to do with each other, and for both of them to go back to their respective spouses, if they will have them back. If they will not give up their adulterous relationship, they are to be kicked out of the church (I Corinthians 5:1-5).

However, if the mistress is not married to anyone else, God says that she is now married to the man in God's eyes. ("What? know ye not that he which is joined to an harlot is one body? for two, saith he, shall be one flesh" (I Corinthians 6:16).) This means that the man now has two wives and is responsible for taking care of both of them. This means that the man should have both women live with him, and he should treat both equally as his wives.

Now, in this day and age, women have economic power to live on their own, and women, unless they have been brainwashed, find it abhorrent that their husbands would be sleeping with another woman besides them. (Even the women in polygamous cults do not want to share their husband with another woman.) Therefore, in most cases of a wife and a mistress, one, if not both of the women, would leave the man, which eliminates the problem. Such a man should then realize his problem with sexual sin and never get involved with it again, unless he burns. Then, "it is better to marry than to burn" (I Corinthians 7:9).

Now, from the woman's perspective, I recognize that a woman would be abhorred by living with her husband who is also living with another woman who is also his wife. However, by having sex with a man, she has now committed her life to him, regardless of what he has done or will do in the future. (Most women sleep with married men for the thrill of it or to get them to leave their wives for them. Again, this is not what God says should happen.) Therefore, she is obligated to stay with him for life. Chances are that her husband and her husband's other wife would not agree. So, again, this solves the problem.

Either way, based upon the values of the culture we are in and the economic power of both men and women to make their own living, it would be rare that a man would live together with his multiple wives today. Still, this is what God

would want to happen, since the man and his wives have made lifetime commitments to each other.

Again, I know that what I have written sounds crazy, because Churchianity does not teach it. However, the Bible does, as seen in the following examples.

Jacob

“Jacob loved Rachel” and made an agreement with Laban, her father, to work for him for seven years in order to marry Rachel (Genesis 29:18-20). Everyone knew the arrangement. However, Laban gave Leah to Jacob, and Jacob had sex with her that night, thinking that she was Rachel (Genesis 29:23-24). The next morning, Jacob discovered it was Leah, and Jacob made a new agreement to work for Laban for another seven years in order to marry Rachel. After seven days, Laban gave Rachel to Jacob to be his wife, and Jacob worked for Laban for an additional seven years. Therefore, Jacob married Leah one day and married her sister seven days later (Genesis 29:25-30).

Now, there are two, very important points to learn from this story so far. First, as we have stated before, sex = marriage. If there was ever an excuse to get out of a marriage, Jacob had a good one. He thought he was having sex with Rachel, but he was really having sex with Leah. In America, the marriage between Jacob and Leah would simply be annulled. It was a case of mistaken identity, and so no one would blame Jacob for getting rid of Leah and marrying Rachel. After all, he worked seven years to marry Rachel, and he accidentally had sex with Leah. Yet, God still saw Jacob and Leah as being married, even if it was accidental. (You might say that this is how a woman “rapes” a man, not by force, but by trickery.) There was no way out of it, even though Jacob had been tricked. Therefore, sex = marriage, even if it is accidental sex!

Second, God does not view polygamy as a sin. God honored Jacob’s marriage to Leah by opening her womb and giving her children (Genesis 29:31). Later, God honored Jacob’s marriage to Rachel by giving her children (Genesis 30:22). In fact, Genesis 32:22 specifically says that Jacob “took his two wives,” which shows that God recognized that Jacob had two wives.

Having said this, just because God allows polygamy, it does not mean it is a good idea. I Corinthians 7:28 says that, when a man and a woman are married, “such shall have trouble in the flesh.” This is because men and women think differently. Therefore, even in a perfect, marriage scenario, there will still be arguments, misunderstandings, and hurt feelings between a husband and a wife. Now, if you throw a second wife into the mix, your problems are GREATLY multiplied.

I Corinthians 7:4 says, “The wife hath not power of her own body, but the husband: and likewise also the husband hath not power of his own body, but the wife.” So, if a husband has two wives, the two women will fight over the husband’s body. This is exactly what we see happening with Leah and Rachel. Jacob loved Rachel and hated Leah (Genesis 29:18,31). This was a bad situation for Leah. So,

the Lord opened Leah's womb, while Rachel was barren (Genesis 29:31). The result was that Rachel had one thing that Leah wanted (Jacob's love), and Leah had one thing that Rachel wanted (Jacob's children). The result was constant fighting. Leah bore four sons, thinking after each one's birth that she would finally have her husband's love because of her children (Genesis 29:31-35). Apparently, this worked, at least to some extent, because it caused Rachel to tell Jacob, "Give me children, or else I die" (Genesis 30:1), as if Jacob had any control over Rachel's ability to have a child! Rachel's "solution" was for Jacob to have sex with Rachel's handmaid and have a child by her (Genesis 30:3-5). This worked, but it resulted in (Genesis 30:9-10) Leah giving her handmaid to have a child with Jacob, as well. Now, Jacob has four wives, instead of two, just because Rachel used Jacob's body to have kids by another woman! So, Jacob's polygamy, which is not even his fault, results in greater polygamy.

Moreover, there is a fight between Rachel and Leah over Jacob. Rachel wants children by Jacob, and Leah wants love from Jacob. So, Rachel buys mandrakes from Leah's son, Reuben, in hopes that they will make her fertile (children), in exchange for letting Leah have sex with Jacob (love). Leah even tells Jacob, "Thou must come in unto me; for surely I have hired thee with my son's mandrakes" (Genesis 30:16)! (Who says that the Bible is G-rated?) This is the kind of fighting that results from polygamy. Personally, I have enough trouble trying to make my wife happy. I certainly would not want to try to make two women happy!

As shown in Jacob's example, polygamy is condoned by God, but it is not the preferred way of living.

We will now look at an example to see how twisted society's view is when it comes to polygamy.

Warren Jeffs vs. Seinfeld

Warren Jeffs is/was president of a polygamist sect of Mormonism. He is currently serving a life sentence in prison due to sex with minors, both by himself and his followers. "Former church members claim that Jeffs himself has 70 wives" (https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Warren_Jeffs, accessed February 19, 2019). As strange as it sounds, if all he did was marry 70 women, but he took care of all 70 of them, he has committed no crime in God's eyes. (Warren Jeffs has done many evils for which he should have been executed, but we are only examining his teaching of polygamy.)

Meanwhile, one of the most popular television shows of the 1990s, Seinfeld, had Jerry sleeping "with 73 different partners throughout the show's tenure" ("*How Did Frasier And Seinfeld Manage To Sleep With So Many Women: An Investigation*" by Will, 4-25-17, <https://postgradproblems.com/how-did-frasier-and-seinfeld-manage-to-sleep-with-so-many-women-an-investigation/>, accessed February 19, 2019).

Now, I understand that Seinfeld is a fictional character, while Warren Jeffs is a real person, but this makes it even worse, because it means that Seinfeld's sexual activities were entirely controlled by the show. They could have made him a virgin,

but they chose to make him sexually promiscuous instead. The Jerry character essentially married 73 women by having sex with them, but not once did he take responsibility for taking care of any of them. Meanwhile, the public, as a whole, loved Seinfeld and saw nothing morally wrong with his behavior.

By contrast, Warren Jeffs took care of his 70 wives, and the public is outraged that he had so many wives. This shows how backward society's thinking is on this. God says that you can have multiple wives, just as long as you take care of all of them. A man does this (Warren Jeffs), and he is seen as a very sick, twisted, immoral person. Yet, the Seinfeld character has the same number of sex partners, does not take care of any of them, and the world looks up to him! So, sleeping with 70 women is fine with Americans, just as long as a man sleeps with one, ends the relationship, has nothing to do with the woman ever again, and then sleeps with another woman. However, if the man actually marries all of them and takes care of them, he is somehow a sexual pervert!

The reason for this dichotomy in thinking is that man desires to fulfill the lusts of his flesh. If "casual sex" is okay, then man can sleep with as many partners as he desires. If he has to marry each partner, he cannot afford to do so. Therefore, man condemns someone who marries all of his sex partners, while it celebrates someone who sleeps around, because sleeping around fulfills the lusts of the flesh. If man points the finger at the polygamist, then he can be just in his own eyes because he follows his own man-made rules; thereby, removing his guilt feeling for following the lusts of the flesh. So, we make it illegal to have multiple wives, but not illegal for having multiple sex partners, which is really the same thing, only worse! Also, taking care of the women you have sex with shows that the woman becomes the property of her husband. In other words, polygamy shows the responsibility behind sex, as opposed to just "having fun." Society is so removed from the concept of sex equaling marriage, that it condemns those who believe God, while it glorifies those who disobey God in this area.

Why God Sanctions Polygamy

Why does God allow polygamy in the first place? Because it is the choice that man makes. God is big on roles. A wife should not share the gospel with her husband, because she is supposed to submit to her husband's leadership. ("Likewise, ye wives, be in subjection to your own husbands; that, if any obey not the word, they also may without the word be won by the conversation of the wives" (I Peter 3:1).) Similarly, a man is supposed to take care of every unmarried woman he sleeps with because, by sleeping with her, he makes a lifetime commitment to take care of her. Therefore, even though the commitment is bad, in that it takes him away from serving God, he still must uphold his commitment, resulting in polygamy. Also, note that we hear of men being polygamists, not women. This is because man's nature is to have sex based upon the outward appearance, more so than women, because his body is not made to have a baby. Also, the man has the ability, in general, to control situations financially. A woman's nature, more so than a man's nature, is to be loyal to the man she sleeps with, as opposed to immediately seeking another partner, since her mind tells her that sex creates

families, even if the birth-control pill she takes does not go along with this.

Also, it is the man who is to leave his mother and father and be joined to his wife (Genesis 2:24). The woman does not need to be told to do this, because it is in her nature to stay with one man. This is also why more women are born than men, although following God's laws about sex would even this out (Leviticus 12:2-5 teaches that, under the Mosaic law, a woman is unclean for 40 days after bearing a son but for 80 days after bearing a daughter. This means that women, who bear sons, should have sex more often than women, who bear daughters; thus, evening out the number of boys and girls being born.). This is also why Romans 1:26-27 mentions the "natural USE" of the woman, i.e., women are used by men for sex. That may make men look bad, so we need to counter this by saying that women use men for money. I think it is funny that prostitution is illegal in most countries, because all sexual relationships between men and women are a form of prostitution. Having sex with a prostitute and leaving her right afterward is much cheaper than actually taking care of the woman for the rest of your life! That is why it is illegal, because prostitution ruins women's chances of men having to make a MUCH, MUCH greater financial commitment by taking care of her for the rest of her life. Sex with a prostitute may cost \$100 a pop, but sex with your wife is much more expensive in the long run, due to women's attention to detail, as we mentioned earlier.

Example:

Wife: "We need to have a couch."

Husband: "Why? If I want to sit, I will use a chair. If I want to lie down, I will use a bed."

Wife: "A couch is good when we have guests over."

Husband: "Yes, that is why I DON'T want a couch!"

When you calculate the greater monetary cost of having a wife and divide it by the number of times you have sex, the cost will come out to be much higher than having sex with a prostitute.

Therefore, God says, "Ok. You want to fulfill the lusts of your flesh by sleeping with multiple women. That's fine. Due to the hardness of your heart, I will allow it. However, since sex equals marriage, you are now responsible for taking care of each of these women. If you thought that taking care of one woman was costly, how much costlier will it be to take care of multiple women!"

Man does not like this. Therefore, man makes up his own rules by saying that God does not allow polygamy. This greatly reduces the financial cost right off the bat. Then, man says that multiple sex partners is fine as long as two committed relationships do not overlap each other. So, I can have sex with one woman multiple times, get tired of her, dump her, find another woman, have sex with her as much as I want, get tired of her, dump her, and continue this process for the rest of my life, and this is somehow okay in man's eyes! Yet, if a different man marries a woman, takes care of her, has sex with her, and then does the exact same thing with another woman at the exact same time, this is somehow wrong?

This is the ole' bait and switch. In other words, if I point my finger at the latter and say it is sin, then I can justify my own sin by committing the former, which is much less expensive with a lot less problems. Therefore, I make up a sin—committed polygamy—so that I can cover up a real sin—uncommitted polygamy. In so doing, I get rid of my guilty conscience and get to “work all uncleanness with greediness” (Ephesians 4:19). This is what the Bible calls: “their thoughts the mean while accusing or else excusing one another” (Romans 2:15). That is, people excuse their own sins by accusing others of sin.

Having said that, just because God sanctions polygamy does not mean that it is something we should do. After all, as Christians, our lives are hid with Christ in God (Colossians 3:3). We should allow Christ to live in us (Galatians 2:20) so that others may be saved and come unto the knowledge of the truth (I Timothy 2:4). “What? know ye not that your body is the temple of the Holy Ghost which is in you, which ye have of God, and ye are not your own? For ye are bought with a price: therefore glorify God in your body, and in your spirit, which are God’s” (I Corinthians 6:19-20). In other words, we are saved, not to fulfill the lusts of the flesh, but to mortify the deeds of the flesh (Colossians 3:5), and “put on therefore, as the elect of God, holy and beloved, bowels of mercies, kindness, humbleness of mind, meekness, longsuffering” (Colossians 3:12). In other words, our question should not be: “What will God let me get away with?” Rather, our question should be: “How can I bring glory to God?”

When the latter is our question, we find that polygamy should not even be considered. There are two, main reasons for this: 1) Polygamy gets us down the slippery slope of sexual sin, and 2) The more women you are one with, the more likely they will lead you away from serving God. The former reason will be illustrated by looking at David, and the latter reason will be shown by looking at his son, Solomon.

David

The reason that polygamy gets us down the slippery slope of sexual sin is because the polygamist receives sexual pleasure from multiple women. David is an example of this. The Bible mentions eight of David’s wives by name (II Samuel 3:14; II Chronicles 3:1-5), and II Samuel 5:13 says that he “took him more concubines and wives out of Jerusalem.” Therefore, David was married to many more women than just the eight.

God never punished David for marrying any of these women, because David took care of them, as he was obligated to do because he had had sex with them. However, there was one woman that David married that God had a problem with, and that was Bathsheba. This is because she was already married to Uriah. Now, here is David, a man after God’s own heart (I Samuel 13:14), and he goes against God’s heart by committing adultery in having sex with Bathsheba. Why did David commit adultery when he already had multiple wives? For sexual pleasure.

“He saw a woman washing herself; and the woman was very beautiful to look upon. And David sent and inquired after the woman. And one said, Is not this Bath-sheba, the daughter of Eliam, the wife of Uriah the Hittite? And David sent messengers, and took her; and she came in unto him, and he lay with her; for she was purified from her uncleanness: and she returned unto her house” (II Samuel 11:2-4). In other words, David saw her nakedness, found it attractive, and wanted the pleasure of having sex with her. Once he found that he could get away with it, he had sex and got rid of her. When she was pregnant with his son (II Samuel 11:5), David covered it up by murdering her husband (II Samuel 11:15). “The thing that David had done displeased the Lord” (II Samuel 11:27).

If David only had one wife, would he have committed adultery and murdered? We do not know, but we can say that, because David had multiple wives and concubines, he was used to having sex with attractive women whenever he wanted to. This means that, if David wanted to have sex with a wife and she said, “I don’t feel good. How about tomorrow?” David could say, “No problem. I will have sex with another wife.” On the other hand, if David was only married to one woman and she did not feel good, he would go that night without having sex. This means that David was not used to curbing his sexual appetite like a monogamist is. Therefore, he was more likely to commit adultery. (Polygamy also goes against a woman’s nature, straining the relationship between a wife and her husband.)

This is why God said that a king “shall [not] multiply wives to himself, that his heart turn not away” (Deuteronomy 17:17). This is also why today, in the body of Christ, bishops and deacons are to be “the husband of one wife” (I Timothy 3:2,12; Titus 1:6). Furthermore, a bishop is to be “one that ruleth well his own house, having his children in subjection with all gravity; (For if a man know not how to rule his own house, how shall he take care of the church of God?)” (I Timothy 3:4-5). It is hard enough to get one wife to obey you, since her desire is to rule over the husband (Genesis 3:16). Getting two wives to obey you is probably a near impossibility, as seen earlier by Jacob’s troubles. Therefore, God views a polygamist as someone who is not able to control his sexual desires, nor is he able to rule his family, which makes him unfit to be a leader in the church.

Solomon

We will now look at Solomon to illustrate the point that polygamy leads men away from serving God. We just quoted Deuteronomy 17:17 that a king was not to multiply wives to himself, because the wives would turn his heart away from God. The rest of this verse says, “Neither shall he greatly multiply to himself silver and gold.” While there is nothing wrong with having money, when your aim is to multiply money to yourself, you stop serving God and start serving yourself.

Similarly speaking, if you pursue multiple women, your heart will be toward women, rather than toward God. Even if you marry all godly women, the polygamist will still have a heart turned toward sexual pleasure and women, rather than having a heart turned toward God. Just like with money, the problem is not the women, but the problem is the pursuit of multiple women, which means

that you are being led by the lusts of your flesh, rather than being led by the Spirit.

Paul says that it is best not to get married, if you can keep from sexual burning (I Corinthians 7:7-9). The reason is because “he that is unmarried careth for the things that belong to the Lord, how he may please the Lord: But he that is married careth for the things that are of the world, how he may please his wife” (I Corinthians 7:32-33). Since a man’s mind operates differently from a woman’s mind, figuring out how to please your wife is a difficult, time-consuming task for a man. (Honestly, most men rarely try.) Now, add to this needing to please 2, 3, or even 4 women, and you will find that there is no time left to serve the Lord.

Moreover, if you have wives, who are not godly, you face an even greater difficulty. This is the problem that Solomon faced. Early on, “Solomon loved the Lord” (I Kings 3:3). As time went on, Solomon “had seven hundred wives, princesses, and three hundred concubines: and his wives turned away his heart. For it came to pass, when Solomon was old, that his wives turned away his heart after other gods: and his heart was not perfect with the LORD his God, as was the heart of David his father. For Solomon went after Ashtoreth the goddess of the Zidonians, and after Milcom the abomination of the Ammonites. And Solomon did evil in the sight of the LORD, and went not fully after the LORD, as did David his father” (I Kings 11:3-6). Thus, we see that polygamy is a symptom of the problem of pursuing after sexual pleasure, rather than after God, resulting in turning away and serving other gods.

Now, it may seem incomprehensible to you that Solomon had 700 wives and 300 concubines. However, when you consider the sexual promiscuity of today, the hundreds of thousands of sexual images that we are bombarded with over our lifetimes, and the fact that you commit adultery, not with the physical act but at the time you lust after a woman in your heart (Matthew 5:28), it is probably not far from the truth to proclaim that many people today have over 1,000 sexual partners in their lifetimes, as well! This is why God gives the charge: “Let thy fountain be blessed: and rejoice with the wife of thy youth. Let her be as the loving hind and pleasant roe; let her breasts satisfy thee at all times; and be thou ravished always with her love. And why wilt thou, my son, be ravished with a strange woman, and embrace the bosom of a stranger?” (Proverbs 5:18-20). But, how do you get away from multiple sexual partners today, when half naked women parade before you and you cannot get away from them since you cannot go through life with your eyes closed? Perhaps this is one of the main factors in God finally putting an end to this world. How far will it have to go before the end is reached? Sexual sin brought down the world in Noah’s day (Genesis 6:1-5), and it brought down Sodom and Gomorrah in Lot’s day (Genesis 19:4-5). It will also bring down the world at Jesus’ second coming (Luke 17:26-30).

CHAPTER 10

Reprobate Sodomites

Sodomy

Now, let's take a step back from the end of the world and talk about sodomy, because it has become prevalent in our society today. Therefore, it is vital for us to understand.

Since people are so far removed into their fantasy worlds now, they have abandoned marriages for companionship, family, stability, and love, and have traded them in for lust and sexual pleasure. If pleasure is all you want, then sodomy is a much better solution than sex with the opposite sex. In, "The Death of Right and Wrong," Tammy Bruce, who happens to practice sodomy herself, mentions that the sodomites she knows brag about their hundreds of sexual encounters that they have per year. This is corroborated by a study that "reports that the average [sodomite] has between 20 and 106 partners per year. The average [straight person] has 8 partners in a lifetime."

<https://www.traditioninaction.org/HotTopics/a02rStatistics.html>, "Everyone Should Know These Statistics on Homosexuals" by Frank Joseph, M.D., written in 2003, accessed December 13, 2018). You may say that Tammy Bruce's numbers are too high. However, the study just cited was published in the New England Journal of Medicine in 1980. Tammy Bruce's numbers are from a 2003 book. Now, 15 years later, several hundred sexual encounters per year for sodomites may be correct.

Now, you may say, "If seeking pleasure, why is sodomy a much better choice than God's design for man and woman? Don't the male and female parts fit together better than male and male or female and female?" Yes, the physical pleasure from a male and female sexual relationship is better than a sodomite one. However, try as we might, because sex equals marriage, our brains cannot get away from the fact that sex actually means something. It is not purely a physical act, especially when it comes to male and female sex.

This is because, as we mentioned earlier, God made the male and the female brains to function differently. When a man and a woman get married, the Bible says that "such SHALL have trouble in the flesh" (I Corinthians 7:28), because male and female flesh are different, meaning that they think differently. God designed things this way so that the husband can be a flesh checker of the wife and vice-versa. Granted, the ultimate flesh checker is the in-Christ life, which is why Paul says, "to the unmarried and widows, it is good for them if they abide even as I" (I Corinthians 7:8), i.e, living the single life. An unmarried man "careth for the things that belong to the Lord, how he may please the Lord: But he that is married careth for the things that are of the world, how he may please his wife" (I Corinthians 7:32-33).

Married people, who genuinely try to please each other, spend a great deal of time on this pursuit, simply because the male and the female minds work differently. God designed it this way on purpose because there are plenty of things that men want to do, such as look at pornography and sleep with other women, that they will refrain from doing, just so they can have a happy marriage. Similarly, there are plenty of things that women want to do, such as slander others behind their

backs, make decisions solely based upon their emotions, and have imaginary sex with their ideal guy, that they will refrain from doing, so that they do not get in trouble with their husbands. In this way, God uses the divine institute of marriage to keep society from destroying itself. In other words, by creating different male and female minds, creating the sex drive to bring the two together, and decreeing that ONLY ONE male and female sexual relationship is allowed during the couple's lifetime, God keeps man from uniting against God.

However, when men and women get together for same-sex relationships, they can use their similar minds to rationalize a physical pursuit of the lusts of the flesh much easier than those in opposite-sex relationships, because men and women have different ways of deceiving themselves into thinking that they are not really following their desperately wicked hearts in a purely sexual pursuit.

United Man

Remember "that every imagination of the thoughts of [man's] heart was only evil continually" (Genesis 6:5). The only way you will act on the evil of your heart is if you can convince yourself that it is okay to do that evil, because "every way of a man is right in his own eyes" (Proverbs 21:2). Convincing yourself is easy to do, because the heart is "deceitful ABOVE ALL THINGS, and DESPERATELY wicked" (Jeremiah 17:9).

Take a moment and think of some of the crazy stuff you have done over the years and think of the rationale that you used in your mind to do those things. Looking back years later, you may have a rational perspective, instead of a wicked one, and say, "Man! What was I thinking when I did that? That sure was stupid!" Now, think of what would have happened if you told your spouse of your idea before you did it. Your spouse would have kept you from doing it.

For example, in a TV sitcom in the 1990s, two men were having a mid-life crisis and decided to buy motorcycles. To the men, it seemed like a great idea, as it would make them feel young, cool, and attractive to other women. Not that they would sleep with women other than their wives, but the looks from good looking women would at least make them feel good. Their wives, however, would have a different perspective. Their wives would think of the money spent as a waste, since they would see no practical use for the motorcycles. Such an expenditure would put them into debt and put their mortgage payments in jeopardy. Their wives would also be afraid that they would hurt or kill themselves on those motorcycles. Therefore, the men did not tell their wives and hid the motorcycles in a large storage area.

On the flip side, about two years ago, I was in a department store, where I saw a woman return hundreds of dollars of brand-new clothes for a refund, under the watchful eye of her husband. To the wife, these clothes would make her feel attractive to men and make her friends jealous. To the husband, these clothes were frivolous expenses that could cause them to lose their house, car, or whatever other assets they had that were debt financed.

In both cases, because women think differently from men, the spouses of the purchasers of assets kept their spouses from hurting the family as a whole. In other words, the sins of the husband were kept in check by the wife, and the sins of the wife were kept in check by the husband.

However, if it is a sodomite relationship, the two people can get together and figure out clever ways to do the evil in their heart, and they can use each other for justification. Romans 2:15 confirms this by saying that “their thoughts the mean while [accuse] or else [excuse] one another.” The man’s thoughts will **accuse** the woman of wrongdoing, while the woman’s thoughts will **excuse** herself of wrongdoing. Therefore, it is important that the man be around the woman to keep her from sinning. I Timothy 5:13 says that widows under 60 in the church need to get re-married. If they do not, “they learn to be idle, wandering about from house to house; and not only idle, but tattlers also and busybodies, speaking things which they ought not.” In other words, young widow women destroy families with their gossip. If they were married, they would not have time for that but would spend their time pleasing their husbands.

Lest you think I am picking on women, let’s also take a look at the men. In the days of Nimrod, God told man that, if he continued to rebel against God, God would divide them up into nations. Man’s brilliant solution was: “Go to, let us build us a city and a tower, whose top may reach unto heaven; and let us make us a name, lest we be scattered abroad upon the face of the whole earth” (Genesis 11:4). In other words, man wanted to be like God and figured that he would be successful if he built a tower to reach to God’s throne room in heaven. “And the Lord said, Behold, the people is one, and they have all one language; and this they begin to do: and **now nothing will be restrained from them, which they have imagined to do**” (Genesis 11:6). Would they have been successful in building a tower to reach to heaven? No. Why? Because heaven is in a different realm. However, they would have been successful in getting out from underneath God’s rule over them. The result would have been a world fully given over to Satan that God could not have saved, because the seed of the woman would not have remained pure to bring the Redeemer, and no man would have trusted in the Redeemer anyway. Therefore, man would have been successful in completely destroying himself, if God did not intervene and create nations.

What does this have to do with sodomy? With sodomy, two people are together in agreement over what to do, because they both have the same brain—either a male brain or a female brain. Granted, there can still be problems, based upon how each person was raised. However, because their brains work similarly, they probably will not object to the sins of the other. Two guys would probably go into debt, at the risk of losing their house, in order to buy two motorcycles. Two women would probably go into debt, at the risk of losing their house, in order to buy expensive clothes.

You may say, “No, that wouldn’t happen, because, in every sodomite relationship, one partner takes the female role and the other takes the male role.” The fact that

it is generally accepted that there are female and male roles, even in a sodomite relationship, again shows how demented the idea of sodomy is. In other words, if you cannot get away from a male/female relationship, even in a male/male or a female/female relationship, then **sodomy must NOT be natural!**

Even if two guys would not buy motorcycles, and two women would not waste all their money on clothes, there is more at stake here. **The reason that sodomite relationships are attractive is that they yield sexual pleasure and companionship without having to give up certain sins that a partner of the opposite sex would keep from taking place.**

With regard to sexual pleasure, men are sexually stimulated visually, while women are sexually stimulated emotionally. It can be hard for a husband and wife to both be “in the mood” at the same time, due to different elements needing to be present at the same time. This is not the case with sodomite relationships, which is why Tammy Bruce says in her book: “Many [sodomite] men I know boast of the hundreds of sexual partners they have had. **For many, hundreds of anonymous sexual encounters a year is not unusual.**” (*The Death of Right and Wrong: Exposing the Left's Assault on our culture and values* by Tammy Bruce, 2003, Forum by Random House, pg. 44)

Because so much effort is required for a husband and a wife to work together, due to having different minds, most couples spend a lot of time apart. The husband may be playing golf, mowing the yard for an incredibly long time, or in his “man cave” watching sports. The wife may go out shopping or have a “girl’s night out” to get away from her husband for a while. However, with sodomite couples, these things are not necessary.

Basically, a sodomite relationship can be pursued purely for physical reasons without the partner checking the other person’s sins. They also do not have to worry about the expense of having a child. Thus, as more people live in sexual fantasy worlds, sodomy becomes more prevalent, since sodomy is more conducive to satisfying the lusts of the flesh with sex.

“But, I Was Born this Way!”

This is a common objection of sodomites. They say that they are born sodomites, and so it would actually be a sin for them to pursue an opposite-sex relationship. Such an objection is nothing more than the heart’s deceitful way of justifying sin.

God says that He has shown Himself to all people (Romans 1:18-20), but man does not want to recognize God, because doing so means he is subject to God’s rules (Romans 1:21-23). Therefore, the number of people, who identify themselves as atheists, is on the rise. Similarly, God says that no one is born a sodomite, but man does not want the opposite sex curbing his sin. Therefore, the number of people, who identify themselves as sodomites, is also on the rise.

Where does God say that people are not born sodomites? Right after He says that everyone knows there is a God. Romans 1:26-27 says, “Women did change the

NATURAL use into that which is against NATURE: And likewise also the men, leaving the NATURAL use of the woman, burned in their lust one toward another; men with men working that which is unseemly, and receiving in themselves that recompence of their error which was meet.” These verses say that it is NATURAL for a man to use a woman for sex. If it is natural for a man and a woman to have sex with each other, then it is UNNATURAL for a man and a man or a woman and a woman to have sex with each other. Therefore, **no one is born a sodomite!**

Do What Comes Naturally?

We should also note how dangerous it is to say, “I was born a sodomite; therefore, I should have a relationship with another sodomite.” Today’s attitude seems to be that sodomites have carte blanche to do whatever they want to do sexually, because God made them that way.

The problem with this logic is that we all have a sin nature. “Behold, I was shapen in iniquity; and in sin did my mother conceive me” (Psalm 51:5). As a result, “all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God” (Romans 3:23). “God looked down from heaven upon the children of men, to see if there were any that did understand, that did seek God. Every one of them is gone back: they are altogether become filthy; there is none that doeth good, no, not one” (Psalm 53:2-3). “For I know that in me (that is, in my flesh,) dwelleth no good thing” (Romans 7:18).

What this means is that, if I do what comes naturally, all I will do is sin. Therefore, even if someone is born a sodomite, the argument that “I was born this way,” is a great argument AGAINST sodomy, not for it! After all, if I did what came naturally with the opposite sex, I would seek to have sex with hundreds of women (Former basketball star, Lamar Odom, did just that—having sex with over 2,000 women. (*“Lamar Odom Reveals He’s Had Sex with Over 2,000 Women: I Had a Problem!”*, by Aili Nahas, May 15, 2019, <https://people.com/tv/lamar-odom-reveals-he-had-sex-with-over-2000-women/>, accessed May 17, 2019)), yet God has called me to purity with my wife. (“Marriage is honourable in all, and the bed undefiled: but whoremongers and adulterers God will judge” (Hebrews 13:4).)

If I did what came naturally, I would do all kinds of evil. Jesus said, “For from within, out of the heart of men, proceed evil thoughts, adulteries, fornications, murders, thefts, covetousness, wickedness, deceit, lasciviousness, an evil eye, blasphemy, pride, foolishness: All these evil things come from within, and defile the man” (Mark 7:21-23). In other words, every person who is ever born has all of these evil things inside of him just waiting to come out. That is not my opinion. That is fact from God, Who searches the heart, tries the reins, and has found that “the heart is deceitful above all things, and desperately wicked” (Jeremiah 17:9-10). I could not become a serial killer and expect to go free by stating that, “You can’t lock me up for killing all those people. I was born that way!” Yet, we allow sodomites to have sex with each other, which God says is worthy of death, and we excuse it as acceptable behavior because they were “born that way.” We expect murderers, adulterers, and thieves to curb their desire for sin, but we do not expect the same thing from sodomites. This is a double standard!

The good news is that, instead of wallowing in our wickedness, Christ can set us free. God says that, once you recognize that you are a sinner and trust in Jesus' death, burial, and resurrection as atonement for your sin (I Corinthians 15:3-4), God identifies you with Jesus' death, burial, and resurrection (Romans 6:3-4). This means that "our old man is crucified with Him, that the body of sin might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serve sin. For he that is dead is freed from sin" (Romans 6:6-7). Since we are dead and our lives are hid with Christ in God (Colossians 3:3), God tells us to "mortify therefore your members which are upon the earth; fornication, uncleanness, inordinate affection, evil concupiscence, and covetousness, which is idolatry" (Colossians 3:5). In other words, salvation takes me from death to life, and I can allow Christ's eternal life to live through me.

The problem with sodomy is that it reduces our likelihood to believe the gospel and be freed from sin. Since all have sinned and come short of the glory of God (Romans 3:23), God has given me the conscience to teach me that I am a sinner. Romans 7:13 says that the sin nature works with my conscience to make me "exceeding sinful." In other words, the conscience allows me to take an objective look at my condition and see that I am a sinner in need of a Saviour because my sin nature, working with the conscience, exceeds my foolish pride that says that I am okay. ("Every way of a man is right in his own eyes" (Proverbs 21:2).) In other words, "the law was our schoolmaster to bring us unto Christ, that we might be justified by faith" (Galatians 3:24). So, if I listen to my conscience, I search for the gospel, I find the gospel because "the Lord...[is] not far from every one of us" (Acts 17:27), and God gives me the gift of eternal life.

However, Romans 1 tells us that most people do the opposite of this. Most people will take the truth that God had revealed to them (Romans 1:18-20) and not be thankful for God's provision of the conscience. Instead, they will become "vain in their imaginations," and their "foolish heart [will be] darkened" (Romans 1:21). They will then profess themselves to be wise, but instead, they will become fools (Romans 1:22). Psalm 53:1 tells us that "the fool hath said in his heart, there is no God." In other words, when man rejects the God-given message of the conscience that he is a sinner, he says that there is no God, because he has declared himself to be God.

How does he harness the power of man to display his god-like qualities? Well, first we know that when a man has sex with a woman, he is married to her, "and they twain shall be one flesh" (Mark 10:8). In other words, the man and the woman combine into one body through sex, making them together more powerful than the man alone. This is why God says that, when man becomes a fool, "God also gave them up to uncleanness through the lusts of their own hearts, to dishonour their own bodies between themselves" (Romans 1:24). Since I Corinthians 6:18 says that the only way you can sin against your own body is by sexual sin, this tells us that "dishonour their own bodies between themselves" means that men and women are having sex with multiple partners.

Power Through Multiple Partners

The reason they do this, although they probably do not know why since the things of God are foolishness unto them (I Corinthians 2:14), is to channel the power of god within them. In other words, they think they are their own gods, and sex brings a man and a woman together into one flesh; thus, they think they will have more power by sleeping with more people of the opposite sex. This is why sex is the god of America today.

Young men and women seek to sleep with as many people as possible because good feelings are all they are after. The reason they feel good about this is that it makes them think they are god. In other words, they have conquered yet another man or woman; thus, gaining more power.

I realize that most people are not putting notches on their bed posts with each new person they sleep with, but the fact is that multiple sex partners is the norm in today's society, and God says the reason for this is because man thinks he is his own god. Since God knows the spiritual realm better than I do, I will trust God on this. I hope you will, too. Look at the facts from Romans 1:

1. Men "hold the truth" (Romans 1:18).
2. Men know who is God (Romans 1:19-20).
3. Men reject God and become vain, thinking they are god themselves (Romans 1:21).
4. To prove that they are god, they create their own gods, making man the primary god over all (Romans 1:23).
5. God then gives them up to their own uncleanness as they have sex with multiple partners in an attempt to channel their god power, worshipping the creature (other humans) more than the Creator (Romans 1:24-25).

Once this stage is reached, the problem is that, just like men did not want to answer to God, they also do not want to answer to the mind of the opposite sex. At first, this is solved by sleeping around with as many people as possible. After all, a woman cannot control a man if the man leaves her for another woman all the time. However, this is just too much of a hassle for god-people like mankind. Therefore, man eventually becomes tired of having to deal with the opposite sex, and he gets into sodomy instead.

After all, if the only reason for sex is the pleasure it creates as he increases his god-like power by sleeping with others, why not just sleep with the same sex and not deal with the "craziness" of the opposite sex's way of thinking. This is why the next thing that happens is that God gives man over to sodomy, which is described in Romans 1:26-27 as giving "them up unto vile affections" in which women have sex with women and men have sex with men. These two verses mention **three** times that sodomy is against nature, and this is the problem.

Sodomy Destroys Society

Once a society is wholly given over to sodomy, that society will be destroyed. How can I make such a bold statement (pun intended)? This goes back to what I

discussed about how God uses the conscience to get you to recognize you are a sinner and believe the gospel in order to be saved. Then, you are a new creature in Christ (II Corinthians 5:17), and Christ can do God's will through you (Ephesians 2:8-10). However, if you reject your conscience's witness, you make yourself god. The result of this is sleeping with multiple partners of the opposite sex. While this means you are dishonouring your own bodies and serving sin, it does not destroy society completely. The reason is because having sex with the opposite sex is still part of God's plan. Granted, man is abusing what God has created, including his own body, but he is still going along with nature. In other words, man is still agreeing, at least in some respect, to God's design for man. There may not be a lifelong husband and wife raising kids, but at least a man and a woman are together. There may not be a good home for the kids to come up in, but at least a man and a woman are together and kids are with them, even if the combination of people is wrong, i.e., a man and a woman with step kids.

In other words, when God made man, he gave man free will. He then invented marriage, family, and nations as the three checks to keep man's free will from destroying himself. If man is married, woman will keep him from doing all the evil of his heart, and man will keep woman from doing all the evil of her heart. If man has kids, the mother and father will seek to have good morals so that they do not have unruly kids. All of this is in the overriding rule of nations, which create their own rules of behavior. Thus, society keeps functioning, as long as men and women marry, have kids, and nations create rules to enforce these things. Even if a man sleeps with a woman, she has a kid, she leaves him, takes the kid with her, and moves in with another guy who she is now sleeping with, at least there is some loose structure of the sin checks of marriage and family still present.

However, once sodomy is pursued, sin is no longer kept in check. First, sodomy removes marriage to a member of the opposite sex. So, the check of your own fleshly desires, that a wife provides, has been removed. Second, since sodomites cannot have children, they also do not create good morals for children. Yes, sodomites can adopt children. However, those children will not be after their own image (Genesis 5:3); therefore, there is not that sense of morality in wanting your children to be good people that there is when you have children of your own by natural means. Third, once sodomy is widespread, the check of a nation is removed because it becomes legal. We have seen this in America. First, in 2003, the US Supreme Court struck down Texas' law against same-sex sodomy. Then, the US Supreme Court legalized marriage in all of America in 2015. Therefore, rampant sodomy destroys all three of God's checks against the evils of man's free will: 1) Marriage, 2) Family, and 3) Nationalism.

A perfect example of this is seen in Sodom. "The men of the city, even the men of Sodom, compassed the house round, both old and young, all the people from every quarter: And they called unto Lot, and said unto him, Where are the men which came in to thee this night? bring them out unto us, that we may know them" (Genesis 19:4-5). When Lot tried to stop them, we are told that "This one fellow came in to sojourn, and he will needs be a judge: now will we deal worse with thee, than with them. And they pressed sore upon the man, even Lot, and came near to

break the door” (Genesis 19:9). It is only because “the men” with Lot were really angels that disaster was averted.

Today, we are told that unnatural-sex (same sex) people have the same rights as natural-sex (opposite sex) people. The argument is that there is no harm done between two, consenting adults. But, look at the situation in Sodom. You did not have two men knock on Lot’s door and ask for a double date with the new men in the city. Then, after several dates, they would have sex. Rather, you had ALL the men from EVERY quarter of the city, and they are DEMANDING that the two men come out so they can have group sex with them. This only takes place because the check of the woman against such blatant sin has been removed. When Lot refuses, they say that “he will needs be a judge” (Genesis 19:9). In other words, they are saying, “I am my own god. I can do what I want to do. Who are you to judge me?” Similarly today, if Christians say that sodomy is wrong or they try to impose any morals upon unbelievers, they are told that they cannot judge the unbelievers. Then, the unbelievers quote, “Judge not, that ye be not judged” (Matthew 7:1) out of context to call the Christians “hypocrites.” Even most “Christian” churches will stand up for these unbelievers by saying that we are not to judge others, but we are to accept them for who they are. Yet, I Corinthians 2:15 says, “He that is spiritual judgeth all things.” Even Jesus Himself told His disciples to “judge righteous judgment” (John 7:24).

What this means is that only believers are qualified to judge, because only believers are spiritual and the natural man cannot know the things of God (I Corinthians 2:14). Therefore, only believers are to judge, and we are to judge according to God’s Word. The Bible says, “Thou shalt not lie with mankind, as with womankind: it is abomination” (Leviticus 18:22). Being an abomination means that the sin is detestable to God because it defiles the person’s mind, such that, in order to overcome his guilty conscience, he must conclude that he is his own god. In other words, he must brainwash himself into thinking that God’s rules do not apply to him.

This never happened in America before sodomy became widely accepted. During the free-love period of the 1950s and 1960s, men and women had multiple sexual partners. However, except for some people who raped others, it was always consensual. If a man wanted to sleep with a woman and she did not want to sleep with him, the man may try to convince her or speak forcefully to her, but he generally would not rape her. Instead, he would move on to find another woman who would sleep with him. This is what bars are all about. Men and women, who want to have sex, go to bars in hopes of meeting someone, and sleeping with him. Next weekend, they go back to the same bar, meet a different person, and go home and sleep with him. If a man wanted to have sex, he could hire an escort or go after a prostitute. Yes, all of these things are sins, but there is no forced sex. If a man did rape a woman, it was a very shameful thing. He did not tell a bunch of people, because he could get arrested.

Today, however, if I say ANYTHING against sodomy, the first response is: “You have no right to judge me.” Such an attitude was never present among rapists, or

among those who went to bars to sleep with multiple partners of the opposite sex over the years. This is because they were not going against nature like sodomites are.

In order to be a sodomite, you have to go against nature. “Even their women did change the NATURAL use into that which is against NATURE: And likewise also the men, leaving the NATURAL use of the woman” (Romans 1:26-27). When you become a sodomite, God says that you go against nature. (This is not my opinion; it is a fact from God!) When you go against nature, you have gone the other way with the conscience. The believer says, “I am a sinner; I need God to save me.” The adulterer says, “I know I shouldn’t do it, but it’s a lot of fun. So, I am going to sleep with multiple partners.” The sodomite says, “My conscience is wrong. I can do what I want because I am god.” Therefore, the adulterer maintains at least some semblance of morality because he still recognizes the conscience. The sodomite, however, has completely rejected the witness of his conscience by going against NATURE in having same-sex relations. When you go against nature, all morality is gone. This is why the adulterer has at least some respect for the opposite sex and some morality, while the sodomite says, “Who are you to judge me?” This is the message of sodomites in America today, and that was the message of sodomites in Lot’s day. (“There is no new thing under the sun” (Ecclesiastes 1:9).)

The adulterer says, “I really want you to sleep with me.” The opposite sex says, “No.” Eventually, perhaps after much persuasion, the adulterer gives up and moves to his next target. The sodomite, on the other hand, has completely rejected the witness of his conscience by going AGAINST nature. Therefore, he says, “I am god, and I will have sex with you.” Lot said, “No.” The men said, “Who are you to judge me? We will do what we want,” and they tried to force their way in. When man gets like that, the only thing left is to destroy them. That is why the angels immediately told Lot, “We will destroy this place” (Genesis 19:13). “Then the Lord rained upon Sodom and upon Gomorrah brimstone and fire from the Lord out of heaven” (Genesis 19:24).

Sodomites Think They Know Better Than God

In sodomy, my rights are always more important than your rights because I am god, because sodomites have completely rejected the witness of the conscience, going against nature and “working that which is unseemly” (Romans 1:27). There is nothing you can do at that point. There is no reasoning with sodomites, because they have abandoned all reasoning, going against nature, to fulfill the lusts of their flesh without any checks by God, i.e., marriage, family, and nationalism.

When this happens, they have not retained God in their knowledge, and so God gives “them over to a reprobate mind, to do those things which are not convenient” (Romans 1:28), and then Romans 1:29-31 lists 23 abominable things that they do, starting with “being filled with ALL unrighteousness.” When you become a sodomite, you have completely rejected God to the point that you are “filled with ALL unrighteousness.” They are not filled with some unrighteousness or a lot of

unrighteousness, like the guy looking for multiple female sex partners, but sodomites are filled with ALL unrighteousness.

Now, you may say, “But, I know some sodomites, and they are nice people. So, how can you say they are filled with ALL unrighteousness?” God is the one who said that, not me. Since God created us, He knows us. God told Jeremiah, “Before I formed thee in the belly I knew thee” (Jeremiah 1:4). “Thou...art acquainted with ALL my ways. For there is not a word in my tongue, but, lo, O Lord, Thou knowest it altogether” (Psalm 139:3-4). Therefore, since God says that sodomites are filled with ALL unrighteousness, then they are. Period. Sodomites say, “Who are you to judge me?” Well, Romans 9:20 says, “Nay but, O man, who art thou that repliest against God? Shall the thing formed say to Him that formed it, why hast Thou made me thus?” Therefore, when sodomites say, “Who are you to judge me?” our response should be, “Who are you to go against God by making yourself god?”

Therefore, no matter how nice sodomites seem to be, they are pure evil. I know this because God tells me so. Remember that “the Lord seeth not as man seeth; for man looketh on the outward appearance, but the Lord looketh on the heart” (I Samuel 16:7). Sodomites are unsaved people. (I am speaking in general here. A person is saved by recognizing he is a sinner and by trusting in Jesus’ death, burial, and resurrection as atonement for sin (I Corinthians 15:3-4), regardless of whether he is a sodomite or not. However, even if a sodomite is saved, he is not thinking like a saved person in pursuing his sodomy.) The things of God are foolishness unto unsaved people (I Corinthians 2:14). Therefore, sodomites are not concerned with God. Rather, they are concerned about advancing their own flesh. This is often done by being nice.

I once knew a sodomite who told me that he used to be really mean to people. Then, he discovered that people are more likely to do what you want them to do if you are nice to them, so he started being nice. When Mormon missionaries came to my door, they were very nice to me, volunteering to do work around my house for free. Once I rejected their message, they were no longer nice to me. When serial killers are discovered, people usually say, “I am shocked. He seemed so nice.” Churches, sports fans, support groups, and all other clubs are generally nice to their own people, but they turn on you when you go against them. **Nearly everyone is nice to you as long as you do not hinder them from getting what they want. Sodomites are no different.**

They want to do their evil deeds without others telling them that they are wrong. Therefore, they may even be nicer than natural-sex people are so that you do not say anything against them. This is why you will find un-natural sex people in churches and even in leadership positions in churches. It is not because they are saved, but it is because they want to make a fair show in the flesh so that you do not think badly about them for going against God.

Because sodomites have completely gone against God, whenever sodomy is prevalent in a society, each person thinks he is his own god. Therefore, morality and truth are relative, which means that no one can tell a person what is right and

wrong, because there is no right and wrong in their eyes. Rather, “every man [does] that which [is] right in his own eyes” (Judges 21:25). Today’s society preaches tolerance, love, and acceptance, but they themselves are not tolerant, loving, or accepting of anything that conflicts with their view. In other words, tolerance, love, and acceptance are preached as a way of making you conform to their way of thinking, which means that they view themselves as god, and tolerance, love, and acceptance is the religion they create for you to worship them. This is why Sodom’s statement of “He will needs be a judge: now will we deal worse with thee, than with them” (19:9) is very similar to today’s statement of “Who are you to judge me? Because you have tried to judge me, I will judge you to be worthy of my wrath.” In other words, “I am god. You cannot judge me, but I will judge you for going against the religion of tolerance that I have prescribed, as your god, for you to follow.” As Ecclesiastes 1:9 says, “There is no new thing under the sun.” Sodom did this back then, and the modern world does it today.

Increase in Sodomy

The number of people, who say they are sodomites, has steadily increased over the past 50 years. Society says the reason is because some people are born sodomites, but they have been forced to act straight because that is what society has caused them to do. (Even if people are born sodomites, God still says it is an abomination unto Him. Therefore, it is unacceptable.)

What is actually going on is that society is forcing people to be sodomites. To see what I mean, let’s use the example of lying. When you have a kid, you do not have to teach him to lie. He will lie on his own, almost from the womb. This is because it is in our sin nature to lie. If a society punishes liars, there will be far less lying than if a society rewards liars. There are also different types of lies. If I am the chief financial officer of a major corporation and I lie about the company’s net income, I will probably lose my job and face criminal prosecution. However, if I lie to a woman in telling her that she looks good in a dress, I will be rewarded by nice behavior by that woman toward me. My sin nature is satisfied in both cases, because it wants to lie. However, I learn from experience which lies society says are “okay,” and which ones are not.

Similarly speaking, all people have a sin nature that wants to commit sexual sin. (“The spirit that dwelleth in us lusteth to envy” (James 4:5).) 50 years ago, society said that sodomy was wrong. Today, society says that sodomy is okay. Therefore, the reason that more people are sodomites today than they were 50 years ago is not because society kept born sodomites from expressing themselves before. Rather, sodomy is accepted now. So, more people become sodomites because they can get away with it. In other words, there are more sodomites now because it is an acceptable way for the sin nature to manifest itself in today’s society. The same can be said about pornography. With the internet and smartphones, it is much easier to get away with viewing pornography today than it was 50 years ago. Therefore, it is not that more people are born pornographic viewers today, but people can get away with it a whole lot easier than they could back then.

Sodomy in Schools

A recent article shows how sodomy is being promoted in schools today. A middle school (7th and 8th graders) in Santa Ana, CA, recently had “an “LGBT Fair” that no one bothered to ask” the parents’ permission for. “There were even people in drag, their 11-year-olds said, giving make-up lessons — right there in school.” Santa Ana was targeted because it is largely a Hispanic community. One parent said, “How can a state that claims to be so much for the rights of immigrants and minorities then ignore our concerns on purpose? They are hypocrites!” Although California’s law does order schools to offer the curriculum outline in both English and Spanish, Santa Ana had not made the Spanish materials available to parents. Hardly an accident, Kira argues, since most of the communities like this one are “whole-heartedly opposed to LGBT-based sex-ed.” (“California middle school puts on LGBT fair with drag queen lessons, doesn’t tell parents”, <https://www.theisraelwire.com/2019/03/20/california-middle-school-puts-on-lgbt-fair-with-drag-queen-lessons-doesnt-tell-parents.html>, March 20, 2019, accessed March 22, 2019). In other words, schools are pushing sodomy upon kids where parents are the most ignorant of what is being taught at schools. This way, sodomy can be promoted and expanded upon with the next generation!

The laws in California also support sodomy. “The 2011 passage of SB 48, the FAIR Act (Fair, Accurate, Inclusive, and Respectful Education Act), mandates that students as young as kindergarten be taught about LGBT issues. In addition, the 2015 passage of AB 329, the California Healthy Youth Act, also expanded sex ed topics to include instruction on gender identity and gender expression, while also promoting the use of contraception, emergency contraception like ‘Plan B,’ and abortion. It also mandates that all students in grades seven to 12 receive HIV prevention education.” Why? Because “Teens in the US are becoming infected with HIV at an average of more than one an hour, every hour, every day.” (*The Death of Right and Wrong: Exposing the Left’s Assault on our culture and values* by Tammy Bruce, 2003, Forum by Random House, pg. 214). Of course, God’s solution is abstinence, but our society’s solution is “education.” That is, education in how to defy God and supposedly not suffer any consequences! Further, the agenda for the Health Education Framework in California, which should be finalized later in 2019, includes the following statement: “[High School] students will explore and discover their identities, gender expression, and sexuality throughout their education and into and beyond their high school years” (pg 27-28).” The article further notes that state opt-out laws “only apply to comprehensive sexual health education topics such as human development, pregnancy, family planning, and sexually transmitted diseases and not topics like sexual orientation and gender identity lessons, which are (by law) woven throughout other curricula. These lessons can show up at any time, in any grade, without any warning.”

Another example of schools in California promoting sodomy is seen in school “administrators... using a graphic study guide to accompany the transgender children’s book, *I Am Jazz* (recommended for children in kindergarten to fifth grade). In addition to defining various sex terms, the study guide asks students, “What if you don’t have time or money to buy sex toys?” It goes on to offer solutions that include the use of various fruit. The district was also offering a

“sexual health toolkit” as a classroom resource.” (*What are California’s new sex education guidelines?*” by Jim Domen, February 8, 2019, <https://erlc.com/resource-library/articles/what-are-californias-new-sex-education-guidelines>, accessed March 25, 2019).

In August 2018, I was sitting in a fast-food restaurant in Oregon, where three teenagers (two of one gender and one of the other gender) were talking about sexual orientation. They all agreed that everyone at school is willing to have sex with both males and females. This is because sex is done primarily for pleasure now, so, why limit yourself to one gender? Having sex with both genders doubles the fun, in these children’s eyes!

As this book is being prepared, the “Equality Act” passed the United States’ House of Representatives. This act, in its current form, would “prohibit discrimination on the basis of sexual orientation and gender identity in employment, housing, public accommodations, public education, federal funding, credit, and the jury system” (*Equality Act (United States)*”, [https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Equality_Act_\(United_States\)](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Equality_Act_(United_States)), accessed May 20, 2019). Practically speaking, this would amount to the elimination of girls’ sports in schools, the elimination of religious freedom, and the freeing up of public funds for sex-change operations and hormonal therapy paid by tax dollars, just to name a few changes that would result. In other words, the United States’ society would now reward people for their sodomy sins.

Therefore, the primary reason we see more sodomites today is because society promotes it more now. Before, teenagers were taught that sex is only to be with the opposite sex. Now, schools actually promote sodomy over straight sex, and so more people become sodomites, as a result. They are also taught about sodomy as early as kindergarten!

I do not know about you, but I had no idea what sex was at such an early age. In fact, when I was in sixth grade, I sang a jingle from a commercial during recess at school. I had no idea what the product was. An older girl told me it was about tampons, but I had no idea what a tampon was. I did not need sex information at such an early age, and neither do kids today.

When you give kids information about sex, they will act on it. One article says that, in Florida, “a seven-year-old male student was ‘the subject of sexual bullying in which he was coerced into a school restroom and forced to engage in sexual acts with two other students [one male and one female], including sexual intercourse.’” “The lawsuit claims the incident allegedly occurred inside a restroom located inside the first-grade classroom while the teacher was present.” (*LAWSUIT: 7-year-old alleges he was sexually bullied at Shalimar Elementary*” by Ly’Nita Carter, 3-13-19, <https://weartv.com/news/local/lawsuit-7-year-old-alleges-he-was-sexually-bullied-at-shalimar-elementary>, accessed March 25, 2019). So, now we have seven year-olds being raped in school restrooms by other seven year-olds of both the same and the opposite sexes! Such an idea never would have even entered the brains of seven year-olds before, because they had no idea what sex was!

Such sexualization by our education system today is in line with what Jesus said in Matthew 19:12, “For there are some eunuchs, which were so born from their

mother's womb: and there are some eunuchs, which were made eunuchs of men: and there be eunuchs, which have made themselves eunuchs for the kingdom of heaven's sake. He that is able to receive it, let him receive it." Just like men can make themselves or others into being eunuchs, men can also make themselves or others into being sodomites.

Also, those, who are born eunuchs today, are probably more likely to be made into sodomites by society. The reason I say this is that society believes that everyone wants to have sex. So, when a eunuch does not respond in the natural way by desiring a member of the opposite sex, society will probably convince him into thinking that he is really a sodomite, since abstinence and virginity are not preached by society anymore. This argument is validated by the fact that Catholic priests, who have been made eunuchs by men, end up preferring sex with boys over sex with girls, as will be discussed later.

The "Me Too" Movement

The "Me Too" movement started in 2017, as an attempt by women to stop sexual harassment/abuse of women by men. In less than two years, this movement has gotten real picky, as some women are now complaining, not just about inappropriate touching, but also about sexual looks and innuendos. While I sympathize with women who have been raped and otherwise victimized by men, one thing we need to keep in mind is that women and men view sexual actions differently. Men are more overt, and women are more subtle. As a result, a woman may claim sexual harassment, when a man has not done anything to her physically and genuinely has no idea that she is not interested, because she has not explicitly said so. Since women have gotten so picky now and men are not good at picking up hints, well-intentioned, innocent men could face major punishments out of no fault of their own.

This may result in more men (and women) resorting to sodomy, since each gender knows how the mind of their own sex works. Since sexual pleasure is all that most people today want in a relationship anyway, people may begin to think, "Why risk losing my job or my societal standing by pursuing a member of the opposite sex, when I can still get sexual satisfaction out of the same sex? Then, if someone complains, I can claim protection for sodomites, and I will not lose anything." Therefore, a major consequence of getting "justice" for sexually abused women via the "Me Too" movement may be that our society gives itself over to more sodomy. Perhaps this is how Sodom and Gomorrah got as bad as it did.

Does Sodomy Really Destroy a Society?

If you do a Google search to determine the effects of sodomy on society, you will find Christians talking about how it destroys a society and non-Christians talking about how it does not and may actually help out a society.

One non-Christian article concludes: "Policy towards [sodomy] has been overwhelming liberal with increasing acceptance in the past 100-200 years. During

this same time almost all indicators concerning quality of life and civilizational ‘advancement’, instead of decline, have shown vast improvement. In other words, acceptance of [sodomy] in fact correlates with the strengthening of the social fabric.” (<https://appliedsentience.com/2013/07/19/a-global-historical-survey-does-accepting-homosexuality-lead-to-civilizational-ruin/>, accessed October 19, 2018, “A Global Historical Survey: Does Accepting Homosexuality Lead to Civilizational Ruin?”, 7/19/13, by Paul Chiariello)

How Do You Define a “Destroyed” Society?

The conclusions drawn about sodomy’s effect on society are all determined by one’s perspective. Let me explain with an example. An entrepreneur starts a business and is overwhelmingly successful, making millions of dollars in profits. By this measure, this man is doing extremely well. However, in order to make the money, the man had to work 80 hours per week for several years. This resulted in his wife leaving him with the kids. Then, when he got rich, she filed for a divorce and is getting large alimony and child-support payments from him. He is also constantly bombarded by people trying to scam him out of his money. These problems have resulted in him not getting much sleep, and his health has deteriorated. He still has a fancy house, car, and money to burn, but he is alone now with many problems. If you just look at his financial condition and his material possessions, he is successful. However, if you look at everything together, it sounds like he would have been better off working a 40-hour per week job and just getting by as part of the middle class.

Satan is “the god of this world” (II Corinthians 4:4). Those, following Satan, have the motto: “Let us eat and drink; for to morrow we shall die” (Isaiah 22:13).

A sodomite has rejected God and his conscience’s witness. He is not willing to go through the trials of being married to a member of the opposite sex. Therefore, family, by God’s definition, is not important to him. With this being the case, he will pursue the things of this world, instead of the things of God. Therefore, he is more likely to be an entrepreneur, working 80 hours per week. This means that sodomite societies, as a whole, are more likely to spend more time working, which means they will advance in the things of this world. This is true of a godless society as a whole.

(It is very telling that Daniel 11:37 says that the Antichrist will not regard “the desire of women, nor regard any god: for he shall magnify himself above all.” In other words, he focuses exclusively on his own pleasure, and the result is that he builds a one-world economy and religion. This religion is described by God as “MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH” (Revelation 17:5). She is further described as “the great whore...with whom the kings of the earth have committed fornication, and the inhabitants of the earth have been made drunk with the wine of her fornication” (Revelation 17:1-2). Thus, the one-world rule of the Antichrist involves sex mixed with religion, which, as we have already seen, caters more to the depravity of man, when man is fully given over to sodomy. The world’s increasingly sodomite behavior is probably the preparation for the Antichrist’s rule.)

In the late 1800s in America, it was unheard of that a woman would work full-time outside the home. This is because Americans valued marriage between a man and a woman, children by that man and a woman, and a life pleasing to the Lord for the whole family over having material possessions. Today, almost no American lives without an expensive phone and a data plan where they can receive instant gratification for whatever their heart desires. They seek material things and keeping up with the Joneses to the point that most people cannot pay all of their bills unless at least two adults are in a house working full-time jobs, whether that be a romantic couple or just two, single roommates. Almost 50% of those with roommates in big cities will go sit in their car just for some privacy. So, yes, society is advancing, but at what price?

Paul says, “If AFTER THE MANNER OF MEN I have fought with beasts at Ephesus, what advantageth it me, if the dead rise not? let us eat and drink; for to morrow we die” (I Corinthians 15:32). “The manner of men” is to live for this present world. If you live for this present world, you will seek to prosper in this world. If you seek to prosper in this world, you follow the motto: “He who dies with the most toys wins.” If you think by the manner of men, it would be foolish to fight with beasts. Instead, you should drop all your morals, work for prosperity, and do whatever society wants you to do.

However, if you are saved and allowing Christ to live in you, you have “set your affection on things above, not on things on the earth” (Colossians 3:2). If this is the case, you may abandon the \$500 phone with a \$100 per-month plan for a \$10 phone with a \$20 per month plan. Why? Because instant gratification is not important. “To live is Christ, and to die is gain” (Philippians 1:21). Gain comes in the world to come, not in the current world.

Meanwhile, the Christian living in Christ “shall suffer persecution” (II Timothy 3:12). His attitude is, “Our light affliction, which is but for a moment, worketh for us a far more exceeding and eternal weight of glory” (II Corinthians 4:17). Therefore, if I go without an iPhone, cable television, a new car, a fancy house, and other things, it is no big deal, because those things will pass away (Matthew 24:35), but God will stand forever. If I suffer for living godly, that suffering turns into an eternal reward that will not pass away (II Corinthians 4:17). Therefore, I will set my affection on things above, and not worry about the things of this world. The sodomite, however, has only this world to live for. Therefore, in a society that accepts sodomy, that society works for the things of this world, resulting in greater economic prosperity.

The previously mentioned article says that the last 100 to 200 years have seen man’s quality of life and civilization’s advancement increase. The five factors they mention as proof are: 1) Increased peace, 2) A decline in world infant mortality rate, 3) More countries are democratic, 4) Higher literacy rates, and 5) Higher life expectancy. (<https://appliedsentience.com/2013/07/19/a-global-historical-survey-does-accepting-homosexuality-lead-to-civilizational-ruin/> accessed October 19, 2018, “A Global Historical Survey: Does Accepting Homosexuality Lead to Civilizational Ruin?”, 7/19/13, by Paul Chiariello).

Even if these things are true, they do not matter from an eternal perspective. 1) Increased peace. I do not think this is true, since there are always wars going on somewhere in the world. Even if it is true, peace only comes through Jesus Christ. “Therefore being justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ” (Romans 5:1). Since fewer people are saved now, fewer people have eternal peace. Therefore, peace has actually declined, because the peace that matters is peace with God, not peace with your neighbor.

2) A decline in world infant mortality rate and 5) Higher life expectancy. I do not believe #2 is true, since about 50 millions babies are killed each year in the world before they are even born. (*“Abortions leading cause of death worldwide”, by Charlie Butts, January 4, 2019, <https://onewsnw.com/pro-life/2019/01/04/abortions-leading-cause-of-death-worldwide>, accessed January 10, 2019.*) However, setting this aside, a decline in infant deaths and a higher life expectancy do not matter since all people die anyway. “It is appointed unto men once to die, but after this the judgment” (Hebrews 9:27). With fewer people today being prepared for God’s judgment of them, longer life expectancies are meaningless.

3) More countries are democratic. God is an autocrat, i.e., one ruler with absolute power. During the at-hand phase of the kingdom for Israel, Jesus told His disciples to have a communal society (Luke 12:33; Acts 2:44-45). Furthermore, a democratic society makes me think that I can make the rules, instead of God. Therefore, all things being equal, I am less likely to be saved in a democratic society, which means that democratic systems do not necessarily signal an advance in civilization.

4) Higher literacy rates. This is good if people are reading and believing their Bibles, but this has been less of the case over time. Higher literacy rates has led to people not listening to churches and doing research for themselves. While the Bible should be our final authority, higher literacy rates has put the focus on pursuing the education of this world, rather than the things of God, resulting in a decrease in saved people. Therefore, all five things listed, if they are true, result in the degeneration of society, from a godly perspective, but in the building up of society from a worldly perspective.

This can be seen in the case of Sodom and Gomorrah. When choosing where to dwell, “Lot lifted up his eyes, and beheld all the plain of Jordan, that it was well watered every where, before the Lord destroyed Sodom and Gomorrah, even as the garden of the Lord. Then Lot chose him all the plain of Jordan.... But the men of Sodom were wicked and sinners before the Lord exceedingly” (Genesis 13:10-11,13). In other words, by following the course of this world, the people of Sodom had developed a city that looked like paradise, because Satan is the god of this world and the great imitator of God. However, because they were wicked, God destroyed them. Their wickedness is seen in their sodomy, as Jude 7 says that their destruction serves as “an example” of “suffering the vengeance of eternal fire” for their “fornication, and going after strange flesh.” So, yes, Sodom’s civilization had advanced in its economic prosperity, but the result was burning forever!

The reason an example is needed is that, during the tribulation period, economic prosperity will also be widespread, just like it was in the days of Sodom. Jesus said, "Likewise also as it was in the days of Lot; they did eat, they drank, they bought, they sold, they planted, they builded; But the same day that Lot went out of Sodom it rained fire and brimstone from heaven, and destroyed them all. Even thus shall it be in the day when the Son of man is revealed" (Luke 17:28-30). Note how everything that Jesus mentioned regarding Sodom relates to the economy. Because Sodom focused entirely on the material world, God destroyed them.

In other words, after the manner of men, Sodom prospered, but God destroyed them for their wickedness. Now, I am not saying that God will send fire down from heaven and destroy the United States because we have accepted sodomy. God will not destroy this earth until Jesus' second coming, which will not take place until after the rapture of the body of Christ, the resumption of Israel's program, and the seven-year tribulation period. However, what I am saying is that sodomy shows a rejection of God and an emphasis on the things of this world. Both of these things cause economic prosperity, but they also cause a decrease in spiritual prosperity, ultimately resulting in God's destruction of this world at Jesus' second coming. Just because God does not bring immediate judgement, it does NOT mean that sodomites will avoid God's judgment in the end. "Because sentence against an evil work is not executed speedily, therefore the heart of the sons of men is fully set in them to do evil" (Ecclesiastes 8:11).

"Know ye not that the unrighteous shall not inherit the kingdom of God? Be not deceived: neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor effeminate, nor abusers of themselves with mankind, nor thieves, nor covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners, shall inherit the kingdom of God" (I Corinthians 6:9-10). ("Abusers of themselves with mankind covers sodomy.)

Therefore, sodomy causes society to advance economically in the short-term, but it also causes the destruction of society by God in the long run. This means that sodomy does not really advance society, as studies claim.

Is Sodomy a Sin?

Whenever scripture is used to show that sodomy is a sin, Churchianity's sodomite community is armed with their pat answers to discount what the Bible says. This is just like anyone else, when he is confronted with the truth of God's Word. He will attempt to explain it away by changing the words, changing the context, saying the verse is archaic and not applicable today, or whatever other excuse he can come up with to get you to stop bothering him with the truth so that he can live his life of sin without feeling bad about it. (Sodomites have even come up with their own version of the Bible, the Queen James Bible, which is the same as the King James Bible, except that they have changed eight verses.) However, "we can do nothing against the truth, but for the truth" (II Corinthians 13:8). Therefore, we can examine God's Word and get the truth about what God says about sodomy, regardless of what others may say about it.

Leviticus 18:22 & 20:13

Leviticus 18:22 “Thou shalt not lie with mankind, as with womankind: it is abomination.”

Leviticus 20:13 “If a man also lie with mankind, as he lieth with a woman, both of them have committed an abomination: they shall surely be put to death; their blood shall be upon them.”

These verses teach that sodomy is an abomination to God, and that those committing sodomy should be killed.

Churchianity says, “Well, that is in Leviticus. That does not apply today, because we are under the New Testament.” (These same people will use Malachi 3:10 to say that we have to pay tithes today. I guess Malachi is close enough to the New Testament that they can count it for today, huh?) However, Jesus said, “Thy Word is truth” (John 17:17), not “Ignore the parts of the Bible not written to you;” “These are just God’s suggestions;” “Do whatever you want;” or “Change what you do not like.” Jesus said, “Thy Word is truth.” Therefore, Leviticus was 100% truth when it was written, and it is 100% truth today.

Granted, the rules in Leviticus are God’s rules for His nation of Israel. This means that, as Christians, we are NOT to kill sodomites, because we are to submit to the laws of our land (Romans 13:1-5). However, just because the United States does not kill sodomites, it does not make sodomy any less wrong today than it was when Leviticus was written. People will say, “Well, Leviticus has some crazy rules in it. It also says not to mar the corners of your beard (Leviticus 19:27) or wear clothing with mixed fibers in it (Leviticus 19:19). We don’t follow those rules today, and so we do not need to follow the rest of the rules in Leviticus.” While it is true that there are some rules that were made only for Israel as God’s people, that does not mean that we should not follow the other rules God gave Israel. God told Israel, “Thou shalt not kill” (Exodus 20:13), but I do not see anyone saying that we can murder innocent people because the commandments are only for Israel. The reason is that other verses tell us not to kill, and we have other Bible verses that tell us that sodomy is a sin.

We should also note that both of these verses talk about not lying with mankind as with womankind or as with a woman. This tells us that sodomy is so unnatural that the mind, that is not utterly depraved, would not even think of sodomy as a possibility. In other words, if sodomy was natural for some people, the qualifier of “as with womankind” or “as...with a woman” would be unnecessary, because you would automatically know what “lie with mankind” means. For example, Leviticus 20:12 says, “If a man lie with his daughter in law, both of them shall surely be put to death.” It does not say, “if a man lie with his daughter in law as he lieth with his wife,” because “with his wife” is implied, because nature tells you what that means. However, because sodomy is unnatural, God has to add “as with womankind,” which shows that no one is born a sodomite.

(The Queen James Version gets around these verses in Leviticus by saying that the words “in the temple of Molech” should be added to these verses. In other words, sodomy is okay as long as it is not done in idol worship. Of course, there are no manuscripts that support adding this qualification. Even if there was, as we have seen, sodomy is the promotion of yourself as god. Therefore, by definition, all sodomy is a form of idol worship with the sodomite himself being his own idol.)

Genesis 19:5 & Jude 7

Genesis 19:5 “Where are the men which came in to thee this night? bring them out unto us, that we may know them.”

Jude 7 “Even as Sodom and Gomorrha, and the cities about them in like manner, giving themselves over to fornication, and going after strange flesh, are set forth for an example, suffering the vengeance of eternal fire.”

We already saw, from Genesis 19, that Sodom and Gomorrha were destroyed because of their sodomy. In case you could not figure out the obvious by reading Genesis 19, Jude explicitly tells us that the destruction of Sodom and Gomorrha for their sodomy is an example of how God will destroy the ungodly in eternal fire. Therefore, these two verses are proof positive, not only that sodomy is a sin, but also that sodomy leads to the eventual destruction of a society.

Moreover, note that Jude 7 starts with “EVEN AS Sodom and Gomorrha.” “Even as” links the verse to what happened in Jude 6, which says: “And the angels which kept not their first estate, but left their own habitation, he hath reserved in everlasting chains under darkness unto the judgment of the great day.” This refers to fallen angels in Noah’s day having sex with women in order to create giants, as Genesis 6:4 says, “There were giants in the earth in those days; and also after that, when the sons of God came in unto the daughters of men, and they bare children to them, the same became mighty men which were of old, men of renown.”

What this shows is that sodomy is SUCH an abomination to God that he equates sodomite sin with women having sex with devils! Sodomy is just as bad! Now, the Queen James Version steps in and says that the “strange flesh” of Jude 7 is really “nonhuman flesh.” However, none of the 59 English Bible versions on Biblegateway.com say that it is “nonhuman flesh.” Granted, the two angels, who came to Sodom, were angels and not humans. However, they took on human form. Genesis 19:4-5 says, “But before they lay down, the men of the city, even the men of Sodom, compassed the house round, both old and young, all the people from every quarter: And they called unto Lot, and said unto him, Where are the men which came in to thee this night? bring them out unto us, that we may know them.” Note that “the MEN of the city” wanted to have sex with “the MEN which came in to thee this night.” This shows that they went after human, male flesh, and God calls it “strange flesh,” because men are only supposed to have sex with women. (The QJV has the men of Genesis 19:5 wanting to “rape and humiliate”

them.)

Romans 1:26-27

Romans 1:26-27 “For this cause God gave them up unto vile affections: for even their women did change the natural use into that which is against nature: And likewise also the men, leaving the natural use of the woman, burned in their lust one toward another; men with men working that which is unseemly, and receiving in themselves that recompence of their error which was meet.”

For those, who dismiss Leviticus as “not for today,” we have three passages in Paul’s epistles that speak against sodomy. This Romans passage is great because it twice says that men having sex with women is “the NATURAL use of the woman.” This means that **NO ONE IS BORN A SODOMITE**, because it is natural for a man and a woman to have sex, meaning that it is UNNATURAL for a woman and a woman to have sex or a man and a man to have sex. God calls such behavior “unseemly,” meaning that it is indecent. Therefore, God does not sanction sodomite activities.

Also, the result of widespread sodomy is that God gives “them over to a reprobate mind” (Romans 1:28), meaning that they are now “filled with all unrighteousness” and will commit all kinds of evil acts (Romans 1:29-31). Therefore, **God’s Word says that sodomy is the gateway to “all unrighteousness,”** leading to the destruction of the society that practices it.

Again, the Queen James Version tries to make this passage about idol worship, because it says they “burned in RITUAL lust,” rather than “burned in their lust.” It says they did “that which is PAGAN and unseemly,” instead of “that which is unseemly.” The QJV also says that “God gave the IDOLATERS up,” instead of “God gave them up.” Again, these words are added with no manuscript evidence to support them, especially since idolatry is not even mentioned in Romans 1.

I Corinthians 6:9-10

I Corinthians 6:9-10 “Know ye not that the unrighteous shall not inherit the kingdom of God? Be not deceived: neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor effeminate, nor abusers of themselves with mankind, nor thieves, nor covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners, shall inherit the kingdom of God.”

“Effeminate” means a man who acts like a woman, which would be a transvestite or a transgender. (Deuteronomy 22:5 says that “the woman shall not wear that which pertaineth unto a man, neither shall a man put on a woman’s garment: for all that do so are abomination unto the LORD thy God.”) “Abusers of themselves with mankind” is a reference to sodomy. We know this because, before the end of the chapter, Paul says, “Flee fornication. Every sin that a man doeth is without the body; but he that committeth fornication sinneth against his own body” (I Corinthians 6:18). Therefore, all sexual sin is a sin against your own body, as Paul

also says in Romans 1:24, “Wherefore God also gave them up to uncleanness through the lusts of their own hearts, to dishonour their own bodies between themselves.” This means that “abusers of themselves with mankind” has to refer to sexual sin. Since it says “with MANKind,” it must refer to sodomy, since Leviticus 18:22 talks about sodomy as having sex with MANKind, as opposed to WOMANKind. “Thou shalt not lie with mankind, as with womankind: it is abomination.” Therefore, I Corinthians 6:9-10 says that transvestites, transgenders, and sodomites shall not inherit the kingdom of God.

The Queen James Version changes “effeminate” and “abusers of themselves with mankind” to “morally weak” and “promiscuous,” respectively. Again, there is no manuscript evidence to support these changes, as none of the 59 English Bible versions on Biblegateway.com make such a change. In fact, nearly all of the translations see “abusers of themselves with mankind” as being sodomites.

What is great about this passage is that the next verse goes on to say, “And such WERE some of you” (I Corinthians 6:11) which means that effeminate and abusers of themselves with mankind do not have to continue in their sin, because the Lord Jesus Christ can change them. Praise the Lord!

Therefore, for all the sodomites out there, God can wash you clean. All you have to do is recognize you are a sinner (Romans 3:22), trust in Jesus’ death, burial, and resurrection as atonement for your sin (I Corinthians 15:3-4), and allow Christ to sanctify you with the Word (Ephesians 5:26-27). This is not “hate speech” to you. Rather, it is God commending His love toward you (Romans 5:8) so that you can be free from the law of sin and death. Operating by the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus (Romans 8:2) is so much better than sin, not just sodomy, but all sin.

I Timothy 1:9-10

I Timothy 1:9-10 “Knowing this, that the law is not made for a righteous man, but for the lawless and disobedient, for the ungodly and for sinners, for unholy and profane, for murderers of fathers and murderers of mothers, for manslayers, for whoremongers, for them that defile themselves with mankind, for menstealers, for liars, for perjured persons, and if there be any other thing that is contrary to sound doctrine.”

Again, based upon I Corinthians 6:18 (“Flee fornication. Every sin that a man doeth is without the body; but he that committeth fornication sinneth against his own body.”), “defile themselves with mankind” must refer to sodomy. In the QJV, “with mankind” is removed. Again, there is no manuscript evidence for omitting this phrase, and nearly all of the English translations agree that this refers to sodomy. As I mentioned in the explanation of I Corinthians 6:9-10, “mankind” tells you that the sin is sodomy, which is precisely why the QJV omits “mankind” here. They just find the words they do not like and arbitrarily change or delete them to fit their perverted view on sodomy.

Other Verses

Let's face it. The Queen James Version is just an idea to make money with little effort. It is a brilliant idea at that, because the text of the King James Version is not copyrighted. Therefore, the QJV "writers" only had to re-write eight verses, change the title, and start selling their book. This is very little effort for the potential to make a lot of money.

There is other scriptural support for sodomy being a sin that is not used by sodomites, nor did the QJV change these verses. We will now look at these passages.

Mark 10:6-9

Mark 10:6-9 says, "But from the beginning of the creation God made them male and female. For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and cleave to his wife; And they twain shall be one flesh: so then they are no more twain, but one flesh. What therefore God hath joined together, let not man put asunder." These verses say that "from the beginning" "God hath joined together" male and female, not male and male or female and female. Since we are not to put asunder what God has joined together and God joined together only male and female, this means that no one should put any other combination together, because God did not join any other combination together.

Genesis 1 - 5

It has been said, "God created Adam and Eve, not Adam and Steve!" If you want to know God's design for sex, you only need to look at the Genesis account.

In Genesis 1:27, "God created man." Genesis 2:7 gives the details of this: "And the Lord God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul." So, God made flesh out of the dust, gave man a spirit by giving him "the breath of life; and man became a living soul," making man spirit, soul, and body.

God's first command to man was to "Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth" (Genesis 1:28). How can he do this? He does not have a womb in which to carry a baby. In Genesis 2:19-20, God made the animals and Adam named them, "but for Adam there was not found an help meet for him." In other words, although the animals have wombs and are able to pro-create, Adam cannot pro-create with them because their flesh is different from his flesh. (This also tells us why sex with beasts is prohibited by God.) (This also tells us that sex is NOT something made just for man to enjoy, but God made sex as the way of pro-creating. The only reason God made sex enjoyable, as well, was so man would pro-create. Otherwise, man's selfishness would lead him not to.)

Therefore, God takes a rib out of Adam's body, closes up Adam's flesh, makes a woman from the rib, and brings her unto Adam (Genesis 2:21-22). "And Adam said, this is now bone of my bones, and flesh of my flesh: she shall be called

Woman, because she was taken out of Man. Therefore shall a man leave his father and his mother, and shall cleave unto his wife: and they shall be one flesh” (Genesis 2:23-24).

In summary, God commanded Adam to “Be fruitful, and multiply” (Genesis 1:28). Adam looked at all of the animals and found no one who could help him with that. So, God created woman, and Adam said that she would help him pro-create because she has a womb and she is “flesh of my flesh” (Genesis 2:23). It is FOR THIS REASON that a man leaves his father and mother, cleaves unto his wife, and the two become one flesh (Genesis 2:24). In other words, one of the reasons God created woman was so she could be with a man sexually to have his baby in order for him to replenish the earth.

God had both the man and the woman in one body on the sixth day of creation, because Genesis 5:1-2 says, “IN THE DAY that God created man, in the likeness of God made He HIM; male and female created He THEM; and blessed THEM, and called THEIR name Adam, IN THE DAY when THEY were created.” In other words, on the sixth day of creation, God made male and female in ONE body, which was the body of Adam. God then told Adam to pro-create. Adam looked around and said, “How?” So, God made another body from Adam’s body and put the female part of him inside the new body. He then brought the two bodies into one through them having sex with each other. (This is seen in Paul’s statement: “What? know ye not that he which is joined to an harlot is one body? for two, saith He, shall be one flesh.” (I Corinthians 6:16). Since sex with a harlot is the most casual of all sexual interactions and it still causes two people to be married, this means that sex must equal marriage.)

This means that one of the main reasons God made a separate body for a woman is so she can carry a man’s baby. We also see this in Romans 1:26-27, when it talks about “the natural use of the woman.” In other words, a woman is naturally used to have sex with her husband and carry his baby. If God created sodomy, He never would have created a woman. He would have created man only and had man reproduce in some other way. Therefore, the fact, that women even exist, shows that God is against sodomy, and that it should never be practiced.

The Potter and the Clay

Think of it this way: God is the Creator. As the Creator, He makes the rules about His creation. According to Mark 10:6-9, God made male and female and caused them to be joined together in marriage. After making female, God made no other modifications. He did not make another gender or another human that was not either male or female.

Isaiah 64:8 says, “But now, O LORD, Thou art our Father; we are the clay, and Thou our potter; and we all are the work of thy hand.” Romans 9:21 says, “Hath not the potter power over the clay, of the same lump to make one vessel unto honour, and another unto dishonour?” In other words, since God is the Creator, He has FULL control over how He made you. **Since God made male and female**

and joined only male and female together, then every other joining together is perverse. “Woe unto them that seek deep to hide their counsel from the LORD, and their works are in the dark, and they say, who seeth us? and who knoweth us? Surely your turning of things upside down shall be esteemed as the potter’s clay: for shall the work say of him that made it, He made me not? or shall the thing framed say of him that framed it, He had no understanding?” (Isaiah 29:15-16).

In other words, God created sex and set rules for sexual relations. As the Creator, God has every right to make and enforce these rules, and, as the created being, we have no right to go against these rules. Therefore, since God made sex to be between only one man and one woman for life, then that is the rule that we should follow. How you feel about it has nothing to do with it, because you are the created being, not the Creator.

This is an iron-clad, logical conclusion, which is why the world seeks to eliminate God. When you look at the theory of evolution logically, it is the stupidest thing man has come up with. Yet, evolution is taught in schools, while God creating the heaven and the earth is not taught. The reason is because man needs to get rid of God so he can fulfill the lusts of his flesh, including sodomy. Although the best theory man can come up with is evolution, man buys into it, because it allows him to fulfill the lusts of his flesh. Therefore, the “geniuses” of our world say “there is no God,” so they can be god and make their own rules. “Where is the wise? where is the scribe? where is the disputer of this world? hath not God made foolish the wisdom of this world?” (I Corinthians 1:20).

Sodomites in the Land

Sodomy is also seen in Israel in the days of the kings. In fact, sodomy is so bad in Israel that Isaiah says, “Except the Lord of hosts had left unto us a very small remnant, we should have been as Sodom, and we should have been like unto Gomorrah. Hear the word of the Lord, ye rulers of Sodom; give ear unto the law of our God, ye people of Gomorrah” (Isaiah 1:9-10). In other words, Israel’s sodomy is so bad that God actually calls them “rulers of Sodom,” and, if not for God’s promises to Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, God would have wiped out the nation of Israel for their sodomy, just like He did with Sodom and Gomorrah. Again, this shows the great abomination that sodomy is.

In I Kings 14:22, we are told that “Judah did evil in the sight of the Lord.” The evil they did was to set up idol worship and to get into sodomy. I Kings 14:24 says, “And there were also sodomites in the land: and they did according to all the abominations of the nations which the Lord cast out before the children of Israel.” Furthermore, God tells Israel in Exodus 23:23-24, “For mine Angel shall go before thee, and bring thee in unto the Amorites, and the Hittites, and the Perizzites, and the Canaanites, and the Hivites, and the Jebusites: and I will cut them off. Thou shalt not bow down to their gods, nor serve them, nor do after their works: but thou shalt utterly overthrow them, and quite break down their images.” By comparing these two passages we can determine that, not only did God destroy

Sodom and Gomorrah for their sodomy, but He also told Israel to utterly overthrow the Canaanite nations because of their sodomy. In other words, sodomy had gotten so bad in Canaan that God says that NONE of the Amorites, Hittites, Perizzites, Canaanites, Hivites, or Jebusites will believe and be saved. Therefore, Israel needs to destroy them all!

When Asa was king of Judah, we are told that he “did that which was right in the eyes of the LORD, as did David his father” (I Kings 15:11). What is it that he did? “He took away the sodomites out of the land, and removed all the idols that his fathers had made” (I Kings 15:12). Again, the two, big sins of Israel are idolatry and sodomy, and the two are related. (Granted, a sodomite today probably does not bow down to an image. He is too smart for that. He is his own idol, “bowing down” to the lusts of the flesh. “Know ye not, that to whom ye yield yourselves servants to obey, his servants ye are to whom ye obey; whether of sin unto death, or of obedience unto righteousness?” (Romans 7:16). Therefore, the sodomite bows down to King Death, serving him with his sin.)

Asa’s son, Jehoshaphat, reigned after Asa died. He also did “that which was right in the eyes of the Lord.” He did not remove the high places where other gods were worshipped (I Kings 22:43). However, there is one, right thing that he did that is mentioned in this passage, which is that, “The remnant of the sodomites, which remained in the days of his father Asa, he took out of the land” (I Kings 22:46).

Finally, II Kings 23 mentions a great turning to the Lord that King Josiah accomplished in his days. One of the things mentioned was that “He brake down the houses of the sodomites, that were by the house of the LORD, where the women wove hangings for the grove” (II Kings 23:7). Again, sodomy is seen in a bad light.

In summary, God destroyed Sodom and Gomorrah and destroyed the Canaanites because of their sodomy. God also chastised kings for letting Israel get into sodomy and commended kings for getting Israel out of sodomy. Therefore, even if Churchianity changes certain verses to say that God is not against sodomy, the Bible is still plain that sodomy is an abomination, worthy of entire nations being destroyed for being sodomites. Churchianity would have to ignore the entire Old Testament to think that God is okay with sodomy. Perhaps that is why most churches do just that!

The Hopelessness of Sodomy

Now, someone may say, “But I know a lot of sodomites, and they are nice people. I even know some who go to church and are Christians. Certainly, sodomy does not mean they cannot be saved.” Actually, it does. Now, that is not to say that individual sodomites cannot believe the gospel and be saved, but it does mean that societies, that are wholly given over to sodomy, will not produce a single believer; therefore, God ends up destroying them.

This conclusion is reached based upon Romans 1:18-32. These verses tell us that

man knows of God's eternal power and Godhead (v. 20), but he did not want to retain this knowledge of God in his mind (v. 28). Therefore, he changed God's glory into an image made like unto himself and other living creatures (v. 23). Then, man worships and serves the creature, rather than the Creator (v. 25). The result is that man defiles himself through sexual sins with the opposite sex (v. 24), and then through sexual sins with the same sex (vs. 26-27). Once this happens, God says, "And even as they did not like to retain God in their knowledge, God gave them over to a reprobate mind, to do those things which are not convenient; Being filled with all unrighteousness, fornication, wickedness, covetousness, maliciousness" (Romans 1:28-29). In other words, **once a society has completely given itself over to sodomy, God is no longer in their knowledge.** Without God in their knowledge, they will never believe the gospel, even if it is clearly presented to them, because they no longer have the knowledge of God to say, "Yes, I am a sinner and need God to save me." Therefore, God gives them over to their reprobate minds, and they are "filled with ALL unrighteousness," meaning that God is no longer in their minds. Therefore, they cannot be saved.

Societies given over to sodomy have "no hope, and [are] without God in the world" (Ephesians 2:12). Sodomites are so evil that, not only have they rejected God, but they also HATE God. You only have to take a look at how the United States in 2019 treats Christians in order to see this. I am surprised that the Bible has not been banned as hate speech yet.

Historically speaking, the time when God gave the Gentiles over to a reprobate mind was at the Tower of Babel in Genesis 11. Since being given over to a reprobate mind is the result of sodomy, sodomy must have been widely practiced in Babylon. According to Genesis 10:10, Nimrod was over Babylon. About all we know about Nimrod is that, "he began to be a mighty one in the earth. He was a mighty hunter before the Lord" (Genesis 10:8-9). "Before the Lord" tells us that he was a mighty hunter, spiritually speaking. The same holds true of Satan, who, in Revelation 6:2, starts the tribulation period by conquering nations with a bow. Satan is also said to send fiery darts against us today, spiritually speaking (Ephesians 6:16). Thus, Nimrod was a mighty hunter before the Lord, in the sense that he led people to rebel against God.

Genesis 9:22-24 tells us that Noah's son, Ham, had sex with Noah when Noah was drunk. The result was that Ham's son, Canaan, was cursed (Genesis 9:25). We have already mentioned that the nations, that God had Israel drive out of the Promised Land, were the Canaanites, and that their great sin was sodomy. Genesis 10:6-8 tells us that Nimrod was the grandson of Ham. Therefore, Nimrod carried on the tradition of his grandfather. However, he did not just carry out, but he also promoted it and built an entire kingdom on sodomy! Matthew 23:15 says that, when a proselyte is made, he is "twofold more the child of hell" than the one who made the proselyte. This is because a proselyte is more steeped in the religious sin than his predecessor was. So, too, Nimrod was more steeped in sodomy than his grandfather was.

Nimrod did such a good job in getting the world to battle against the Lord that God

said, “Behold, the people is one, and they have all one language; and this they begin to do: and now nothing will be restrained from them, which they have imagined to do” (Genesis 11:6). This is a powerful statement, showing that they had no way of turning back to God to believe the gospel and be saved. The only way the people could be one in rebellion against God would be if they were not listening to God’s free-will checks of marriage and family. Therefore, as is told to us in Romans 1, the reason the Gentiles were given over to a reprobate mind at the Tower of Babel was due to widespread sodomy.

(Sodomites may argue that there is no record of sodomy in Genesis 11. That is true. However, God giving man over to a reprobate mind, as mentioned in Romans 1:28, is a reference to what happened in Genesis 11, which means that the sodomy, described in Romans 1:26-27, must have been happening in Babylon as well.)

God then created nations as a third check against man’s free will in response to widespread sodomy. It was over 1,500 years later that God started the dispensation of grace that we are in today, in which Gentiles are being saved. It also took five generations, from the time of Peleg (when God created nations) to Abram, before God found ONE man through Whom He could start His nation, the nation of Israel. In other words, worldwide sodomy was so damaging that, when God punished it, five generations were completely lost, and the Gentile nations, as a whole, were lost for over 1,500 years!

As previously mentioned, the Antichrist will not “regard...the desire of women” (Daniel 11:37), which shows that his kingdom is a sodomite one. He destroys nationalism, as Revelation 17:12-14 says that the kings of the earth “have one mind, and shall give their power and strength unto the beast. These shall make war with the Lamb.” Thus, Nimrod is a type of the Antichrist’s kingdom. How can nationalism be destroyed to the point that all kings have one mind and give their power to the beast? By practicing sodomy. In other words, their “one mind” is that they are god, and the true God cannot stop them. This unification of attitude, as seen earlier, only takes place in a society given over to sodomy, because only sodomites have completely removed the knowledge of God from their minds.

In his book, “The Two Babylons,” Alexander Hislop asserts that Nimrod was married to his mother, Semiramis. You may think this is sick, and it is. However, if all you want to do is become mighty on the earth against God, this is how to do it. Remember our earlier discussion that Athaliah, the mother of the king of Israel, got her power because the queen mother was considered to be the earthly counterpart of the queen of heaven. Therefore, by marrying his own mother, Nimrod could assert that he was God and his wife/mother was the religion that the whole world should follow. This is also why the Antichrist causes the whole world to bow down to the image to the beast, which is also the queen of heaven.

I hope all of this is coming together for you now. Basically, in order to get man to follow the lusts of his own flesh to the point where no one will be saved, God’s three institutions of marriage, family, and nations have to be overcome so that

man's free will can be given wholly over to sin. Marriage and family are destroyed by sodomy for obvious reasons. Nations are also destroyed by sodomy because sodomy gets the knowledge of God out of man's mind so that he only thinks of himself. If man is his own god, nations cannot tell him what to do. In fact, national rules will be changed so that man can get away with whatever lusts he desires, and this will eventually lead to nations being eliminated in favor of one, world government. The way this takes place is by the marriage of sex and religion, such that the woman is deified as the queen of heaven, and she should be listened to, while sodomy takes place as the way for individuals to gain power as their own gods. (Note that Jesus said that, if the tribulation period lasts longer than seven years, "there should no flesh be saved" (Matthew 24:22).)

You may think that an increase in sodomy and a deification of women cannot happen at the same time. After all, if women are worshipped, wouldn't men have more sex with them? Actually, we already see America going toward both today. More people are sodomites than ever before. The one sin you cannot speak against in the United States is sodomy, because all need to be of one mind in order to channel the power of god within themselves through sodomy. The woman is deified as the queen of heaven, because women rule over men. They also walk around naked because it is their sex appeal that causes them to be worshipped as queens. After all, the average woman in the country in 1900 wore very little to no makeup or jewelry, covered up her body, and was valued as a mother, a companion in life, and a helper on the farm. Today, the average woman makes herself look as false as possible so that men's eyes bug out over how gorgeous she is. This gives her a power over men, sort of like god. If a woman is revered as a god, you certainly cannot have sex with her. This is seen in the "Me Too" movement, as every little advance by a man against a woman is scrutinized. Therefore, men stop having sex with women so as not to get in trouble with them, and men have sex with each other in order to empower themselves so that they may be gods, too.

Sodomy Does not Fit

When you learn God's design for sex and marriage, you can clearly see that sodomy is unnatural and does not fit God's design. God designed sex for marriage and pro-creation. When two men have sex, there are two seeds but no womb for carrying the seeds. When two women have sex, there are two wombs but no seed to plant inside the womb. Therefore, sodomy is against God's design, making it an abomination. ("Thou shalt not lie with mankind, as with womankind: it is abomination" (Leviticus 18:22).), because it destroys the free-will checks that God put in man, which keeps man from believing the gospel and receiving the gift of eternal life. Thus, sodomy leads whole societies into burning in an eternal lake of fire, instead of receiving the joys of God's eternal kingdom.

Perhaps an example will make it clearer how illogical sodomy is. If I have a printer with a USB connector at the end, I need to put the USB connector into a USB port on my computer in order for the printer to work. The connector is called a USB **male** connector, and the port is called a USB **female** port. If I was to tell a computer geek that I wanted to put my **male** connector into a **male** port, he would

say I am crazy. Not only is it impossible to do, but it also will not work. In order for my printer to print, the **male** connector MUST go into a **female** port. Only the male plus the female will cause my printer to work.

Yet, sodomites are so stupid as to think that male-male and female-female go perfectly together. It does not take a genius to figure out that God designed only for a male and a female to be married. Just like with the USB connector and the port, all you have to do is look at the parts and go with what fits! (This is a skill that most people learned in pre-school, as they put round pegs in round holes and square pegs in square holes. Evidentially, sodomites have forgotten their pre-school training!)

Of course, human relations are much more complicated than USB relations. A USB male does not object to being connected to a female port and vice-versa. Humans, on the other hand, have a sin nature, a conscience, and men and women think differently. For example, men tend to think that the sin of fantasizing over looking at a pornographic image is okay, while women tend to think that the sin of fantasizing over a relationship on a soap opera on television is okay. If a man marries a woman, his pornography and her romance novels may be thrown away, but, if they marry people of the same sex, they may be able to get away with those sins. Therefore, by engaging in sodomite relationships, both men and women can enjoy more sinful pleasures without having the opposite sex around to put a check on their indulgences. In other words, logic, regarding the parts God gave the different genders, gets thrown out the window in favor of working “all uncleanness with greediness” (Ephesians 4:19). “The heart of the sons of men is fully set in them to do evil” (Ecclesiastes 8:11).

History of Sodomy in the United States

So, how did we get to the point of sodomy being accepted in the United States? The following is our history on the subject.

Sodomy was punishable by death in the British colonies before the United States was created. This is because of the Bible’s death penalty for sodomites. Also, most people in the United States, until about 1930, were raised with strong, moral standards according to the Bible. Therefore, most people believed sodomy to be a sin worthy of death. Granted, the sexual revolution of the 1920s resulted in pre-marital sex and adultery becoming much more common in the United States. However, the acceptance of sodomy requires a much greater degradation in morals. After all, the only sanctioned sex in the United States in its early history was sex between a man and a woman, who were married to each other. Morals can more easily degrade to a man having a sex with a woman who is not his wife than to having sex with another man. In fact, even during the sexual revolution of the 1960s, “The overriding opinion of the medical establishment was that [sodomy] was a developmental maladjustment.” “Essentially, labeling [sodomy] as a psychological condition prevented this group from being able to make demands for social and legal rights as well as cultural representation.”

(https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Sexual_revolution_in_1960s_United_States, accessed December 12, 2018).

Therefore, although sodomy was illegal, it was very rare that anyone was executed for sodomy. Probably no more than 10 people were executed for sodomy in the British colonies from 1600 to 1776.

https://simple.wikipedia.org/wiki/Sodomy_laws_in_the_United_States, accessed December 12, 2018). Even if someone was guilty of sodomy and had two witnesses to it, most people probably thought that it was disgusting and the result of a mental problem, much like eating your own poop. Therefore, while sick to think about, sodomites probably would not be brought to trial and punished. (There was a notable exception to this when 425 alleged sodomites were fired in 1953 from their federal jobs by the Truman administration and another 5,000 or so sodomites were fired shortly thereafter by the new president, Dwight Eisenhower.)

https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Lavender_scare, accessed December 12, 2018).

Nevertheless, because of the Biblical restriction against sodomy, “by the time the Bill of Rights was ratified in 1791, every state in the new United States had laws that treated sodomy as a crime.” https://simple.wikipedia.org/wiki/Sodomy_laws_in_the_United_States, accessed December 12, 2018). This was still the case in 1960, even though the punishment for sodomy had probably been lessened in most states by then.

However, the same invention that changed the America’s view on opposite-sex activity also changed America’s view on same-sex activity. This invention was the birth-control pill, which was legalized by the Food and Drug Administration in 1960.

The reason for this change is that, for the most part, women control the morals of a society. One reason for this is because they are the ones who have more control over what is taught to children. Another reason for this is that men’s sins are more visibly seen than women’s sins. Therefore, women end up rebuking men for their sins, while men do not rebuke women for their sins. Therefore, women keep men’s sins within their definition of what is acceptable, while men generally do not curb the immoral behavior of women. (Another reason for this is that, as we mentioned before, women are more concerned with the details than men are. Therefore, they will rebuke their husbands more readily than husbands will rebuke their wives.)

We have already discussed details of the sexual revolutions of the 1920s and the 1960s. Therefore, we will just summarize the key points as they relate to sodomy.

The latex condom became widely available around 1920. This resulted in a vast increase in sexual intercourse outside of marriage. Men were now more interested in the pursuit of sex for pleasure, because they did not have to worry about getting a woman pregnant if they had sex with her. However, women still wanted to get married and have kids because they were not able to become financially independent since they were not paid well for working jobs. Therefore, women went to college and had sex with men in order to trap men into marrying and taking care of them.

However, in 1960, the United States government legalized the birth-control pill.

This is a pill that a woman can take to keep from getting pregnant. Now, women had control over getting pregnant or not, not having to rely upon men to wear condoms. This meant that more women started going to college to graduate and get a better paying job, rather than just to trap a man into marrying them, since women could take the pill, have sex, and not have to leave a career to have a baby. Also, more high-paying jobs became available that did not require manual labor, which meant that more women could support themselves financially, and they could choose to have sex and not get pregnant. Therefore, women began having sex for pleasure in the 1960s, just like men had done in the 1920s. Since women control society's morals, the 1960s was the first time in the United States where sex purely for pleasure became accepted by society as a whole.

The 1960s Sexual Revolution's Consequences for Sodomites

With opposite-sex couples having sex just for pleasure, it now made sense that sodomites could have sex for fun as well, which is all they ever did anyway. Therefore, the change in sexual morals for opposite-sex couples made it easier for same-sex couples to experience a revolution.

In other words, with the birth-control pill being widely used by women in the 1960s, America's attitude changed from having sex for making babies to having sex just for fun. This was called "free love." Therefore, people started contemplating the fact that they could probably have more fun by having sex with the same gender as them, because they would not have to deal with all of the problems created by the opposite gender. After all, if all you want to do is "hookup" with someone for sex, a man will be looking for certain criteria with a woman before he will desire to have sex with her, and a woman will be looking for entirely different criteria with a man before she will desire to have sex with him. The result will be many nights in which both sexes "strike out," not having sex that night. However, if you go to a same-sex bar for a hookup, you are much more likely to have sex, due to more similar sex criteria being present between two people of the same gender. Since your chance of having sex increases in sodomite relationships and America began seeking sex entirely for pleasure, it makes sense that more people would find sodomy attractive. In other words, if all you want is pleasure and you have a 25% of having sex if you go to a normal bar but you have a 50% change of having sex if you go to a sodomite bar, all things being equal, you will go to a sodomite bar. This is why, as Tammy Bruce mentions in "The Death of Right and Wrong," the sodomites she knows brag about their hundreds of sexual encounters that they have per year, which is much greater than those who only engage in sex with the opposite gender.

With that being said, sodomites in the 1960s still had to overcome the stigmatism of what they were doing is a sin, especially as it relates to families. For example, parents of a young man having pre-marital sex may rationalize it away by saying that he will probably marry the young woman soon. Therefore, his sin will go away soon. However, for the parents of a young man committing sodomy, there was no such rationalization because, even if he committed his life to the other man, he would still be living in sin for the rest of his life. Therefore, sodomites had a

stronger sin stigmatism to overcome.

Therefore, before 1950, most sodomites kept their feelings to themselves, because they felt alone in society, because they were going against their family. A young man could easily pursue and date a young woman, because that is the natural way of things. However, the unnatural behavior of sodomites was much more difficult to pursue. After all, a sodomite cannot just walk up to some random guy and have sex with him, just like a young man cannot just walk up to a random young woman and have sex with her (except for prostitutes). A sodomite would have to try to find another sodomite, and that sodomite would have to be interested in him, and this would all have to take place in secret so that both families do not know what they are doing. Therefore, most sodomites before 1950 hid their feelings and even married women and had children with them like natural men would do.

What changed in the 1950s was that cars became affordable and apartments became available. Therefore, in the early 1950s, the apartment, the car, and the city gave sodomites more autonomy. (<https://www.independent.co.uk/news/world/americas/johann-hari-the-hidden-history-of-homosexuality-in-the-us-2300636.html>, accessed December 12, 2018, "Johann Hari: The Hidden History of Homosexuality in the US" by Johann Hari, June 22, 2011). Sodomites could now pursue other sodomites apart from the watchful eyes of their parents.

The Liberation of Sodomites

There are three things that started the sodomite liberation movement. First, the greater autonomy of young people living by themselves in the city in the 1950s allowed young 'uns to pursue sodomy. Second, the birth-control pill separated sex and reproduction in the 1960s. Third, sodomy rights were pushed in other countries from 1940 to 1970. (https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Gay_liberation, accessed December 12, 2018). Therefore, sodomy rights began to be pushed for in the United States, as well.

First, in 1963, Illinois became the first state to repeal their sodomy law. (https://simple.wikipedia.org/wiki/Sodomy_laws_in_the_United_States, accessed December 12, 2018). Second, Vanguard, a society for sodomy rights, was formed in 1965 in San Francisco (no surprise here). The cause was taken up by a priest, which took away the fear of religious backlash against sodomites. Then, "On March 28, 1969 in San Francisco, Leo Laurence...called for the" Sodomite Revolution of 1969, exhorting sodomites to "come out en masse." (https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Gay_liberation, accessed December 12, 2018).

This led to the Stonewall Riots three months later, which "are widely considered to constitute the single most important event leading to the" sodomite liberation movement. That was when members of the sodomite community began "a series of spontaneous, violent demonstrations...against a police raid that took place in the early morning hours of June 28, 1969, at the Stonewall Inn, located in the Greenwich Village neighborhood of Manhattan, New York City."

(https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Sexual_revolution_in_1960s_United_States, accessed December 12, 2018). "By the summer of 1970, groups in at least eight American cities were sufficiently organized to schedule simultaneous events commemorating the Stonewall riots for

the last Sunday in June.” (https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Gay_liberation, accessed December 12, 2018).

Thus, the sodomite liberation movement started in 1969 and continued until the mid-1980s. During that time, sodomites were encouraged “to engage in radical direct action, and to counter societal shame with” sodomite pride. “By the early 1990s the radicalism of [sodomite] liberation was eclipsed in the mainstream by newly-out, assimilationist, white [sodomite] men who stressed civil rights and mainstream politics.” (https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Gay_liberation, accessed December 12, 2018).

“By 2003, thirty-six of the fifty states had repealed their laws against sodomy.” In that year, “in a case called *Lawrence v. Texas*, the Supreme Court of the United States ruled that sodomy laws were unconstitutional.”

(https://simple.wikipedia.org/wiki/Sodomy_laws_in_the_United_States, accessed December 12, 2018).

With sodomy being allowed in the United States, the next hurdle for sodomites to clear was marriage. This would be tougher, because the federal government had already taken a stand against sodomite marriage with the Defense of Marriage Act being enacted on September 21, 1996, as a United States federal law that defined marriage “as the union of one man and one woman.”

(https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Defense_of_Marriage_Act, accessed December 12, 2018). Sodomites continued to fight, resulting in Massachusetts becoming “the first U.S. state and the sixth jurisdiction in the world to legalize same-sex marriage” on May 17, 2004.

(https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/History_of_same-sex_marriage_in_the_United_States, accessed December 12, 2018).

In 2013, the Defense of Marriage Act was declared unconstitutional. By June 26, 2015, 36 states had legalized same-sex marriage. On that day, the Supreme Court of the United States legalized same-sex marriage for the entire country. Therefore, as of the writing of this book, sodomites are seen by most Americans as being just as normal as those who desire opposite-sex sexual relationships.

The Effect of Parents and Culture

We have already concluded that sodomites are not born that way. Rather, they make the choice to be sodomites. As previously mentioned, God has given all of us a conscience to know right from wrong. However, God leaves it up to man to fill the conscience with the information of what is right or wrong. For example, when I was a kid, I was taught that sodomy is wrong, but most children today are taught that sodomy is something that should be celebrated. There is much talk among the liberal media that we should not try to influence children, but let them discover their own sexual identity. This is code for: “You have no right to teach your children what you think is right or wrong. We will do it for you, and we will teach them to be sexually perverse!”

It is the media, the school system, and other components of “the course of this world” (Ephesians 2:2) that have taught children that sodomy is okay. Proverbs 22:6 says, “Train up a child in the way he should go: and when he is old, he will not depart from it.” This means that if kids today are taught that sodomy is a good thing, then more kids will choose to be sodomites.

A 2018 Gallup poll says that 4.5% of Americans in 2017 identified themselves as sodomites. The same poll only found 3.5% of Americans were sodomites in 2012. Why such a large increase in just 5 years? Because children today are taught to be sodomites, rather than to follow God's natural design for sex. This is seen in that "the percentage of [those born between 1980 and 1999] who identify as [sodomites] increased from 5.8% in 2012 to 8.1% in 2017." Those born between 1965 to 1979 had an increase from 3.2 to 3.5%, and those born before 1964 decreased from 2.3% in 2012 to 1.9% in 2017. (<https://news.gallup.com/poll/234863/estimate-lgbt-population-rises.aspx>, "In U.S., Estimate of LGBT Population Rises to 4.5%" by Frank Newport on May 22, 2018, accessed December 13, 2018).

What this shows is that the indoctrination program of the course of this world is working to make more sodomite people than before. Since children and young adults are more easily influenced, society focuses on changing their minds; therefore, their percentages are increasing, while the sodomite percentage of seniors has actually decreased. In other words, if sodomites are "born that way" and our culture has become more pro-sodomite, all age groups would experience increases in those who say they are sodomites, because natural sodomites would no longer be afraid to proclaim who they really are. However, since seniors are less influenced by outside forces and their sodomite percentage has decreased, it shows that sodomy is a learned behavior; it is NOT natural!

This proves that, since God created us, He knows more about us than we know about ourselves. The Bible is right after all. Imagine that! Therefore, instead of listening to pop psychology, which says that certain people are born sodomites and others are not, we should listen to what the Word of God says.

To that end, there are two Bible passages we should look at. The first is Matthew 19:3-12, and the second is I Corinthians 7:1-9.

In Matthew 19:3-9, Jesus explains that marriage is between one male and one female, and it is for life. "His disciples say unto him, If the case of the man be so with his wife, it is not good to marry. But he said unto them, all men cannot receive this saying, save they to whom it is given. For there are some eunuchs, which were so born from their mother's womb: and there are some eunuchs, which were made eunuchs of men: and there be eunuchs, which have made themselves eunuchs for the kingdom of heaven's sake. He that is able to receive it, let him receive it" (Matthew 19:10-12). What Jesus basically said is that some people are born without a sex drive, some are made not to have a sex drive by men, and some decide not to have sex in their lifetimes in order to better serve the Lord.

Paul says a similar thing: "It is good for a man not to touch a woman. Nevertheless, to avoid fornication, let every man have his own wife, and let every woman have her own husband.... But every man hath his proper gift of God, one after this manner, and another after that. I say therefore to the unmarried and widows, It is good for them if they abide even as I. But if they cannot contain, let them marry: for it is better to marry than to burn" (I Corinthians 7:1-2,7-9).

Now, we have already learned that the natural way to have sex is only between one man and one woman. This is the way that ALL humans are designed to have sex. However, by looking at these two Bible passages, we have learned that some humans have a gift from God not to have a sex drive and should remain single their entire lives. Do you know of a single person under 40 years old like this? I do not. This is because of another principle we learn from these two passages. Jesus said that some men are made eunuchs by other men. This means that other people can change your sexual orientation. Jesus also said that some people make the decision to be eunuchs for the kingdom of heaven's sake, which means that people can change their own sexual orientation.

Since no one is born a sodomite, this means that people become sodomites either: 1) By "the course of this world" (Ephesians 2:2), i.e., parents, schools, media, and society, teaching them as kids to become sodomites, or 2) By choosing to become sodomites once they become adults.

This conclusion is readily seen in the survey numbers we just mentioned. The largest increase in sodomites came from the under-40 category, which make sense since younger people are more susceptible to changing to become sodomites because society is pushing in that direction and they still tend to follow society. By contrast, the oldest segment of our population actually saw a decrease in sodomy, probably due to being disgusted with the radical, liberal tactics of the media, and have made the choice to be true to who God made them to be, instead of listening to what society tells them they should be.

Sex Mixed with Religion

Since sex causes men and women to feel more like gods, it is no wonder that sex is often connected with religion, as seen in the following:

Hinduism: Awakening the god within yourself is what the Hindu practice of yoga is all about. They believe there are 7 chakras (energy centers) in the human body, and that yoga releases this power through "the third eye." It is no coincidence that Hindus believe that there are two paths to nirvana (the eternal): 1) Sexual pleasure, and 2) Yoga. (*"What the Sex Lives and Sexual Beliefs of Hindus Are Like"* by Kellen Perry, <https://www.ranker.com/list/hinduism-sex-beliefs/kellen-perry?page=4>, accessed May 17, 2019). It is also no coincidence that Americans are pursuing sexual pleasure and yoga more than they ever have before in their history, because both are related to believing that you are your own god.

Moreover, yoga has even been "Christianized." Many people, who attend "Christian" churches in the United States today, now participate in Yoga—some even in their own church! In her book, "Yoga for Christians," Susan Bordenkircher says that "your breath...is...your gateway to actually feeling the Holy Spirit moving and working within you. As a Christian, God's presence is only as far away as your breath....Inhale the Holy Spirit. Exhale everything that is not of God. Inhale the power that comes from God." (*"Yoga for Christians"* by Susan Bordenkircher, pgs. 18,20, published by

Thomas Nelson, 2006). What blasphemy!

Also, Benny Hinn became popular among Churchianity by performing “miracles” and by causing people to fall on the floor. His “power” is not of God, but is very similar to what is seen in Kundalini Yoga.

Thus, many “Christians” are now following Hindu practices, whether they know it or not.

Mormonism: Mormons believe that God is on the planet Kolob. They believe that the way that we all got on earth was that God is constantly having sex with his many wives, his wives are always pregnant, and the children born are sent down to earth to live. Therefore, all good Mormon men will eventually become like God, having a planet of their own, wives of their own, and always having sex with them in order to populate their own planets.

Islam: Many Islamic texts refer to the faithful receiving 72 virgins in heaven and is often cited as why Islamic terrorists attacked America on September 11, 2001. Here is what one, Islamic text says about this: “Abu Umama narrated: 'The Messenger of God said, 'Everyone that God admits into paradise will be married to 72 wives; two of them are houris and seventy of his inheritance of the [female] dwellers of hell. All of them will have libidinous sex organs and he will have an ever-erect penis.' ” (From Sunan Ibn Majah, Zuhd (Book of Abstinence) 39, found on https://wikiislam.net/wiki/72_Virgins, accessed May 17, 2019). (Sounds painful to me!)

Judaism in the Bible: (This is man’s religion, not what God told Israel to do.) “A man and his father will go in unto the same maid, to profane my holy name: and they lay themselves down upon clothes laid to pledge by every altar, and they drink the wine of the condemned in the house of their god” (Amos 2:7-8). The priest’s sons “lay with the women that assembled at the door of the tabernacle of the congregation” (I Samuel 2:22). “I will not punish your daughters when they commit whoredom, nor your spouses when they commit adultery: for themselves are separated with whores, and **they sacrifice with harlots:** therefore the people that doth not understand shall fall” (Hosea 4:14). These verses show that Israel mixed sex with religion. Since “there is no new thing under the sun” (Ecclesiastes 1:9), we should expect sex to be mixed with religion today, as well. The reason for this is that a religious system protects its leaders, allowing them to commit more abominations than a regular person can.

One reason for this is that society thinks more highly of them. They treat “men of the cloth” with respect. If a child rapist just got out of prison and moved onto your street, you would probably either try to move somewhere else or watch your children at all times. But, if a priest moves into your neighborhood, you would assume that your child is safe around him, because he is a “man of God.” Of course, this may no longer be the assumption after what has happened with the Catholic church.

A second reason for more sexual debauchery taking place in a religion is because

the religion protects itself. Religion is big business. If a leader is accused of sexual sin, the religion will seek to exonerate the person or separate themselves from him because people will lose confidence in their religion and stop attending, which decreases the money that a religion receives. It is sort of like a bank. Bank of America has a 1,200 foot tall tower in New York (*"Tallest Buildings in NYC"*, by Lauren Cook and amny.com staff, 6-11-18, <https://www.amny.com/real-estate/tallest-buildings-in-nyc-1.9216740>, accessed March 27, 2019). They do not need such a large building. However, people are more likely to put their money in Bank of America because they seem to be financially secure as evidenced by such a tall building. Similarly speaking, religions receive more money and parishioners when they have beautiful buildings with leaders inside who appear to be spiritually sound. Once their leaders are involved in sex scandals, the religion tries to cover it up to keep the money flow into their religion from diminishing.

It is for these reasons, then, that those involved in sexual sin can hide their sins and get away with more things if they are leaders in a religion, as opposed to being ordinary laypeople, as we will soon see with the Catholic church.

CHAPTER 11

Sexual Confusion

Were Sodomites Abused as Children?

Since we have learned that sodomites choose that abominable behavior instead of being born that way, we can ask the question, “Why do people choose to become sodomites?” By the way, note how that, in spite of the great pressure by our culture for people to be sodomites, there are still less than 5% of the United States’ adults who say they are sodomites. This shows just how unnatural sodomy is. Just like if society promoted eating your own poop, it would still be a minority of people who would actually do it, very few people take up the unnatural, disgusting behavior of sodomy in spite of society’s great push for it.

Since sodomy is unnatural, what makes the 4.5% of Americans, who say they are sodomites, choose that unnatural lifestyle? The main factor is that they are raped as children. “A 2009 report prepared for a bisexual health summit revealed that 74 percent of bisexuals had been sexually abused as children.” “As explained candidly by the [sodomite] feminist and academic Camille Paglia, “Every single [sodomite] I know has some sort of drama going on, back in childhood. Something was happening that we’re not allowed to ask about anymore.” (<https://stream.org/yes-childhood-sexual-abuse-often-contribute-homosexuality/>, “Yes, Childhood Sexual Abuse Often Does Contribute to Homosexuality”, By Michael Brown Published on February 23, 2017, Accessed December 13, 2018). This admission comes from someone who is a professed sodomite! In other words, unnatural, forced sex between an adult and a child is what leads to unnatural sexual behavior in adulthood.

A 1997 study published in the Journal of General Internal Medicine revealed that “of 327 [sodomite] men participating in an ongoing cohort study pertaining to risk factors for HIV infection who completed a survey regarding history of sexual abuse, 116 (35.5%) reported being sexually abused as children.” (<https://onlinelibrary.wiley.com/doi/pdf/10.1046/j.1525-1497.1997.012004250.x>, “Childhood Sexual Abuse Among Homosexual Men” by William R. Lenderking, PhD, Cheryl Wold, MPH, Kenneth H. Mayer, MD, Robert Goldstein, MPH, Elena Losina, MS, George R. Seage, III, MPH, DSc, April 1997, in the Journal of General Internal Medicine, accessed December 13, 2018).

“Even before the depth of the Catholic Church’s problem became known, it was common knowledge that many [sodomite] men pursue sexual relationships with adolescent boys. Why?...So many [sodomite] men had their first sexual experience as an adolescent with an adult male” (*The Death of Right and Wrong: Exposing the Left’s Assault on our culture and values* by Tammy Bruce, 2003, Forum by Random House, pg. 111).

Now, if you do a Google search to find the correlation between sodomy and child rape, many articles will say there is no correlation. However, when you look for objective facts from those articles to corroborate their conclusion, you will not find any. Instead, they will say things like, “Well, it is really hard to say if there is a correlation because it is hard to define terminology.” This sounds like President Bill Clinton’s response to the question if he did it with Monica Lewinsky. “Well, it all depends on what your definition of ‘it’ is.” In other words, the media is saying that, because we have no evidence to support our claim that there is no correlation between sodomy and child rape, we will just try to make you not believe the facts, just like a defense attorney does when his client is obviously guilty.

In other words, the data is clear. When you are raped as a child by a sodomite, you are not taught what normal sexual behavior is. Therefore, you are much more likely to choose the deviant sexual behavior of sodomy for yourself, rather than choosing the normal sexual behavior of a relationship between a man and a woman. With this in mind, we will now look at the epidemic of child rape among the Catholic priesthood.

Catholic Priests and Child Rape

There have probably been several hundred thousand children, mostly boys, who were raped by Catholic priests worldwide over the last 70 years! (I will explain later how I came to this conclusion.) While Catholicism will deny it, this is clearly a much greater percentage than what is observed in society as a whole. Before looking at the facts, we will examine why this is true.

The Catholic System

In Revelation 17:5, the religious system of the Antichrist is called “MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH.” Babylon is the religious system seen in Genesis 11 at the Tower of Babel, hence the name. Now, I will not bore you with all of the details, but Babylon is the Catholic church, as shown in Alexander Hislop’s 1853 book titled “The Two Babylons” and subtitled “The Papal Worship Proved to Be the Worship of Nimrod and His Wife.” In this book, he shows that the Catholic church’s worship is not unlike the worship of Nimrod and his wife, which was the worship system of those at Babel in Genesis 11.

The reason this is important is because it shows that the Catholic church does not follow scripture. Rather, it is an un-Biblical, religious system. All of its practices are the Babylonian religion, cleverly disguised in a cloak of Churchianity.

In the Bible, the Pharisees were called, “Rabbi, Rabbi” by men (Matthew 23:7). They fasted twice each week and gave tithes of all they possessed (Luke 18:12), even to the point of paying a tithe on their spices (Matthew 23:23)! Yet Jesus said of the Pharisees, “Ye are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do” (John 8:44). “Ye serpents, ye generation of vipers, how can ye escape the damnation of hell?” (Matthew 23:33). Why? Because they honored God with their lips, but their heart was far from God (Mark 7:6). Jesus told the Pharisees, “Full well ye reject the commandment of God, that ye may keep your own tradition” (Mark 7:9). Thus, they were “making the word of God of none effect through [their] tradition” (Mark 7:13). You see, the Pharisees did not care about God or obeying Him. “They loved the praise of men more than the praise of God” (John 12:43).

Therefore, they created rules that made them look godly to men, but they were really unbelievers bound for hell. In fact, their rules made them bound for hell, more so than “evil” people, such as thieves and rapists. Why? Because their godly appearance duped innocent people into following their abominable religion. Jesus

told the Pharisees that, when they make a convert, they “make him twofold more the child of hell than” themselves (Matthew 23:15).

Unbelieving man works “all uncleanness with greediness” (Ephesians 4:19). A person, who has “a form of godliness, but denying the power [God’s Word (Hebrews 4:12)] thereof” (II Timothy 3:5), will get much farther with his uncleanness than someone who does not have a cloak of godliness. This is why Catholics have gotten away with raping several hundred thousand children in the last 70 years.

Anonymity Breeds Corruption

Do you know who Stephen Baker is? How about Jeffrey Dahmer? More people know who Jeffrey Dahmer is because he was not protected by the Catholic religion. Jeffrey Dahmer raped, murdered, and dismembered 17 men and boys from 1978 to 1991. The result of these heinous actions was that he received 16 life sentences in prison, but he only stayed in prison for a few years before he was beaten to death by a fellow inmate. He died when he was only 34 years old.

https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Jeffrey_Dahmer accessed January 3, 2019).

Stephen Baker was a Catholic who had “contact with children and the public as part of his ministry” from 1986 to 2000. During that period, “Baker allegedly abused more than 100 children in the area of Johnstown PA, including 88 students from Bishop McCort High School, where Baker taught religion and acted as an unofficial sports trainer.” (*Criminal charges against former Ministers Provincial of the Third Order Regular Franciscans, Immaculate Conception province, Hollidaysburg PA (2016)*,

http://www.bishopaccountability.org/criminal/charges_for_enabling/, accessed January 3, 2019). The word “allegedly” is used because Baker committed suicide in 2013, at the age of 62, before he was tried in court

(*Alleged Abuser, Brother Baker, Commits Suicide* by Fox Youngstown January 27, 2013, accessed January 3, 2019, http://www.bishop-accountability.org/news2013/01_02/2013_01_27_FoxYoungstown_AllegedAbuser.htm).

Granted, Stephen Baker’s alleged crimes are of a lesser severity than Jeffrey Dahmer’s crimes, but Baker got away with more crimes for a longer period of time and was protected for the last 13 years of his life by the Catholic church.

Furthermore, Baker’s crimes are not isolated. If we look at the Catholic system in Pennsylvania as a whole, a grand jury said that “the ‘real number’ of abused children might be in the thousands since some secret church records were lost, and victims were afraid to come forward.” As with Jeffrey Dahmer, “most of the Pennsylvania victims were boys...the report said.” Not only were the boys sexually abused, but they were also made to think those bad things were happening to them because of their own sin, since Catholic authorities were the ones doing those things to them. For example, “one boy was forced to say confession to the priest who sexually abused him.” Furthermore, when abuses were discovered, the grand jury confirmed that there was “a ‘systematic cover-up by senior church officials in Pennsylvania and at the Vatican,’” which allowed for future abuses.

(*Stunning findings on report of Catholic Church abuse: Pa. priests molested more than 1,000 children* by Frank Miles, <https://www.foxnews.com/us/stunning-findings-on-report-of-catholic-church-abuse-pa-priests-molested-more-than-1000-children>, accessed January 3, 2019). The Catholic system made it easier to rape boys, and it

protected those doing so, so they could continue and not be punished in the end.

Babylon

What this shows is that, if people want to do evil by themselves, they get caught and punished more quickly. However, if there is a system in place to hide evil, people can do more evil for longer periods of time. “Because sentence against an evil work is not executed speedily, therefore the heart of the sons of men is fully set in them to do evil” (Ecclesiastes 8:11). Knowing this, Satan developed the Babylonian religious system in the days of Nimrod. Because Nimrod’s evil was hidden in this system, “He began to be a mighty one in the earth,...and the beginning of his kingdom was Babel” (Genesis 10:8,10). Using the Babylonian religious system, Satan was able to execute such a great rebellion by men against God that God said that if He did not stop men at that point, “nothing will be restrained from them, which they have imagined to do” (Genesis 11:6). God created nationalism at that time, as nations restrain evil with their laws.

However, when the Babylonian religious system rears its ugly head, it can cause nations to forego justice, due to the great power of Babylon. Revelation 17:2 says that “the kings of the earth have committed fornication” with Babylon, resulting in “The inhabitants of the earth [being] made drunk with the wine of her fornication.” In other words, the Babylonian religious system can have power over nations to keep evil from being punished.

The Catholic church is the Babylonian religious system, but the masses do not recognize it as such, because Revelation 17:5 says that it is in mystery form. In other words, only believers can see this by the revelation of this truth to them by the Holy Ghost and the mind of Christ, which are given unto them to teach them the deep things of God (I Corinthians 2:9-16).

We see this in that Babylon is the religion of the Antichrist, since, when God destroys the Antichrist and his forces, an angel declares, “Babylon the great is fallen, is fallen” (Revelation 18:2; 14:8). That system includes the false prophet having the world make an image to the beast (the Antichrist) and causing all to bow down to the image or be killed (Revelation 13:14-15). Similarly today, the false prophet, i.e., the Pope of the Catholic Church, causes all to bow down to this same image, which is Mary, the Queen of Heaven, or be in danger of missing out on Catholic heaven. Thus, Catholicism is the false religious system of Babylon.

As such, it should not surprise us that Catholicism is used by the devil to promote and protect the sodomy of boys by Catholic leaders, especially since, as we determined earlier, sodomy must have been prevalent during the times of the Tower of Babel.

The following are quotes from various sources to show how bad the problem of child rape is within the Catholic system:

“In February 2017 the Australian Royal Commission into Institutional Responses

to Child Sexual Abuse released a report revealing 7% of Australian priests between 1950 and 2009 were accused of abusing children, with 4,444 sex abuse incidents recorded.” “Prof Briggs, of the University of South Australia, has 50 years experience working in the field of child abuse and child protection. She said, “There has been an acceptance [among priests] over the years that having sex with a boy is not breaking celibacy. What priests told me was that the biggest crime was to have sex with a woman.”

https://rationalwiki.org/wiki/Child_sexual_abuse_in_the_Roman_Catholic_Church, accessed December 13, 2018). In other words, Catholic priests justified raping little boys by thinking in their minds that they had “earned” the right to do so, because they were obeying God by being celibate. Thus, in their minds, they blamed God for their wretchedness!

“Priests who had abused children were simply moved on to other parishes where, all too frequently, they re-offended. Pope Benedict XVI personally issued a document telling bishops to hush up allegations of abuse and avoid reporting abuse to the authorities. The bishops were instructed to keep this sensitive document in a safe at all times. Perpetrators and victims of abuse were sometimes pressured into silence with the threat of excommunication to keep them in line. Other victims were bribed into silence.”

“Roman Catholics are taught from early childhood to respect priests and to believe what priests tell them about God and religion. Paedophile priests can easily abuse this position. For example, Alexander Bede Walsh was convicted of serious sex assaults against boys. One child abuse victim said Walsh gave him alcohol, told him drinking it would get him to heaven; another believed abuse was the hand of God touching him. Another man, who was a teenager at the time, claims abuse by Walsh drove him to attempt suicide.”

“An Australian priest named John Denham (now defrocked) is alleged to have assaulted two boys in the late 1970s, who complained to the school principal, Father Brennan. Instead of contacting police, Brennan allegedly caned the boys to make sure they wouldn't complain again.” (So, punish the victim, not the perpetrator!) “According to a grand jury report released on March 1, 2016, large-scale sexual abuse by Catholic priests in Blair and Cambria counties in Pennsylvania was routinely ignored and covered up by law-enforcement and government officials **for decades**. This was possible largely because the Diocese of Altoona-Johnstown was able to control who became the mayor, the police chief, the fire chief and other positions of government authority.”

https://rationalwiki.org/wiki/Child_sexual_abuse_in_the_Roman_Catholic_Church, accessed December 13, 2018).

“Although some accusations date back to the 1950s, molestation by priests was first given significant media attention in the 1980s, in the US and Canada.” “By the early 2000s, Church sexual abuse was a major global story.” “A Church-commissioned report in 2004 said that more than 4,000 US Roman Catholic priests had faced sexual abuse allegations in the last 50 years, in cases involving more than 10,000 children - **mostly boys**.” “A five-year Australian inquiry in 2017 found that ‘tens of thousands of children’ were sexually abused in Australian institutions over decades, including churches, schools and sports clubs.” “In

August 2018, a Pennsylvania grand jury named more than 300 clergy in a report which found more than 1,000 children had been abused.”

<https://www.bbc.com/news/world-44209971>, “Child sexual abuse and the Catholic Church: What you need to know”, August 20, 2018, accessed December 13, 2018)

“More than 3,600 children in Germany were assaulted by Roman Catholic priests between 1946 and 2014, a leaked report has revealed.” <https://www.bbc.com/news/world-europe-45500072>, “German Catholic priests ‘abused thousands of children’”, September 12, 2018, accessed December 13, 2018).

“The U.S. bishops have reported receiving allegations of abuse by 6,721 priests in 1950-2016, or 5.8% of the 116,690 U.S. priests active 1950-2016.” “Thousands of Catholic clergy and religious have raped and sodomized tens of thousands of children—perhaps more than 100,000 children—since 1950.” Rev. Andrew Greeley estimates 50 abuse victims per priest, which would bring the number of victims to 336,050 (6,721 * 50) in the US alone. “Approximately two-thirds of sitting U.S. bishops were alleged in 2002 to have kept accused priests in ministry or moved accused priests to new assignments.” “Fewer than 2 percent of sexual abuse allegations against the Catholic church appear to be false.” “Little is known about the whereabouts of Catholic priests who have been accused of sexual abuse.” <http://www.bishop-accountability.org/AtAGlance/data.htm>, accessed December 13, 2018).

Clearly, child rape by Catholic priests is a huge problem. The reason for this problem is that secrecy surrounding the Catholic church and priests’ frequent access to children creates an environment for sodomites.

Altar boys can start as early as age 7, which is when most receive their first communion. As early as 1965, girls were allowed to start serving as altar girls. The Catholic church tried to put a stop to this in 1970 and 1980. In 1983, canonites started suggesting girls could start serving. In 1992, Pope John Paul II affirmed that girls could serve now. A 2001 letter said that it is preferable to have only boys and so most traditional Catholics only have boys. In 2010, Pope Benedict XVI, had both boys and girls serving mass. https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Female_altar_servers, accessed December 13, 2018). Therefore, Catholic priests predominantly have access to young boys.

The majority of the “abused [are] between the ages of 11 and 14.” Many allegations are made “by adults or older youths years after the abuse occurred.”

https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Catholic_Church_sexual_abuse_cases, accessed December 13, 2018). In other words, a Catholic priest can repeatedly rape a young boy and probably will not suffer any repercussions until years later. He can then be transferred to another parish and start all over again with fresh victims, while Jeffrey Dahmer had no such “luxury” in committing his perverse crimes.

The Left Elite Use the Catholic System to Hide Child Rape

With regard to Catholic priests raping children, “the victims are overwhelmingly teenage boys. David Kupelian of WorldNetDaily.com reports that Stephen Rubino, a lawyer who has represented over 300 alleged victims of abuse by priests,

estimates 85 percent of the victims have been teenage boys. Catholic psychiatrist Dr. Richard Fitzgibbons...[notes] that 90 percent of his patients are either abused teenage males or their priest abusers.” This is because the helpers in the Catholic church are usually altar boys, not altar girls.

“This is chiefly a scandal about unchaste or criminal [sodomites] in the Catholic priesthood,” sums up National Review senior writer Rod Dreher.” “While it is true that it is [sodomite] men in the priesthood who are victimizing boys, this is clearly a subgroup of [sodomite] men who have been attracted to a unique environment within which they are not getting the help they need to control their urges.” (*The Death of Right and Wrong: Exposing the Left's Assault on our culture and values* by Tammy Bruce, 2003, Forum by Random House, pg. 223).

“In his book *Goodbye, Good Men*, investigative reporter Michael Rose does an extraordinary job of documenting the [sodomite] infiltration of the American Catholic hierarchy and the subsequent destruction of foundational values and core teachings.” (*The Death of Right and Wrong: Exposing the Left's Assault on our culture and values* by Tammy Bruce, 2003, Forum by Random House, pg. 224).

It is telling that very few priests are guilty of sexually abusing girls. This is because of the radical [Sodomite] Elite’s control of the media. If girls were abused, something would be done about it. If boys are abused, it is sodomy, which makes the sodomites look bad. Therefore, it is swept under the rug, which allows sodomy with children to continue in the Catholic priesthood. Therefore, celibacy, which has been part of the Roman Catholic church for over 1,500 years, is not followed.

“The abuse of children by Catholic priests, I contend, is the most perfectly clear microcosm of the conscious and subconscious agenda of the Left to make society—all of it—look like them” (*The Death of Right and Wrong: Exposing the Left's Assault on our culture and values* by Tammy Bruce, 2003, Forum by Random House, pg. 224).

How Bad Catholic Seminaries Are

A 2002 survey of Roman Catholic priests revealed that “more than half of all the priests surveyed identified a ‘[sodomite] subculture’ in their diocese or seminary....A 37-year-old priest” said that “there was a [sodomite] lifestyle subculture which...ran the seminary practically.” “At many seminaries, those who do not conform to and accept the [sodomy] lifestyle are directly and indirectly punished.” (*The Death of Right and Wrong: Exposing the Left's Assault on our culture and values* by Tammy Bruce, 2003, Forum by Random House, pg. 225-226).

The Left Elite infiltrated education with the liberal agenda, and they infiltrated the Catholic church with the sodomite agenda. “According to former seminarians and recently ordained priests, this ‘[sodomy] subculture’ is so prominent at certain seminaries that these institutions have earned nicknames such as Notre Flame (for Notre Dame Seminary in New Orleans) and Theological Closet (for Theological College at the Catholic University of America in Washington, D.C.). St. Mary’s Seminary in Baltimore has earned the nickname the ‘Pink Palace’” (*Michael Rose, “Goodbye, Good Men,” Washington, D.C.: Regnery Publishing, Inc., 2002, pgs. 56-57*).

One person said that “some of the seminarians would literally dress like [sodomites] from the Village. They would even go so far as to wear pink silk; it was like going to see La Cage aux Folles.” Another person said that ‘open [sodomite] behavior was more than tolerated....I was even told by one of the seminary faculty that every Friday a van took priesthood students to a nearby city to cruise the [sodomy] bars.’” (*Michael Rose, Goodbye, Good Men, Washington, D.C.: Regnery Publishing, Inc., 2002, pg. 57*). Someone else said, “We had a few guys who sometimes wore women’s clothing, lingerie, makeup, etc., and some who were as effeminate as could be....The campy ones at MIS [Mary Immaculate Seminary, Northampton, P.A.] would call each other by female names” (*Michael Rose, Goodbye, Good Men, Washington, D.C.: Regnery Publishing, Inc., 2002, pg. 171*).

Michael Rose discovered in his research that Catholic seminaries weeded out good Catholics. Catholic doctrine teaches that only men can be priests, that priests are to be celibate, and that sodomy is a sin. However, Catholic seminaries taught just the opposite in the late 1990s (when Rose did his research). If someone wanted to enter the seminary to become a priest, he would be subjected to an application interview. If the seminary candidate espoused Catholic teachings in this area, he would be seen as “too rigid,” and would not be allowed to enter seminary. This is because the radical left feminist and sodomy agendas are pushed by all staff, from the top down, at Catholic seminaries. If a seminary student expresses disgust over the [sodomy] subculture of the seminary, he is sent to psychological testing by people who are anti-Catholic and agnostic, if not atheist. The result is that the seminary student, who says that sodomy is a sin, is seen as being mentally unstable by the psychoanalysis and is kicked out of seminary, even though he believes official church theology! Meanwhile, a “Catholic” psychologist, who kicked out such a person, was promoted to Worshipful Master of his Masonic lodge, once he declared himself to be an agnostic. Therefore, sodomite seminarians are rewarded for their lifestyles, while straight students are punished!

Rose cites one heterosexual student, who was so greatly harassed by a fellow seminary student who was a sodomite, that the student obtained a restraining order against him for his sexual harassment. The matter was brought before the seminary’s board, and the board kicked out the heterosexual student, while the sodomite student remained. The result of such practices is that seminary graduates are generally sodomites, who practice sodomy while in seminary. It is only natural, then, that such behavior continues, once the graduate gets a job as a priest, resulting in the thousands of cases of child rape by Catholic priests that have come into our court system. (*From an August 7, 2002 lecture by Michael Rose before the Catholic Citizens of Illinois in Chicago, <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=sPNt-VbF1t0>, accessed January 2, 2019*).

Why are Catholic Seminaries so Bad?

You may wonder how the Catholic system could get like this. After all, they are supposed to be following God. Therefore, once sodomite priests were found, they should have been ex-communicated to keep the religious system pure. Instead, sodomites are encouraged. Why?

The reason for this is rooted in the sexual revolution of the 1960s. We have seen that the United States, as a whole, began to be more sexualized in 1920, due to the predominance of the city. Young men began to pursue sex for pleasure, rather than for marriage. In 1960, young women began to pursue sex for pleasure. As women's morals go, so goes society. Note the shift that took place on college campuses at that time. In the 1950s, college kids dated to find "someone to marry, and advice for women students centered on keeping their husbands happy." In the 1960s, for the first time, "students of the opposite sex could finally visit each other in their dorm rooms....This is where the 'college party' in the sense that we think of it today really becomes possible: for the first time, students can go and do what they like, and not face severe disciplinary consequences from their school or from their peers." (*This Is What College Parties Looked Like Back In The Day*, by Tyler Kingkade, 8/13/13, https://www.huffpost.com/entry/college-parties-through-the-years_n_3488097, accessed May 23, 2019).

What this tells us is that the sexual revolution of the 1960s marks the time when college-aged students stopped trying to follow traditions and please their parents. They had now wholly given themselves over to pursuing the lusts of their own flesh.

Do not just take my word for it. Let's look at some statistics. "From 1913 to the peak enrollment in 1966, [Catholic] seminary enrollment increased nearly seven-fold, from 6,100 to over 48,000." This makes sense, in light of the fact that more people were moving to the city, which means that more people were available to go to seminary and more could afford it. "However, by 1968, a mere two years after the peak, US seminary enrollment had declined an astounding 17 percent, and in the following four years, enrollments had declined another 30 percent. A veritable wildfire had swept through the seminaries. Only eight years from the peak, enrollments had declined 60 percent from the high point. But the decline did not subside even by the mid-1970s. From 1974 to 1985, the enrollment declined to just over 11,000, making for [a] 77 percent decline in 18 years, yielding an enrollment level not seen since 1925." (*After Asceticism: Sex, Prayer and Deviant Priests* by Patrick Guinan, April 13, 2006, pages 24-25, found on <http://blog.adw.org/2013/08/welcome-to-1950-a-surprising-statistic-about-the-number-of-priests-per-parish/> comment by "Rick" on 8/16/13, accessed May 23, 2019). In summary, once college-aged people forsook tradition and conscience for the lusts of their own flesh, no one was interested in going to Catholic seminary any more.

Let's look at this realistically. Since Catholicism is the Babylonian religious system of the devil, you do not have saved people going to Catholic seminary for the most part. Spiritually speaking, seminary attendees are just like unsaved people. When you look at people going to college before the sexual revolution of the 1960s, women went to marry men, and men went to get good paying jobs. If a man chose to go to seminary, it was because he revered the religion of his family and sought to be a good Catholic.

However, with the sexual revolution of the 1960s, for the first time, guys started looking forward to going away to college so that they could have sex. Meanwhile, Catholics teach celibacy. Before 1960, good Catholics still went to seminary

because being celibate is no big deal when your high-school friends go to secular colleges and still do not have sex, or at least you do not know that they are having sex. However, with the sexual revolution of the 1960s, good Catholics had to choose between going to seminary and not having sex or going to a secular college and having sex. Remember that Catholic seminary students are usually not saved people. Therefore, they are led by the lusts of their flesh just like anyone else is, which is why Catholic seminary enrollment immediately declined after 1966.

This created a problem for the Catholic church. The culture had abandoned traditional values, and their empire is based upon traditional values. To give you an idea of how vast the Catholic church is, in 2014, their “worldwide holdings total roughly 177 million acres.” “Here in the US the Catholic Church spends an estimated \$170 [billion] a year.” “The Catholic Church owns well over 26,000 properties across the United States and in US territories.” (*What You Need to Know about the Vatican’s US Real Estate Empire* by Aisha Carter, September 23, 2015, <https://www.bisnow.com/national/news/commercial-real-estate/what-you-need-to-know-about-the-vaticans-us-real-estate-empire-50298>, accessed May 23, 2019).

So, how do you maintain such a vast empire when people are not interested in working for you? The Catholic church’s answer was to convene Vatican II in 1962 – 1965 with a stated goal to reiterate the consecrated life and the universal call to holiness (https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Second_Vatican_Council, accessed December 17, 2018). That way, the Catholic church would still have the appearance of holiness so that people would continue to go to their services. At the same time, “the seminaries of the Vatican II sect [became] unspeakable cesspools of [sodomy] and heresy” (https://www.mostholylfamilymonastery.com/23_Seminaries.pdf, “23. The Seminaries of the Vatican II sect are unspeakable cesspools of homosexuality and Heresy”, accessed December 17, 2018). In other words, they maintained “a form of godliness, but [denied] the power thereof” (II Timothy 3:5).

Culture was going toward the lusts of the flesh to the point that people no longer wanted to become Catholic priests. Therefore, the Catholic church incorporated the lusts of the flesh in their seminaries to keep running their religious organizations. Of course, since they had a form of godliness, seminary enrollees still plummeted, because most people were no longer interested in having a form of godliness. This resulted in enrollees who only wanted a form of godliness, while they continued to fulfill the lusts of their flesh. Since Catholic priests are supposed to be celibate, the biggest façade of godliness in Catholicism was in the sexual area. This resulted in the most deviant of sexual perpetrators, the sodomites, enrolling in seminary, especially since they would have access to young boys in their parishes. **When unsaved people run a religious organization, the result is unspeakable evils, because they can get away with more sin.**

Southern Baptist Problem

Since the United States’ society is now given over to sexual sin in order to become their own gods and religious organizations allow people to get away with more sin, it should not surprise us that Southern Baptists have also been identified as having sexual predators in their midst that they are doing nothing about.

“Since 1998, roughly 380 Southern Baptist church leaders and volunteers have faced allegations of sexual misconduct....They left behind more than 700 victims, many of them shunned by their churches, left to themselves to rebuild their lives. Some were urged to forgive their abusers or to get abortions.”

Just like with the Catholics, these Baptists were protected by their organization. One “Houston preacher who sexually assaulted a teenager...now is the principal officer of a Houston nonprofit that works with student organizations, federal records show. Its name: Touching the Future Today Inc.” (That’s a very ominous name!)

One church leader “provided the Georgia State Baptist Convention with evidence that [a] youth minister should be barred from working in churches,” yet the man “still works at an SBC church in Georgia!” (*Abuse of Faith* by Robert Downen, Lise Olsen, and John Tedesco, *Houston Chronicle*, February 10, 2019, <https://www.houstonchronicle.com/news/investigations/article/Southern-Baptist-sexual-abuse-spreads-as-leaders-13588038.php>, accessed February 18, 2019).

“Doug Myers was suspected of preying on children at a church in Alabama — but he went on to work at Southern Baptist churches in Florida before police arrested him. Timothy Reddin was convicted of possessing child pornography, yet he was still able to serve as pastor of a Baptist church in Arkansas. Charles Adcock faced 29 counts of sexually assaulting a 14-year-old girl in Alabama. Then he volunteered as a worship pastor at a Baptist church in Texas.”

“The SBC has rejected efforts to establish a registry to track sexual abuse cases [to] prevent churches from hiring predatory pastors.” A 2008 SBC committee said that they “had no authority to compel churches to report sex offenders to the SBC.” “Pastoral assignment among Baptists is kind of the Wild West....Some ministers move from church to church for years until they're caught.” With 47,000 churches as part of the Southern Baptist Convention, ministers have plenty of places to hide. (*Abuse of Faith Part 2, Offend, Then Repeat* by John Tedesco, Robert Downen, and Lise Olsen, *Houston Chronicle*, February 12, 2019, <https://www.houstonchronicle.com/news/investigations/article/Southern-Baptist-churches-hired-ministers-accused-13588233.php>, accessed February 18, 2019).

One Southern Baptist youth pastor went after young girls and was subsequently fired. However, his firing was kept a secret, and so he went to another church and found more targets there. Most youth pastors never attend college or seminary. “The [hiring] process was simple. He was observed by the pastor. Deacons posed a few questions, and then they voted him in.” “The only advice...he received before being dispatched to save the souls of dozens of junior- and senior-high kids was to ‘become friends’ and ‘become popular’ and let the parents know if children were actively suicidal.” One of his victims said, “My life has turned upside down. I can't relate to what people are going through any more. My innocence is gone.” (*Abuse of Faith Part 3, Preying on Teens* by Lise Olsen, Robert Downen, and John Tedesco, *Houston Chronicle*, February 13, 2019, <https://www.houstonchronicle.com/news/investigations/article/All-too-often-Southern-Baptist-youth-pastors-13588292.php>, accessed February 18, 2019).

Another girl “was 14 when she was molested in a choir room at Houston's Second

Baptist Church....[She] slit her wrists the day after that attack in 1994....She survived, but she died 14 years later from a drug overdose that her mother blames on the trauma.” “It’s a perfect profession for a con artist, because all he has to do is talk a good talk and convince people that he’s been called by God, and bingo, he gets to be a Southern Baptist minister....If someone is identified as a man of God, then there are no holds barred....Your defense system is completely paralyzed. This man is speaking with the voice of God....So a person who is not only an authority figure, but God’s servant, is telling you this is between us, this is a special relationship, this has been sanctioned by the Lord. That allows a young victim to have almost zero defenses. Totally vulnerable.” (*Abuse of Faith* by Robert Downen, Lise Olsen, and John Tedesco, *Houston Chronicle*, February 10, 2019, <https://www.houstonchronicle.com/news/investigations/article/Southern-Baptist-sexual-abuse-spreads-as-leaders-13588038.php>, accessed February 18, 2019).

The problem is that, like the Catholic churches, Baptist churches are big business in the United States. The Southern Baptist Convention reported that, in fiscal year 2017, they had over 15 million members, over 5 million average attendance per week, and over \$10 billion received in offerings. (*Fast Facts About the SBC*, <http://www.sbc.net/becomingsouthernbaptist/fastfacts.asp>, updated October 25, 2018, accessed May 29, 2019). This is just for Southern Baptists, which make up about one-third of all Baptists in the United States (*Baptists in the United States*, https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Baptists_in_the_United_States, accessed May 29, 2019).

Like the Catholics, then, they have a lot of money to protect. The good news about the Baptists is that they go by what the Bible says, more so than what the Catholics do. This means that many more saved people are found among Baptists. Still, most Baptist churches do not preach a clear gospel that all are sinners and salvation is by Christ alone. Even those who preach this will then lead their congregation to a life of works and performance to prove that they were really saved in the first place. The result is that very few Baptists actually allow Christ to live in them.

Most Baptist churches teach a morality that is slightly better than the society as a whole. This means that sodomy is generally forbidden in these churches, and that a committed relationship with another member of the opposite sex is what is encouraged today. This means that, when sexual abuse is reported, it is usually men having sex with teenage girls, rather than men raping young boys, as with the Catholic church. “Four out of five victims of priests are male. That is nearly the opposite of the figure for those victimized by non-priests, nearly two-thirds of whom are girls and women.” (*The Death of Right and Wrong: Exposing the Left’s Assault on our culture and values* by Tammy Bruce, 2003, Forum by Random House, pg. 226).

These abuses also go back to what we said about child rape. Since so many teenage girls are half-naked, even in church, the temptation for many youth pastors is too great to resist, since they are not living the in-Christ life anyway. When sex abuses do occur, the churches sweep them under the rug to protect their own reputation, which encourages a system of sexual predators to continue undetected, although to a much lesser extent than the Catholic church. “Because sentence against an evil work is not executed speedily, therefore the heart of the

sons of men is fully set in them to do evil” (Ecclesiastes 8:11).

Therefore, as society as a whole falls deeper into sexual sin, we see sexual abuse taking place in religious institutions to a greater extent. What we learn from Catholics and Baptists is the principle that God laid out in His Word is true that, when man thinks he can get away with sin, he will “work all uncleanness with greediness” (Ephesians 4:19).

Transgenderers

A transgender is someone who is born one gender but says that he feels like he is a different gender on the inside. As we have previously mentioned, James 3:15 tells us that the devil’s wisdom is based upon feelings. It is not uncommon for a churchgoer today to say that he has decided to leave his spouse because he “feels” like God has called him to marry someone else. When it comes to your Christian life, you should not make decisions based upon your feelings. Rather, you should make decisions based upon reasoning out what God would want you to do based upon sound doctrine built up in your inner man based exclusively on God’s Word. Therefore, regardless of how a person feels, he should never leave his wife. Similarly speaking, all you have to do is look at your own body and you know that God made you a man or a woman. That is a 100% objective conclusion. It does not matter what you feel like, that is what you are.

Because of this, most people in America probably had never even heard the term “transgender” until 2012 or so. All of a sudden, people felt like they were a different gender than what they really are. When I was growing up, I heard of girls, who were called “Tomboys,” because they liked to do similar things to boys, but I never heard of any girls deciding that they were really boys on the inside. However, now, this is acceptable. The reason people’s feelings changed on the matter is because the sin nature has taken such a stronghold over man that he is willing to go against the God Who made him. Apparently, transgenderers do not believe Romans 9:20, which says, “Nay but, O man, who art thou that repliest against God? Shall the thing formed say to Him that formed it, Why hast Thou made me thus?”

Of course, just like with makeup in the 1920s, blonde hair and big breasts in the 1950s, and sodomy in the 1980s, transgenderism is being pushed upon America by Hollywood, because they are trying to stay one step ahead of the average woman’s looks so that men will continue to watch movies.

Transgenderism may be the final step in Satan’s policy of evil before the rapture of the body of Christ. There are two, main reasons for this:

- 1) Satan is a transgender. He has transformed himself from a fallen cherub (of the darkness) (Ezekiel 28:14) to an angel of light (II Corinthians 11:14). In other words, God made him to be a cherub, but he has made himself look like an angel, just like a transgender may be born a man but he makes himself to look like a woman.

Satan is male, but pictures, from Satan worshippers, show him as female. For example, pictures of “Baphomet” show him with female breasts. Furthermore, all angels are male (Revelation 21:17), but most all pictures of angels that you see are female. Satan looks like an ox (Ezekiel 1:10), and women look more like oxen, since they wear high heels.

The reason Satan wants to be both male and female is because he desires to be “like the most High” (Isaiah 14:14), and God exhibits both male and female characteristics Himself. Now, God is always referred to as having a masculine gender. Jesus called Him “Father,” never “Mother,” e.g., John 17:1,5,11,21,24,25. Therefore, He is male. However, scripture also shows motherly characteristics of God, such as wanting to gather Jerusalem’s children together “even as a hen gathereth her chickens under her wings” (Matthew 23:37), which is a female quality. In other words, God transcends male and female, and so Satan tries to be both himself.

2) Man also desires to become God. As we covered before, man was made in the image of God. This image included both male and female parts. (“In the day that God created man, in the likeness of God made he him; Male and female created he them; and blessed them, and called their name Adam, in the day when they were created” (Genesis 5:1-2).) Later on, God created a separate body for the female part (Genesis 2:21-22). At the Tower of Babel, man united against God to the point that God said, “Behold, the people is one, and they have all one language; and this they begin to do: and now nothing will be restrained from them, which they have imagined to do” (Genesis 11:6). As a result, God created nations.

When God created man, He gave man knowledge of “His eternal power and Godhead” (Romans 1:20). But, men wanted to be God themselves. Therefore, man rebelled against God. Romans 1:21-28 tells us that men: 1) “Became vain in their imaginations,” 2) “Their foolish heart was darkened,” 3) “Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools,” 4) “Changed the glory of the uncorruptible God into an image made like to corruptible man, and to birds, and fourfooted beasts, and creeping things,” 5) “Changed the truth of God into a lie,” 6) “Worshipped and served the creature more than the Creator,” and 7) “Did not like to retain God in their knowledge.”

These verses tell us that men rejected the knowledge of God, imagined themselves to be God, served images, especially images of “corruptible man,” and worshipped and served themselves. The reason that Eve ate of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil is because Satan told her that, if they did, “ye shall be as gods” (Genesis 3:5).

Therefore, since God has both male and female characteristics in one body and man wants to be God, it makes sense that man would want to be transgender. The first step toward this is sodomy where one person acts like the opposite sex. The second step is transgenderism where one person both acts and looks like the opposite sex.

In other words, if God makes you to be a man, you do not have female characteristics. If God makes you a woman, you do not have male characteristics. Therefore, you cannot be like God, because you are missing one part. One of the reasons that sodomy became popular was because men could act like women and vice-versa. Transgenderism comes along to complete the transformation, so that a man can both act and look like a woman and vice-versa.

Therefore, the transgender rebellion tries to overcome the separation of male and female that God did when He made woman, so that man can be God.

Remember that God gave man free will, and He created three things to put man's free will in check: 1) Marriage, 2) Family, and 3) Nationalism. Remember that God said that if men united against God, then "nothing will be restrained from them, which they have imagined to do" (Genesis 11:6). Therefore, if men take their knowledge of good and evil and use it to destroy God's three checks against the free will, "nothing will be restrained from them," and they will be like God, resulting in the condition of no flesh being saved. God promises that Jesus will come back to this earth to set up God's kingdom just before man gets to the point where he will not be saved (Matthew 24:22).

First, man has sought to destroy nationalism, which is what the "New World Order" and the "United Nations" seek to do. Second, man seeks to destroy family by separating sex from marriage by "forbidding to marry" (I Timothy 4:3) and by creating sodomite relationships. Third, man seeks to destroy marriage by eliminating gender differences through transgenderism.

An example of this is seen in an article on CNN's website from August 1, 2017. The article mentions that two men are in a relationship, and one is a transgender man, which means that she is really a woman. She says, "I'm OK with my body being a trans body." "I'm OK being a man who has a uterus and has the capacity and capability of carrying a baby."
("Transgender man gives birth to a boy", <https://www.cnn.com/2017/07/31/health/trans-man-pregnancy-dad-trnd/index.html>, accessed March 8, 2019 by Nancy Coleman, 8/1/17). Just because she is okay with this, does NOT mean that God is okay with it! What is striking is that, even though the person is a female, as evidenced by female body parts, she is referred to as a man in the article eight times. She is never referred to as a female, except to say that she "was assigned the female gender at birth." What this means is that society completely ignores that God made her a woman and, for all intents and purposes, says she is a man. However, because God made her a woman, she can give birth. She takes testosterone, giving her facial hair, and making her look like a man, except for the fact that she has a womb.

This shows that man's rebellion against God has gotten so severe that, not only does he refuse to acknowledge God as the Creator (Romans 1:20-21), but he also has taken the knowledge of God out of his mind (Romans 1:28) to the point that he even decides what gender he is! So, God makes a woman, and the woman says, "No, I am a man." Then, everyone ignores what God made and considers her to be a man.

Psalm 139:13-17 says, “For thou hast possessed my reins: thou hast covered me in my mother’s womb. I will praise thee; for I am fearfully and wonderfully made: marvellous are thy works; and that my soul knoweth right well. My substance was not hid from thee, when I was made in secret, and curiously wrought in the lowest parts of the earth. Thine eyes did see my substance, yet being unperfect; and in thy book all my members were written, which in continuance were fashioned, when as yet there was none of them. How precious also are thy thoughts unto me, O God! how great is the sum of them!”

The transgender’s response is: “There is no God. My being formed in the womb is just a product of nature, which resulted from a big accident billions of years ago. I am just a result of chemical reactions, and I have decided that I do not like those reactions. Therefore, I will insert intelligence into the process by getting a breast reduction and taking hormones so that I look like a man.” This takes away God’s design, His careful creation of the woman, and His great thoughts toward her.

Don J. Grundmann, when he ran for US Senate in California (of all places) in 2018 made a great statement regarding transgenders: “There is no such thing as ‘transgender.’ It does not exist. What does exist are broken people who pretend to be the opposite sex and even mutilate themselves in the attempt. In our constitutional Republic we are free to be psychotic as long as we do not hurt ourselves or others but we have no right to lie to children and teach them that this mental, emotional, and spiritual pathology/sickness is normal, natural, or healthy in the slightest possible way. To do so is a very sick attack upon children and a form of child molestation. There is a massive Social Engineering campaign to normalize the soul pathology and social sickness of ‘transgenderism.’ So-called “transgender” children are being used as weapons to attack and destroy normal/healthy children. The objective of these attacks is to warp and then break the moral foundations of increasing numbers of children so that both current and, especially, future generations will be manufactured into psychotics and destroyed. This must be stopped. The children of our state and nation must be protected from this monstrous attack.” (<https://ivn.us/2018/03/22/ca-sec-state-voter-guide-u-s-senate-candidate-statements/>, accessed March 12, 2019, “CA Sec. of State Voter Guide: U.S. Senate Candidate Statements”, March 22, 2018).

A further statement by him is as follows: “The agenda of ‘transgender’ is part of a massive Social Engineering program and, especially, religious War to destroy one of the most basic foundations of our culture – what it means to be a man or a woman. This War consists of Christianity – which declares that (Genesis 5:2) “male and female created he them....” – and its opposite, the religion of Humanism/Satanism, which actually declares that you are NOT born as a boy or a girl but instead CHOOSE what you wish to be.” (<http://www.fight-the-power.org/2018/04/17/they-are-attacking-the-children/>, “They Are Attacking the Children” by Don J. Grundmann, posted April 17, 2018, accessed March 12, 2019).

If national distinctions are removed through internationalism and a one world government, family distinctions are removed through the destruction of marriage and the creation of artificial intelligence, and gender distinctions are removed through transgenderism, the result is that all three of God’s checks against man’s

free will are removed. Apart from God, “every imagination of the thoughts of [man’s] heart [is] only evil continually” (Genesis 6:5). Therefore, with all of God’s checks against free will removed, man will sin continually following the lusts of his flesh exclusively, degenerating to being a “brute beast” (II Peter 2:12), who only listens to his own “reprobate mind” (Romans 1:28).

What the Bible Says about Transgenderism

The closest thing to transgenderism that the Bible mentions is: “The woman shall not wear that which pertaineth unto a man, neither shall a man put on a woman’s garment: for all that do so are abomination unto the LORD thy God” (Deuteronomy 22:5).

Abominations to the Lord are the worst possible things you can do. If the mere wearing of opposite-sex clothes are an abomination to the Lord, how much more would it be an abomination to mutilate and alter your body through drugs and claim that you are of the opposite sex!

In Jeremiah 19:5 and 32:35, in referring to the evil of Israel killing their own children by burning them in the hands of molten gods, God says that such an evil thing, “neither came it into My mind, that they should do this abomination.” Given that God views the wearing of the wrong gender’s clothing as an abomination, He would probably make a similar statement about transgenderism, i.e., it is so evil that it never even came into His own mind!

Sex with Robots

Since we are talking about crazy things people are doing sexually, we should also mention the sick trend of sex with robots. “An emerging sexual identity known as ‘digisexual’ is said to be gaining traction among open-minded youngsters in Britain, Japan, Russia and the United States, and they are demanding human rights protection from the United Nations.” “These digisexuals are forgoing humans in favour of intimate, and even sexual, relationships with advanced computer software and lifelike robots.” “Canada and the Nordic countries are the leaders at this but the rest of Europe and America are not far behind.” (*“Digisexuals In The UK Are Calling For Sex With Robots To Now Be Protected Under The United Nations Human Rights Act Of 1998”* by Geoffrey Grider, February 16, 2019, <https://www.nowtheendbegins.com/digisexuals-in-the-uk-are-calling-for-sex-with-robots-to-now-be-protected-under-the-united-nations-human-rights-act-of-1998/>, accessed February 21, 2019).

Since sex makes the two one, digisex means becoming one with a machine. During the last half of the tribulation period, the image of the beast will probably be a machine, since it has the ability to speak and kill people who do not worship it (Revelation 13:15). This makes me wonder if worshipping the image involves having sex with it? Is this why all those, who worship the image, will burn forever in the lake of fire? (Revelation 14:9-11). Is this also why “there should no flesh be saved” (Matthew 24:22) if the tribulation period went beyond seven years?

When the world is given over to sex with robots, no children will be produced,

meaning that there will be no more reason for the longsuffering of God to continue. Does this mean the rapture of the church will take place soon?

Evolution of Replacing Marriage and Kids with Sexual Pleasure

The following is a brief summary of how sex in the United States has transformed from being something that produces children from a lifelong marriage between one husband and one wife to something that is purely sought out for pleasure from whomever and whenever one desires:

1800s – US citizens lived in the country. A woman's livelihood depended on not sleeping around, marrying one man, and staying with him for life. A woman's family protected her sexual purity. A man needed a wife, or else he could not keep up with all the work on the farm. Therefore, the man also could not sleep around. The man also needed kids to take care of him once he was no longer physically able to farm his land.

1920s – Majority of US citizens living in a city for the first time. Men no longer need a woman to help at home, since work is in a factory, not at home. Now, a man only needs a woman for sexual pleasure and for raising kids. Women are no longer protected by family, and they still need a man to take care of them. This results in women becoming more promiscuous, wearing makeup, and hanging out at bars, hoping men will find them attractive enough to want to marry them.

1930 – Latex condoms were invented in 1920, and, by 1930, they were mass produced at a low price. This separates sexual pleasure from having a family. Women go to college to try to trap men into marrying them.

1935 – Social security passed. By 1940, regular social security payments were made to retirees. Thus, kids were no longer needed to take care of parents once they could no longer work. (<https://www.ssa.gov/history/hfaq.html>, accessed February 26, 2019).

1930s-1950s – Society's view on sex changes. Young adults now believe sex does not have to be for marriage or for having kids. It can just be for fun (Romans 1:24 – God gives man up to his own lusts).

1950s – Girlie magazines and hot movie actresses become popular. Now, a man can have sexual pleasure apart from real women.

1960 – Birth control pill, invented in the 1950s, is legalized in the United States. Women now have complete control over their bodies, as they can receive sexual pleasure from men without having to worry about getting pregnant. **Thus, sexual pleasure is now completely separated from marriage and kids for everyone!**

1970s – Sodomy started to become popular in the 1950s with the 1970s being characterized as the sodomite liberation movement. By 1980, sodomy was much more accepted in society, which is the pursuit of sexual pleasure exclusively without dealing with the problems of the unique mind of the opposite gender

(Romans 1:26-27 – God gives man up to vile affections and burning lust).

1984 – Pornography became mainstream in the 1970s. By 1984, VCRs made it possible to watch pornographic videos in private, leading to an explosion of watching these movies and in these movies containing more raunchier, sexually explicit pornography than what could be shown on the silver screen.

Mid 1980s – Silicone breast implants. Women try to become like the fake women of magazines and movies so they can get men.

1990s – Sodomy pushed by media. (The TV sitcom “Golden Girls” did much in the late ‘80s – early ‘90s to push the acceptance of sodomy on older women. The big turning point of pushing sodomy was Ellen Degeneres coming out as gay on an April 30, 1997 episode of her sitcom. (<https://www.history.com/this-day-in-history/coming-out-episode-of-ellen>, accessed February 27, 2019).)

2000s – Internet access makes pornography and sexual pleasure by yourself even more widespread (Romans 1:28-32 – God gives man up to a reprobate mind, and man is filled with ALL unrighteousness).

2014 – Transgenderism is pushed as a way for Hollywood to stay one step ahead of the average woman’s looks. Transgenderism pushes man farther down the slippery slope of thinking of himself as god.

2017 – Most all people have smartphones now (In January 2018, 77% of US adults have smartphones (<http://www.pewinternet.org/fact-sheet/mobile/>, Pew Research Center, accessed January 17, 2019)), making it much easier for people to get away with sin without anyone else knowing what is going on. (Example: 12 year-olds having sex in school bathrooms and creating sex videos to seduce others at school.)

2018 – The average woman can be just as fake as she wants to be. Men like naked women, so, women buy clothes that show off their attractive, nude features. Women get tans, they dye their hair blonde, and they wear tons of makeup and jewelry. A woman can get botox, breast implants, hair dye, piercings, makeup, sexy clothing, and whatever else is necessary to look like the typical guy’s image of what an attractive woman looks like so that she can trap men into giving her what she wants. At the least, what she wants is to feel like a god by having men gawk at her.

2019 – Sex with robots becomes more popular. Now, the fake woman is perfected. That is, until Hollywood changes her again. You can have sexual pleasure as much as you want, entirely based upon your own desires. There are no relationship commitments, no kids to take care of, and no other gender’s mind to consider. You do what you want, when you want, without consequences (supposedly).

CHAPTER 12

Questions and Answers

Sinful Situations

Because this world is so messed up, there are many people, who become saved and still live ungodly when it comes to sexual matters, or they were ignorant of the truth, not realizing that what they are doing is sinful because they have believed the culture and the church over the Word of God. There are also people who come into the body of Christ already living in sinful situations. All of this results in many questions. I will now attempt to answer some of the more common questions using scripture.

Question #1A “I am a believer and my spouse is not a believer, should I stay with my spouse?”

This is an easy question to answer, because it is directly answered by scripture. I Corinthians 7:12-14 says, “But to the rest speak I, not the Lord: If any brother hath a wife that believeth not, and she be pleased to dwell with him, let him not put her away. And the woman which hath an husband that believeth not, and if he be pleased to dwell with her, let her not leave him. For the unbelieving husband is sanctified by the wife, and the unbelieving wife is sanctified by the husband: else were your children unclean; but now are they holy.”

This passage is NOT saying that, if one person in a family believes, all receive the gift of eternal life. The reason is because “without faith it is impossible to please” [God] (Hebrews 11:6), and “every one of us shall give account of himself to God” (Romans 14:12). Therefore, “to his own master he standeth or falleth” (Romans 14:4).

Rather, the passage is saying that unbelievers are much more likely to become believers if they see Christ living in believers. Jesus said, “By this shall all men know that ye are My disciples, if ye have love one to another” (John 13:35). It is very hard for an unbelieving spouse not to notice that his believing spouse has Christ living in her. As such “the unbelieving husband is sanctified by the wife,” meaning that he is “set apart” by God, so to speak, to believe the gospel, as a result of him seeing the love of Christ in her. The same is true for their children.

The person you have the most effect on is your spouse. Therefore, when you are saved and your spouse is not, you have a unique opportunity to lead her to Christ so that she may enjoy eternal life with God, as well. Therefore, God says, through Paul, that a believer should not give up this opportunity.

The same holds true for your children. Proverbs 22:6 says, “Train up a child in the way he should go: and when he is old, he will not depart from it.” Therefore, God says through Paul that your children are holy when you stay with your unbelieving spouse, meaning that they are also set apart by God to see the love of God come through you in order that they might be saved.

Question #1B: “How do I train up my children in the ways of God when I believe the Bible and my spouse does not?”

First, we should note that the primary meaning of training up a child in the way he should go is to train him in the way of faith. Jesus said, “I am the way” to the Father (John 14:6). Today, we take Jesus as the way by recognizing that we are sinners and trusting in Jesus’ death, burial, and resurrection as atonement for our sins (I Corinthians 15:3-4). Therefore, training up children in the way they should go ultimately means that we allow Christ to live in us so that they see God’s love and desire to have that love for themselves. The way that God’s love is shown to others is by the trying of your faith working patience (James 1:3), patience works experience, experience works hope, and hope causes the love of God to be shown to others (Romans 5:3-5).

When you allow Christ to live in you and your spouse is an unbeliever, your children have the unique opportunity to see what God’s love is all about as contrasted with the “love” of this world in your spouse. This is an even greater witness to them than you are to your spouse, because they get to see both sides—good and evil. This is why I Corinthians 7:14 says about these children: “Now are they holy.” They are set apart to see the love of God coming through you.

Prideful Churchianity

A lot of times, a believing spouse gets caught up in the pride of his Churchianity by wanting to make sure his children follow the Bible. For example, in a lot of cases, an unbelieving spouse practices a religion, while the Bible believer takes the Bible as his final authority. The unbelieving spouse usually tries to make up for this with an outward show of the flesh. For example, she may want her children to participate in a religious ceremony, so that the family looks “Christian.” Meanwhile, the Bible believer is repulsed by such a ceremony. If the Bible believer “takes a stand,” it results in an argument with the spouse and the child does not see the love of God come through the Bible believer. The result is that the child is less likely to believe the gospel and be saved. If the Bible believer refuses to go to the ceremony, the unbelieving spouse may express her frustration to family members and friends, and now the Bible believer is less likely to reach his spouse’s family with the gospel and be saved. Therefore, by “taking a stand” on a doctrinal issue, he has essentially ruined the ability of Christ to live in him to his spouse so that she may be saved.

We need to remember that “Unto the pure all things are pure: but unto them that are defiled and unbelieving is nothing pure” (Titus 1:15). In other words, if a Bible believer goes to a religious ceremony to appease his wife, he is still pure. On the other hand, if he convinces his wife not to bring his child to the religious ceremony, her staying at home is not pure, because she is defiled and unbelieving.

Our approach with all people, especially those in our own household, should be: “Henceforth know we no man after the flesh” (II Corinthians 5:16). What this means is that **it is not your job to correct the sinful behavior of your spouse or anyone else in your family, except your children.** You are an ambassador for Christ. Your job is to reconcile others to God (II Corinthians 5:20), not to enforce

spiritual rules. After all, “in my flesh dwelleth no good thing: for to will is present with me; but how to perform that which is good I find not” (Romans 7:18). Therefore, even if you are able to stop a sinful behavior of your spouse, he will just replace it with another sinful behavior. He is still going to hell. So, you have accomplished nothing eternal!

All of humanity can be divided into two categories: 1) Unbelievers, who are dead in Adam, and 2) Believers, who are alive in Christ (I Corinthians 15:22). As ambassadors for Christ, we should do God’s will, which is for “all men to be saved, and to come unto the knowledge of the truth” (I Timothy 2:4). Therefore, with all people, we should ask the question: “Are they in Adam or in Christ?” If they are in Adam, we need to get them to see their sin and present the gospel to them as the solution. If they are in Christ, we need to give them sound doctrine so that they grow in their knowledge of the truth.

This means that, if your spouse is an unbeliever, the best way to train up your children is by having the love of Christ come through you so that they will want to have Christ in them, like He is in you. The best way to do this is by looking for opportunities to show them their sin and need of a Saviour, while allowing Christ to live in you through applying sound doctrine to all your decisions. This may mean compromising with some rules that you and your spouse set for your children, because your primary goal should be to get your children saved and come unto the knowledge of the truth, rather than to win an argument with your spouse over what rules to follow. When Christ lives in you and not in your spouse, your children will see the difference and may make the right decisions as a result.

You should not try to force Christ on them. God says that, “Whosoever will” (Revelation 22:17) is to be saved, not “whosoever is forced.” Moreover, when you try to force your children into believing, you can actually push them away from believing the gospel. All of us have probably heard that preachers’ kids tend to be wilder and more unruly than “normal” kids. This is because they see their parents as hypocrites, because they preach one thing and live another way. Kids are smart and will not “buy into” what you believe if they do not see you live out what you believe. “Do this, because I say so,” may get your child to behave the way you want him to temporarily, but it will not cause him to believe the way you want him to believe.

Therefore, training up children in the way they should go (Proverbs 22:6) primarily means that you, as the parent, need to allow Christ to live in you. Your children will then see that Jesus really is the only way to God the Father (John 14:6), and they are then much more likely to go in that way by recognizing their sin and trusting in Jesus’ death, burial, and resurrection as atonement for their sin. (Jesus is “the way” in which you are to train up your children.) If your spouse does not agree with you on certain rules, due to her unbelief, that is okay. Christ living in you will overcome that, and her bad example will actually cause the light of Christ in you to shine greater to them, because they will see the contrast between the darkness of the world and the light of God. Whether or not they believe the gospel is up to them, but at least, if they do believe, it will be because of Christ in

you, rather than in spite of the lack of Christ living in you.

Question 2: “How do I deal with the unbelief of my spouse?”

If you are a believing wife with an unbelieving husband, your tendency will be to tell him what he needs to believe and keep nagging him until he finally relents. This is because, according to God, women desire to rule their husbands, as seen in God’s statement to the woman in Genesis 3:16, “Thy desire shall be to thy husband, and he shall rule over thee.”

Although the woman knows the truth, she is not to share it with her husband. Why? Because she is subject to the husband’s rule over her. God specifically addresses this situation by saying that, if any husbands “obey not the word,” i.e., they do not believe the gospel, “they also may without the word be won by the conversation of the wives; While they behold your chaste conversation coupled with fear” (I Peter 3:1-2). Therefore, the answer to the question of what a wife is to do with the unbelief of her husband is that she is to allow Christ to live in her so that her husband sees Christ’s love come through her, and then he can ask and be shown through scripture how to be saved. God did not get the woman to be saved by pressuring her into believing. Similarly, woman will not get man saved by pressuring him into believing.

What should a believing husband do with the unbelief of his wife? First, he should not pressure her into believing. God says, “That the head of every man is Christ; and the head of the woman is the man” (I Corinthians 11:3). How does Christ get a man to believe the gospel? He demonstrated God’s love to us by dying for our sins (Romans 5:8). Christ did not force us to believe. Rather, God had Christ demonstrate God’s love so that we would desire to be saved. Similarly speaking, “husbands” are to “love [their] wives, even as Christ also loved the church, and gave himself for it” (Ephesians 5:25).

Now, because men are the head of women and women are supposed to submit to their husbands, men should speak a clear gospel message to their wives. Therefore, while a believing woman is to live a godly lifestyle so that her unbelieving husband asks about salvation and believes the gospel, a believing man is to speak a clear gospel message to his wife, but she will not believe it unless she sees Christ’s love coming through him to her. If a man has sound doctrine built up in his inner man and he allows Christ to live in him, his wife will notice that he is a much better husband than all the other husbands out there. Therefore, when he presents a clear gospel message to her, she may believe it, because she reasons that the same gospel will effectually work in her as it does with her husband (I Thessalonians 2:13).

This being said, it is important for believing husbands not to get into theological arguments with their wives. Too many men try to impress their wives with fancy words and theological-type knowledge. Remember that all unbelievers are dead in their trespasses and sins (Ephesians 2:1), and no good thing dwells in their flesh (Romans 7:18). Therefore, learning theology will be of no use to unbelieving wives.

(Theology is actually of no use to believing husbands either, since it creates an atmosphere of “having a form of godliness, but denying the power thereof” (II Timothy 3:5).) In fact, they cannot learn the things of God, because those things are only spiritually discerned (I Corinthians 2:14). Therefore, the believing husband needs to have Christ’s love shine through him so that his unbelieving wife will believe the gospel when he speaks it to her.

Regardless of who is the unbeliever, the believing spouse should stay with the unbelieving spouse for as long as the unbelieving spouse is willing to stay. This is because the best chance that a spouse and kids have to be saved is by having Christ living through an adult in their house, day in and day out. “If any brother hath a wife that believeth not, and she be pleased to dwell with him, let him not put her away. And the woman which hath an husband that believeth not, and if he be pleased to dwell with her, let her not leave him. For the unbelieving husband is sanctified by the wife, and the unbelieving wife is sanctified by the husband: else were your children unclean; but now are they holy” (I Corinthians 7:12-14).

Question 3: “Is it okay to divorce and marry someone else?”

The church I grew up in saw divorce and re-marriage as a sin. My parents divorced when I was four years old. The only reason for this is because my dad forced the issue. My mom saw divorce as a sin and did not want to do it, even though she had been separated from her husband for two years and he was living with another woman during that time. Nearly 40 years have passed since then, and she has never gone out on a date or even considered the possibility of re-marrying, because she believes it is a sin.

The culture we live in is so divorced (pun intended) from this idea that the question of divorce and re-marriage is not really an issue any more. The church I grew up in now sees divorce and re-marriage as not being a sin, because times have changed. However, the word of God has not changed.

The Pharisees asked Jesus this very question. Mark 10:2 records, “And the Pharisees came to Him, and asked Him, Is it lawful for a man to put away his wife? tempting Him.” Why does the verse say, “Tempting Him”? After all, the answer is either “Yes” or “No.” The reason the question is a temptation is because it is the wrong question. The temptation was to get Jesus to get His focus off of what God wants people to do and get Him to focus on what God allows people to do. “And he answered and said unto them, What did Moses command you? And they said, Moses suffered to write a bill of divorcement, and to put her away” (Mark 10:3-4). Jesus asks them what Moses **commanded** them to do, and they answered Him with what Moses **suffered** or allowed them to do.

So, Jesus had to answer His Own question. “And Jesus answered and said unto them, For the hardness of your heart he wrote you this precept. But from the beginning of the creation God made them male and female. For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and cleave to his wife; And they twain shall be one flesh: so then they are no more twain, but one flesh. What therefore God hath

joined together, let not man put asunder.” (Mark 10:5-9). In other words, Moses **suffered** them to get a divorce because of their hard hearts, but he **commanded** them to stay together for life, because GOD has joined the male and the female together by the two having sex with each other.

Therefore, our questions about what God wants us to do should NEVER contain the words, “Is it okay?” Instead, you should understand that “your body is the temple of the Holy Ghost which is in you, which ye have of God, and ye are not your own. For ye are bought with a price: therefore glorify God in your body, and in your spirit, which are God’s” (I Corinthians 6:19-20). The price, with which we were purchased, was God’s own blood (Acts 20:28). Therefore, God did NOT save us so we could let sin reign in our mortal bodies (Romans 6:12), nor did He buy us so that we could do “okay” things. Rather, God saved us so that Christ could live in us (Galatians 2:20). This is why Philippians 2:12-14 tells us to: “Work out your own salvation with fear and trembling. For it is God which worketh in you both to will and to do of his good pleasure. Do all things without murmurings and disputings.” This does not mean we can lose our salvation, but it means we should fear and tremble over the awesomeness of God’s ability to use our bodies to do His will through us. **This should be our complete focus!**

Therefore, our questions to God should never be “is it okay,” but our questions should be, “How can God work His good pleasure through me?” Since a man and a woman, who have sex with each other, are married in God’s eyes, they should never get divorced. The law may **suffer** divorce, but divorce is not what God commanded.

“And unto the married I command, yet not I, but the Lord, Let not the wife depart from her husband: But and if she depart, let her remain unmarried, or be reconciled to her husband: and let not the husband put away his wife.” (I Corinthians 7:10-11). Paul is clear that these verses are the Lord’s commandment—not his. The commandment is for the wife and the husband to stay together forever. If they are separated, they certainly should not marry others, because that would be a sin. Rather, they should stay unmarried, or be reconciled to their spouses.

You may say, “But, I have a sex drive that needs to be fulfilled. Therefore, I need to get re-married.” Note that I Corinthians 7:9 says, “If they cannot contain, let them marry: for it is better to marry than to burn.” However, this statement is only to “the unmarried and widows” (I Corinthians 7:8). To the married, God commands that they stay faithful to their spouses for the rest of their lives, even if they are separated.

God understands that you have a sex drive. This is why widows under 60 years old may “wax wanton against Christ” and get married (I Timothy 5:11). (“Wanton” means they will yield to sexual lust.) However, when you marry, you commit to being faithful to that person for life. In other words, as long as your first sex partner is still alive, you should remain faithful to that person for the rest of your life, regardless of what the other person does. If the other person divorces you and

will never reconcile with you, you still should not get re-married. **Celibacy is God's intended consequence for the believer, who is forced into divorce.** This is why my mom has remained faithful to her husband, even though they have been divorced for almost 40 years now. Remember that, "the time is short: it remaineth, that both they that have wives be as though they had none" (I Corinthians 7:29). If you are divorced at age 30, it may seem like a long time to stay faithful to your ex-spouse. However, in view of eternity, "the time is short." You are not missing out on anything special by not fulfilling the pleasures of the flesh by getting re-married.

After all, "all that will live godly in Christ Jesus shall suffer persecution" (II Timothy 3:12). Therefore, even if you are in a wonderful, marriage relationship, you still are called to suffer. You might as well suffer with burning in the flesh, on top of all of the other suffering you face for godliness. Besides, "He that is unmarried careth for the things that belong to the Lord, how he may please the Lord: But he that is married careth for the things that are of the world, how he may please his wife" (I Corinthians 7:32-33). Therefore, if you burn in the flesh because you cannot have sex with your spouse because of a divorce, at least you can focus more on the things of the Lord, rather than the things of the world, by not having to try to please your spouse. In other words, take your divorce as an opportunity for Christ to live in you, rather than for you to satisfy the lusts of your flesh with another person.

You may say, "But God is leading me to marry someone else. She is a wonderful, godly woman, and we could do so much for the Lord if we were married, as opposed to my first wife, who is an unbeliever. I am saved now, so, I know better now." I have heard this argument many times to justify re-marriage. However, as we have already seen, this goes against God's commandment of marriage being for life. Since it goes against God's command, getting re-married is not a godly thing to do. Therefore, the woman, who you say is godly, is not really godly if she agrees to live the rest of her life in sexual sin with you. Any following of your feelings is devilish, according to James 3:15. Following God's written word is godliness. Your desperately wicked heart (Jeremiah 17:9) will try to deceive you into thinking that you are obeying God by cloaking the lusts of the flesh in a form of godliness. This is a form of the flesh lusting against the Spirit (Galatians 5:17). When you have the sound doctrine of God's Word in you, then you are "strengthened with might by His Spirit in the inner man" (Ephesians 3:16) to overcome this so that you are not fooled into thinking that you are doing the right thing by getting re-married.

You may say, "what about Jesus' statement that it is not a sin to get re-married if done because your ex is cheating on you with someone else?" Jesus never said that. The statement in question is found in Matthew 5:32, "That whosoever shall put away his wife, saving for the cause of fornication, causeth her to commit adultery: and whosoever shall marry her that is divorced committeth adultery." This statement never says that you can get re-married if your ex is cheating on you. Rather, it is dealing with the sin of adultery. It says that, if you divorce your wife, you cause her to commit adultery. The reason is because she can no longer have sex with you, and so her lust will cause her to commit adultery with another

man, at the very least in her heart. Jesus said, "Saving for the cause of fornication," not to say that you do not commit adultery if you get re-married when your spouse cheats on you, but to say that the wife has already committed the sin of adultery if she has committed fornication. Therefore, YOU are not the cause of her adultery, SHE is. The last part of Jesus' statement makes this clear, because it says that anyone who marries "her that is divorced committeth adultery." There is NO exception mentioned to the adultery rule for those marrying those who are divorced. Therefore, divorced people should NEVER get re-married, NO EXCEPTIONS, because Jesus made no exceptions!

Question 4: "What if I am already divorced and re-married, what should I do?"

Let's say you have recently learned that divorce and re-marriage is a sin, but you have already divorced and re-married. Do you "make it right" by divorcing your second wife? The short answer to this is "no."

Matthew 19:6 says, "What therefore God hath joined together, let not man put asunder." This statement implies that man has the ability to divide what has been married. If not, God would not have suffered man to write a bill of divorcement. In fact, Deuteronomy 24:3-4 says, "And if the latter husband hate her, and write her a bill of divorcement, and giveth it in her hand, and sendeth her out of his house; or if the latter husband die, which took her to be his wife; Her former husband, which sent her away, may not take her again to be his wife, after that she is defiled; for that is abomination before the Lord: and thou shalt not cause the land to sin, which the Lord thy God giveth thee for an inheritance." This tells us that, if you are divorced from someone, you are permanently divorced from him. Reconciling with your first spouse "is abomination before the Lord." Paul backs this up by saying in the context of marriage, "Let every man abide in the same calling wherein he was called" (I Corinthians 7:20).

Many people reading this book are probably in this situation of being re-married, and so you can rest assured that you should remain faithful to your current spouse, rather than going back to your first spouse. Since sex equals marriage, this also means that, if you are sleeping with someone, who is not seen as your spouse according to the law of the land, even if you have been previously married, you should make your current marriage official by being married by the law of the land. This may seem weird but remember that God joins two people together with sex, not with a court document. Therefore, your license-less marriage is just as valid in the eyes of God as the one that you obtained a license for, and you should show your faith in God's Word by getting a license with your current spouse.

Question 5: "I am divorced with kids from my first marriage, and I have kids from my current marriage. Should I take care of the kids from my first marriage?"

First, remember that we are to obey those that have the rule over us. "Whosoever therefore resisteth the power, resisteth the ordinance of God" (Romans 13:2). This

means that, if there is a court order for you to support your children from a previous marriage, you need to obey that.

Beyond that, this is a tough question to answer. The Bible is clear that parents are to take care of their children, but it says very little about children from a previous marriage (probably because God only considers a marriage to be over when a spouse dies).

We do know that children are to obey their parents and honor them (Ephesians 6:1-2). Fathers are to bring up their children “in the nurture and admonition of the Lord” (Ephesians 6:4). Wives are to love their children (Titus 2:4). Bishops and deacons are supposed to rule their own houses and children well (I Timothy 3:4,12). I believe that all of these verses assume that the children are living with you.

I Timothy 5:8 says that “if any provide not for his own, and specially for those of his own house, he hath denied the faith, and is worse than an infidel.” The context is taking care of widows, which means that a man should take care of his widowed mother if she needs help. This is probably why Jesus told John to take care of His mother, Mary. “And from that hour that disciple took her unto his own home” (John 19:27). Note that Jesus did not ask John to take care of Mary’s sister, because she was, presumably, still married to Cleophas (John 19:25). Thus, Jesus was providing for his own by having John take care of His mother, Mary.

The Bible really does not address taking care of your own children when they do not live with you. I think the answer to the following question will help us answer the original question: “Does a child from a former marriage, who lives with your ex-spouse, count as your child, or does he count as your ex-spouse’s child now?” If he counts as your child, then you need to take care of him. If he counts as your ex-spouse’s child, then you do not need to take care of him.

Ishmael

The only Biblical instance of this that I can think of is when Abraham had a child by his servant, Hagar. You may say, “Abraham was never married to her. He just had a child with her.” However, as we have already learned, God says that sex = marriage. This is why Genesis 16:3 says that Sarai gave Hagar “to her husband Abram to be his wife.”

Note that, once Hagar gave birth, Genesis 16:4 says that Hagar was despised in Sarai’s eyes. 14 years later, once Sarai had given birth to Isaac, Hagar’s son, Ishmael, began mocking. The result was that Sarai said to Abraham, “Cast out this bondwoman and her son: for the son of this bondwoman shall not be heir with my son, even with Isaac” (Genesis 21:10). Abraham did not want to cast his son out of his house, but “God said unto Abraham, Let it not be grievous in thy sight because of the lad, and because of thy bondwoman; in all that Sarah hath said unto thee, hearken unto her voice; for in Isaac shall thy seed be called. And also of the son of the bondwoman will I make a nation, because he is thy seed.” (Genesis 21:12-13).

God Himself says that He will take care of Sarah's step son. God takes care of Ishmael by making a well of water magically appear (Genesis 21:19). This shows that the case of Ishmael is a unique situation. We cannot expect God to do this today if you do not take care of a child from a previous marriage. However, the story of Hagar and Ishmael shows why this is such a difficult question to answer.

Since God says that it is an abomination to re-marry someone you have already divorced after you have married someone else even if that someone else dies (Deuteronomy 24:4), I believe it is safe to conclude that once a marriage is dissolved by divorce, God says that marriage can never be restored again. Since sex equals marriage and children are born through sex, children are a direct by-product of a marriage. Therefore, if a marriage is dissolved by divorce and a child goes to live with one parent, it appears that the link between the non-resident parent and the child is broken. Therefore, there is no responsibility for the non-resident parent to take care of the child.

Otherwise, it was not right for Abraham not to take care of Ishmael. After all, "Abram was very rich in cattle, in silver, and in gold" (Genesis 13:2), while Hagar, to use a southern expression, did not have a pot to pee in, and yet God told Abraham to heed to the voice of Sarah and cast out Hagar and Ishmael. In other words, do not take care of them any longer. The reason is due to jealousy. Sarah was jealous of Hagar, and Ishmael was jealous of Isaac. The household relationship between Abraham and Sarah would no longer work with Hagar and Ishmael still in the house. Therefore, they were cast out. In other words, God favors relationships and existing roles over financial considerations, even when the one without the child is rich.

No Split Responsibility

It appears, then, that the answer to the question of "Who does a child belong to in a divorce?" is that he belongs to the parent he is staying with. Note that I Timothy 3:4 says that a bishop is to rule "well his own house, having his children in subjection with all gravity." Similarly, I Timothy 3:12 says that deacons are to rule "their children and their own houses well." It appears, then, that a child's parents, in God's eyes, are the ones with which the child lives, and that biology has nothing to do with it.

I have heard of many cases where children say that they consider their step dads to be more of a father to them than their biological fathers are, because it was their step dads that raised them. This shows that nature is in line with God's view on the matter. When there is a divorce, the children should go with their mothers, not their fathers, and their step dads become their new fathers. This is in line with what happened with Abraham and Hagar, even though financial considerations would say that Ishmael should have stayed with Abraham.

Children Should Stay with Their Mothers

There are at least two, good reasons why the children should live with their mothers: 1) There is a greater bond between the mother and the child, because the mother gave birth to the child and because God made the woman's mind to be more concerned with family, rather than herself. (I find it very interesting that feminists, who claim equal rights and greater power for women, never take up the cause of the father for him to take care of the children after a divorce, instead of the mother. After all, shouldn't the father have equal rights?)

2) The woman's mind, in general, is more subject to jealousy than the man's mind is. In other words, a woman watches her husband more carefully than a man watches his wife to make sure her husband is not even looking at another woman with lust in his heart, much less cheating on her. Therefore, as in the case of Sarah, jealousy can arise over her husband's children from another marriage far more easily than it can arise in a husband's mind over his wife's children from another marriage. If a man truly loves a woman, he actually enjoys taking care of her children from her previous marriage, because he views the children as an extension of her, meaning that there is more to love about her as a result of her children still being around. By contrast, women can become absolutely furious over having to raise their husbands' children from a previous marriage, creating great conflict between the wife and the husband (Which is the more loving, compassionate gender now?).

For example, it is quite common for a wife to think about her husband that he treats his ex-wife's children better than her children; therefore, he must not love her as much and wants to get back together with his ex-wife. By contrast, it is extremely rare for a husband to make the same complaint in the reverse situation, because a man's mind does not think in those terms. Therefore, God, knowing how a man's and a woman's minds work, tells Abraham to obey Sarai in kicking out his ex-wife and his son from his house.

Now, a man may say, "That is not fair. I love my children very much, while I cannot stand my ex-wife. Why should I be forever separated from my children just because I do not like my ex-wife any more?" God says that marriage is for life. It is only because of the hardness of hearts that God allowed divorce under the Mosaic law (Matthew 19:8). Therefore, a man should stay with his wife for life, no matter what. If a divorce meant that he would never see or hear from his children again, perhaps a man would be willing to put up with his wife and learn to love her again. Also, a wife would be more willing to stay with her husband if it meant that she would lose the financial support of her husband and be left to fend for herself with her kids. Therefore, by separating the link between a man and his children at a divorce, it would cause both the husband and the wife to spend much more time trying to reconcile their differences and stay true to their marriage vow so that they would not break God's command: "What therefore God hath joined together, let not man put asunder" (Matthew 19:6), instead of divorcing when the first sexy person takes interest in one of them.

Therefore, the answer to question five is that a man should not take care of his children in any way from his previous marriage. However, as the laws stand today,

men are obligated to take care of their ex-wives with alimony and child support, due to court orders. In this case, men need to do what the court has ordered, because every soul is to be subject to the higher powers (Romans 13:1). However, these laws are in violation of what God says about the situation and goes against how God made minds to operate. This is why you hear about “deadbeat dads,” who go against court orders by not paying child support and alimony, seeing no reason to pay for children that are not theirs any more, due to divorce, whereas women do not take this view, which is why the women should take sole care of their children, unless they are married again. Then, it is their current husband’s responsibility, as head of the household, to take care of those children.

You may say that this is not fair to all of the single moms out there. There are many single moms, who work two or three jobs, just to make ends meet. However, what is really not fair is that man has put asunder the marriage that God joined together, and the unfairness of a single mom having to raise her children by herself is a consequence of the sin of divorce.

Question 6: “I have married someone of the same gender as me. Should I break that commitment?”

Yes. As we have previously covered, God says that having sex with the same gender is worthy of death. Therefore, a same-sex relationship should not be continued. But, what about I Corinthians 7:20, “Let every man abide in the same calling wherein he was called”? The answer is that God does not allow any same-sex relationship, while God does allow someone to get divorced and re-married. Granted, getting divorced and re-married is a sin. However, once established, the re-marriage is between a man and a woman, who were not related before getting married. This is an allowable marriage in the eyes of God. On the other hand, sodomy is never sanctioned by God. Therefore, a commitment to someone of the same gender in a sexual relationship is to be broken off immediately by those in Christ. For example, Paul says that circumcision and uncircumcision mean nothing. So, do not change your status from one to the other when you become a believer (I Corinthians 7:18-19). By contrast, being a thief does matter to God, because it is a sin. Therefore, you cannot make the excuse, after you are saved, that you should continue in your thieving ways. Abiding in the same calling wherein you are called (I Corinthians 7:20) only applies to non-sinful situations. Since same-sex relationships are an abomination to God, you should not continue in one once you are saved.

Nehemiah 13

A Biblical example of a similar thing is found in Nehemiah 13. God told Israel not to marry women who were not part of Israel. (“Shall we then hearken unto you to do all this great evil, to transgress against our God in marrying strange wives?” (Nehemiah 13:27).) When Israel realized they had sinned against God by doing this, Nehemiah did not say, “Oh well. The marriage commitment has already been made. You have to stay with your foreign wives for life.” NO! Rather, when “Jews...had married wives of Ashdod, of Ammon, and of Moab” (Nehemiah 13:23),

Nehemiah says that he “contended with them, and cursed them, and smote certain of them, and plucked off their hair, and made them swear by God, saying, Ye shall not give your daughters unto their sons, nor take their daughters unto your sons, or for yourselves. Did not Solomon king of Israel sin by these things? yet among many nations was there no king like him, who was beloved of his God, and God made him king over all Israel: nevertheless even him did outlandish women cause to sin....Thus cleansed I them from all strangers” (Nehemiah 13:26-27,30).

In other words, Israel was “an holy people unto the LORD thy God: the LORD thy God hath chosen thee to be a special people unto Himself, above all people that are upon the face of the earth” (Deuteronomy 7:6). If they married non-Jews, those women would cause the Jewish men to turn away from God. (Numbers 31:15-18 “And Moses said unto them, Have ye saved all the women alive? Behold, these caused the children of Israel, through the counsel of Balaam, to commit trespass against the LORD in the matter of Peor, and there was a plague among the congregation of the LORD. Now therefore kill every male among the little ones, and kill every woman that hath known man by lying with him. But all the women children, that have not known a man by lying with him, keep alive for yourselves.” Only the “women children,” who had not been raped by adults, were kept alive.) Therefore, God forbade inter-racial marriages, and Nehemiah cleansed the Jews from their inter-racial marriages.

Sodomy Is Worse

Sodomite relationships are even worse, as God says that, “If a man also lie with mankind, as he lieth with a woman, both of them have committed an abomination: they shall surely be put to death; their blood shall be upon them” (Leviticus 20:13). Since today’s society does not execute sodomites, their lives are spared. If a Bible believer is in a sodomite relationship, he should see that he is committing something worthy of death and immediately dissolve his same-sex marriage, never to return to that lifestyle again.

The same is true for all other sexual relationships forbidden by God in Leviticus 20—adultery, relatives, and bestiality. This is important to understand because it brings up another Biblical example that supports our conclusion that sodomite relationships should be immediately dissolved.

There was a man, in the Corinthian church, who was having sex with “his father’s wife” (I Corinthians 5:1). Paul says that this man should “be taken away from among” them (I Corinthians 5:2). In other words, he should be kicked out of the church. Just like with sodomy, God says that a man, who has sex with his father’s wife, should be killed. (“And the man that lieth with his father’s wife hath uncovered his father’s nakedness: both of them shall surely be put to death; their blood shall be upon them” (Leviticus 20:11).) However, that commandment is for the nation of Israel. Since the city of Corinth is not ruled by God, the church has no authority to kill the man. Therefore, they should do the harshest thing they can do to him, which is to kick him out of the church.

Apparently, after the Corinthians read this letter, they kicked him out of the church, because Paul says, in II Corinthians that “ye ought rather to forgive him, and comfort him” (II Corinthians 2:7). This implies that the man gave up having sex with his father’s wife.

This also shows us that unrepentant sodomites, adulterers, and all other people engaging in sexual sin that is worthy of death, should be immediately kicked out of the church for their sin. Then, if the sodomite breaks off his same-sex relationship, the church should welcome him back in, forgiving him and comforting him. Until then, he is to have **no part** with the church, because “a little leaven leaveneth the whole lump” (I Corinthians 5:6).

Question 7: What if you are married to a woman for years but have a mistress on the side. The law says you are married to the original woman, since you have never filed for divorce and applied for a marriage license with your mistress. However, since God views sex as marriage, you are also married to your mistress in God’s eyes. What is your obligation according to God’s standard? Do you divorce the first wife and commit to the mistress, or do you dump the mistress and go back to your first wife?

This is a tough one to answer. As far as God is concerned, you committed to your wife years ago. Then, you committed to your mistress by having sex with her. So, now you are committed to taking care of both the mistress and the original wife for the rest of your life, because you have not yet “divorced” your first wife. Therefore, you are really a polygamist, which God allows. (Please read the section of this book that covers polygamy.)

Your obligation, in God’s eyes, is to take care of both of them. However, women are extremely jealous individuals, and probably do not take the Biblical view on polygamy, even if they are Bible believers. They also probably have the economic ability to take care of themselves. Therefore, although your obligation, in God’s eyes, is to take care of both of them, one or both of them will probably have nothing to do with you after she finds out about the other woman. If both women agree to continue to be your wives, you should take care of both of them, because both of them are your wives in God’s eyes. You should really not divorce the first woman and marry the second woman officially, but you cannot do this in most countries because official polygamy is against the law, even though unofficial polygamy is fine and dandy! (It still amazes me how Churchianity looks down upon the Fundamentalist Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-Day Saints (FLDS) for practicing polygamy, yet they have no problem with a Christian who divorces and marries another woman based upon lust but says that “the Lord led” him to divorce the first wife!) So, the solution is to take care of both of them and live with both of them as if they are both your wives, because, as far as God is concerned, they are. (You still cannot marry the second woman, since this is against the law.)

If the first woman divorces you, you should officially marry the second woman, but you should try to keep this from happening since, “What therefore God hath joined together, let not man put asunder” (Matthew 19:6). Just because you slept with a

different woman, marrying her in God's eyes, does not mean that your first marriage is disannulled, as explained in this book's section on polygamy.

Question 8: Does rape equal marriage?

Since sex equals marriage in God's eyes, you may ask if rape equals marriage. Well, since rape involves sex then, yes, rape equals marriage. This may seem unfair to the woman because she had no choice in the matter. However, in history, women have had very little choice of who they married anyway. Note the conversation between Jacob and Laban. "Laban said unto Jacob...,what shall thy wages be?" "And Jacob loved Rachel; and said, I will serve thee seven years for Rachel thy younger daughter. And Laban said, It is better that I give her to thee, than that I should give her to another man: abide with me" (Genesis 29:15,18-19). Note that Rachel had no say-so in this.

The reason is because "the head of the woman is the man" (I Corinthians 11:3). A woman belongs to her father until she is married. Then, she belongs to her husband once she is married. Note I Corinthians 7:36-38 "But if any man think that he behaveth himself uncomely toward his virgin, if she pass the flower of her age, and need so require, let him do what he will, he sinneth not: let them marry. Nevertheless he that standeth stedfast in his heart, having no necessity, but hath power over his own will, and hath so decreed in his heart that he will keep his virgin, doeth well. So then he that giveth her in marriage doeth well; but he that giveth her not in marriage doeth better." This passage shows the father in total control of what happens with his daughter. He can keep his daughter a virgin forever, or he can give her to a man to be married. He is in total control. In other words, if a man has a daughter and decides she will remain a virgin her entire life, he is in full control of this. She has no say-so in the matter, even after she is 20, 30, 40, 50, or 60 years old! Moreover, this doctrine comes from I Corinthians, which means it is for today.

We see such a scenario in the book of Judges. Jephthah vowed to the Lord that, if God gave him victory over the Ammonites, he would dedicate to the Lord the first thing that came from his house to meet him (Judges 11:30-31). The first thing, that greeted him, turned out to be his daughter (Judges 11:34). Therefore, Jephthah "did with her according to his vow which he had vowed: and she knew no man" (Judges 11:39). She did not say, "I am my own woman. I can do whatever I want to do. Girl power!!!" NO! She recognized that her father had complete control over her life. Therefore, she was a virgin for her whole life, because that is what her father vowed she would be.

Today's society views this as unreasonable. However, it is very reasonable since this is the way God designed things to be. If our society followed this, there would not be the flesh contest of women to be attractive to men in order to get married. Instead, women would concentrate on serving the Lord and helping out around their parents' house until the time that their father would or would not have them be married. As such, men would control society as God intended them to do.

Deuteronomy 22:28-29 says, “If a man find a damsel that is a virgin, which is not betrothed, and lay hold on her, and lie with her, and they be found; Then the man that lay with her shall give unto the damsel’s father fifty shekels of silver, and she shall be his wife; because he hath humbled her, he may not put her away all his days.” These verses do not specifically say that the guy raped her, but it does say that he was at least the instigator. By having sex with her, consensual or not, “he hath humbled her.” Therefore, he is obligated to take care of her for life, because sex equals marriage, even if the woman was forced to have sex with him.

Therefore, a woman often has no choice in who she marries (except in modern times), whether she was raped or not. This may seem unfair, but since when is this life fair? We are living in a sin-cursed world. “All that will live godly in Christ Jesus shall suffer persecution” (II Timothy 3:12). That is not fair, but it is the way things are. Paul says, “Our light affliction, which is but for a moment, worketh for us a far more exceeding and eternal weight of glory” (II Corinthians 4:17). What was Paul’s “light” affliction at the time he wrote this verse? “Of the Jews five times received I forty stripes save one. Thrice was I beaten with rods, once was I stoned, thrice I suffered shipwreck, a night and a day I have been in the deep” (II Corinthians 11:24-25), and he had more to come, too. All of these combined sound worse than being raped once. Paul did not say “This is not fair.” Rather, he said, “Most gladly therefore will I rather glory in my infirmities, that the power of Christ may rest upon me” (II Corinthians 12:9). In other words, Paul saw his many and severe persecutions as being “light” lasting “but for a moment,” and he was glad to suffer, because it meant the power of Christ on him and eternal glory for him. This is the same attitude that a woman should have, whether she be raped, forced to be a virgin all her life, or serve her husband who constantly abuses her.

Besides, God says that, “The time is short: it remaineth, that both they that have wives be as though they had none; And they that weep, as though they wept not; and they that rejoice, as though they rejoiced not; and they that buy, as though they possessed not; And they that use this world, as not abusing it: for the fashion of this world passeth away.” (I Corinthians 7:29-31). In other words, compared to eternity, having to endure an abusive husband for 50 years is nothing.

Also, because we are in a sin-cursed world, there are some women who will never get married, because men view them as being ugly. There are also some men, who do not have a shot at women marrying them, because they are too short or ugly. It is significant to note that, when it came to Jesus’ body, unlike us, He actually had a choice as to what it would look like, and yet He was very much ordinary looking. Regarding Jesus’ body, Isaiah 53:2 says, “He hath no form nor comeliness; and when we shall see him, there is no beauty that we should desire him.” Yet, Jesus never cried, “Oh, boo-hoo-hoo, I am not attractive. I will never have a wife.” Why? Because He set His “affection on things above, not on things on the earth” (Colossians 3:2). In fact, God purposely prepared an ordinary body for Him (Hebrews 10:5), being born to a poor family, so that He would be less tempted to go after the things of this world. Therefore, unattractive, poor people should, like Jesus, be thankful that they do not have the temptations of riches and good looks to lead them astray from the in-Christ life.

Now, having said that, we should note that rape is never okay with God. In fact, as far as God is concerned, rape is just as bad as murder. Deuteronomy 22:25-27 says, “But if a man find a betrothed damsel in the field, and the man force her, and lie with her: then the man only that lay with her shall die: But unto the damsel thou shalt do nothing; there is in the damsel no sin worthy of death: **for as when a man riseth against his neighbour, and slayeth him, even so is this matter:** For he found her in the field, and the betrothed damsel cried, and there was none to save her” (Deuteronomy 22:25-27). In other words, God says that someone, who is raped, feels like she has been killed.

For example, in his book, “Lost Boy,” Brent Jeffs describes what happened when his uncle, Warren Jeffs, raped him on at least ten occasions. Each time it happened, he would leave his body. Each time he did that, he “was less able to bring [himself] back. [He] would space out more and more...[He] learned how to suppress the feelings the abuse gave [him] and put every aspect of the experience in a box in [his] head that could never be opened” (*“Lost Boy” by Brent W. Jeffs and Maia Szalavitz*, published by Crown/Archetype, 2009, pg. 68-69). Many people, in such a situation, would eventually commit suicide to try to make the pain stop. Thus, rape is an indescribably horrible evil. It is, as God says, as if “a man riseth against his neighbor, and slayeth him” (Deuteronomy 22:26).

Yet, in spite of this horrible evil done to him, Christ is able to give him victory. In fact, instead of being upset, he can actually trust that “all things work together for good to them that love God, to them who are the called according to his purpose” (Romans 8:28). He can then thank God that the rape he suffered works for him an eternal weight of glory (II Corinthians 4:17). How is this possible? Because, “with God all things are possible” (Matthew 19:26). Note that he does not thank God FOR the rape, but he thanks God for the eternal glory received from it. God says “IN every thing give thanks,” not “FOR every thing give thanks” (I Thessalonians 5:18).

Now, having said that, we should say that, practically speaking, rape will not end in the man taking care of the woman. Therefore, she is free to marry someone else, and the two of them can be faithful to each other for the rest of their lives. Therefore, although God sees sex as marriage, in the case of rape and in today’s culture, the two people would live separate lives, assuming that the man does not continue to rape her.

Question 9: Should I remain a virgin?

When I was growing up, this was a valid question. Today, no one will even ask this question. It is just assumed that having sex is good, because society has bought into the Freudian mumbo-jumbo that repressing sexual urges will hurt you as a person. Therefore, everyone should be having sex as much as possible, including children! However, when we read scripture, we find out that, not only is being a virgin an option, but, when it comes to serving the Lord, it is usually the best option.

“Now concerning virgins...,I suppose therefore that this is good for the present distress, I say, that it is good for a man so to be” (I Corinthians 7:25-26). I believe “the present distress” refers to the flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh: and these are contrary the one to the other: so that ye cannot do the things that ye would” (Galatians 5:17). God says that, in marriage, the two become one flesh. This gives you the advantage of having both a male mind and a female mind working for you. However, because both people have the sin nature working independently in them, this advantage is often turned into a disadvantage, because each person’s sin nature keeps him from doing what he should be doing in the marriage, which is why Paul says, regarding married people, “such shall have trouble in the flesh” (I Corinthians 7:28). This means that your flesh, and the flesh of your spouse, combine to get in the way of Christ living in you. Since it is easier to say “no” to your flesh, rather than saying “no” to both you and your spouse’s flesh, it is best that a person remain a virgin.

This is why Paul says, “So then he that giveth her in marriage doeth well; but he that giveth her not in marriage doeth better” (I Corinthians 7:38). Regarding men, Paul says, “I would that all men were even as I myself. But every man hath his proper gift of God, one after this manner, and another after that. I say therefore to the unmarried and widows, it is good for them if they abide even as I. But if they cannot contain, let them marry: for it is better to marry than to burn” (I Corinthians 7:7-9). This passage teaches that, if you cannot contain your sexual burning to the point that you would get involved in sexual sin to a degree that would impede the in-Christ life more than getting married would, then you should get married.

This concept may be hard to understand, so, allow me to explain further. In your flesh dwells no good thing (Romans 7:18). Although Christ lives in the believer (Galatians 2:20), with the flesh lusting against the Spirit (Galatians 5:17), all Christians still sin. Now, we know from Matthew 19:12 that some men are born eunuchs from their mother’s womb. This means that some men have a reduced or no sex drive. This is what Paul means by: “Every man hath his proper gift of God” (I Corinthians 7:7). For these men, it is best for them to remain virgins all their lives. This way, they only contend with their flesh fighting them when they are trying to allow Christ to live in them.

For the men, who are not gifted with a reduced or no sex drive, they will satisfy that sex drive, one way or the other. If they get married, that sex drive can be satisfied with their wives, but their wives will also serve to distract them from serving Christ, because they have to take care of their wives. (“He that is married careth for the things that are of the world, how he may please his wife” (I Corinthians 7:33).) If they do not get married, they will end up trying to fulfill that sex drive through sexual sins. Therefore, the question that a man should ask himself is: “If I remain a virgin, can I contain my sexual urges enough to keep sexual sins from taking over the in-Christ life?” In other words, which will distract me more from the in-Christ life: 1) The extra flesh of my wife as a married man, or 2) The sexual burning of my flesh as a virgin? Each man’s answer to that question

should determine whether or not he remains a virgin for his entire life. (Does ANYONE ask himself this question today? Probably not, which shows how far society has strayed from God's view of sex and marriage!)

Question 10: What do you say to a family member who is involved in sexual sin?

You say nothing about the issue. Remember that God's will is for "all men to be saved and to come unto the knowledge of the truth" (I Timothy 2:4). An unsaved person can do nothing but sin, because "whatsoever is not of faith is sin" (Romans 14:23). Therefore, even if you can convince your family member that what he is doing is wrong, he has no power to stop sinning. "For I know that in me (that is, in my flesh,) dwelleth no good thing: for to will is present with me; but how to perform that which is good I find not" (Romans 7:18). Even if he does stop a certain sexual sin, he will replace it with some other sin. He is still dead in his trespasses and sins (Ephesians 2:1), which means that he is still going to hell. Therefore, when it comes to eternity, you accomplished nothing by getting him to stop his sexual sin.

God says that, "The love of Christ constraineth us; because we thus judge, that if one died for all, then were all dead:... Wherefore henceforth know we no man after the flesh: yea, though we have known Christ after the flesh, yet now henceforth know we him no more" (II Corinthians 5:14,16). In other words, when we look at a person, we are not to say, "He is committing a sexual sin. I will tell him what he is doing is wrong in an effort to stop that sin." Rather, God says that we are to judge all as dead. We then look at his spirit, not his flesh, and ask, "Is he unsaved (in Adam) or saved (in Christ)?"

If he is in Adam, I need to look for opportunities to give him the gospel so that he may be saved. If he is in Christ, I need to look for opportunities to share the truth of God's Word with him. In this way, God's will is accomplished in the person, and I leave it up to God to change the person, not me.

Romans 14:4 "Who art thou that judgest another man's servant? to his own master he standeth or falleth. Yea, he shall be holden up: for God is able to make him stand."

Question 11: Is the Christian husband responsible for his Christian wife when she will not listen to him? Should he leave her for disobeying him and making his life a living hell?

These are great questions, because most all Christian women today are not obeying God, because they have bought into society's lie that their role is not to serve their husbands. After all, the woman's flesh says to rule over her husband (Genesis 3:16), society tells her to rule over her husband, and Churchianity has women ruling the church. Therefore, if a woman does not have the Bible as her authority, which most Christian women do not, she will not listen to her believing husband.

So, she believes in church preachers, denominations, “Christian” books, society and everything else over her husband. She then rules over him and the household. (If she claims to be a “good, Christian woman,” she will probably justify this behavior by letting the man “decide.” In other words, she will analyze a problem, present her solution to the man, and then ask the man what he thinks. If he agrees, she has somehow submitted to her husband because he made the decision. If he does not agree, she berates him into submission. (In business, she would be considered the leader, but she is somehow being submissive to her lord, the husband. Hmm...) If the man were to do the same thing, he would be criticized for bossing her. Funny how that works!) If the husband does something against her, she just snaps back at him, and he would be arrested if he harmed her physically, because society is now anti-male. Therefore, no one would really blame a man for leaving in a situation like that. However, let us look at what the Bible says about this.

I Corinthians 7:12-14 says, “But to the rest speak I, not the Lord: If any brother hath a wife that believeth not, and she be pleased to dwell with him, let him not put her away. And the woman which hath an husband that believeth not, and if he be pleased to dwell with her, let her not leave him. For the unbelieving husband is sanctified by the wife, and the unbelieving wife is sanctified by the husband: else were your children unclean; but now are they holy.”

Based on I Cor. 7:12-14, I would say that the husband should always stay with his wife, if she wants to stay with him, regardless of how unbelieving or disobedient she is.

The husband may say that she is impeding his ability to serve God. However, I see this as being just the opposite situation. When Jesus was on earth, the Lord God taught Him the Word of God through daily Bible studies (Isaiah 50:4-5). Yet, “learned He obedience by the things which He suffered” (Hebrews 5:8). In other words, studying the Bible increases faith, but the love of God does not come through you until you suffer. This is why II Timothy 3:12 says that “all that will live godly in Christ Jesus shall suffer persecution,” and why “the trying of your faith worketh patience” (James 1:3), which eventually ends up in the love of God being shed abroad to others (Romans 5:3-5).

Therefore, if the husband stays with her, he suffers, which results in God’s love coming through him to others. At the same time, the husband has honored his vow to take care of her the rest of his life, in spite of her rebellion. Yes, he is responsible for her spiritually speaking (“The head of the woman is the man” (I Corinthians 11:3).), but only to a point, because she has free will. If she chooses not to believe, he is not responsible for her going to hell. Similarly, if she chooses not to be edified by sound doctrine from him, he is not responsible for her losing a higher position in heavenly places.

God told Ezekiel: “Son of man, I have made thee a watchman unto the house of Israel: therefore hear the word at my mouth, and give them warning from me.

When I say unto the wicked, Thou shalt surely die; and thou givest him not warning, nor speakest to warn the wicked from his wicked way, to save his life; the same wicked man shall die in his iniquity; but his blood will I require at thine hand. Yet if thou warn the wicked, and he turn not from his wickedness, nor from his wicked way, he shall die in his iniquity; but thou hast delivered thy soul” (Ezekiel 3:17-19). Similarly, God has set the man to be the “watchman,” so to speak, of his household. If he warns his wife of the false doctrine she is believing, and she will not follow him, she is responsible for her own loss of reward at the judgment seat of Christ.

A good example of the unruly spouse is seen in Job. The only thing his wife is recorded as saying is, “Curse God, and die” (Job 2:9). She usurped authority over Job, clearly did not listen to him, and ordered him to obey bad doctrine. Job’s response was, “Thou speakest as one of the foolish women speaketh. What? Shall we receive good at the hand of God, and shall we not receive evil?” We are then told, “In all this did not Job sin with his lips” (Job 2:10). In other words, God said that Job was “an upright man” (Job 1:8) and did not hold his wife’s unbelief against him.

What about the opposite situation? What about the unbelieving husband, who will not listen to his believing wife?

I Peter 3:1-2 specifically addresses this situation. It says, “Likewise, ye wives, be in subjection to your own husbands; that, if any obey not the word, they also may without the word be won by the conversation of the wives; While they behold your chaste conversation coupled with fear.”

In other words, because the husband is the head of the wife, the wife should not preach the gospel to her husband, even though she is clearly right. Rather, she should allow Christ to live in her and leave it up to her husband to decide to believe the gospel or not.

In summary, God set up marriage for life. If someone made a mistake by marrying an unbeliever who refuses to believe, God would want the believer to stay with the unbeliever in hopes that the unbeliever would eventually believe. God thinks it is worth whatever suffering you have to go through in order for your spouse to believe. Therefore, you should think this way, too.

Question 12: Is it okay to live together before marriage? That way, you can have a “trial run” to see if marriage will work for you?

No, this is not okay. Since sex equals marriage, when you live together before marriage, you really become married at that time, as you will find it nearly impossible to avoid having sex with the other person if you are living with her. The guy may get the mentality of: “Why buy the cow, when you can get the milk for free?”. Many women have moved in with guys, thinking that it is okay to sleep with them, because they will eventually get married. What is really going on is the guy strings her along for a few years, she finds out he will never marry her, and now

she is married in God's eyes to him without having the lifelong commitment from the guy.

A trial run may seem like a good idea, because you really get to know a person a lot better when you are living with her, rather than just seeing her on dates. However, your lifetime commitment to her is when you sleep with her, not when you stand before a judge or a preacher. By living together before marriage, you are marrying the person in God's eyes without making the lifetime commitment in your mind. It is better to have your mind aligned with God's mind. Since Jesus said, "What therefore God hath joined together, let not man put asunder" (Matthew 19:6), a man and woman need to make the formal, lifetime commitment to show themselves and the world that they honor God's Word.

As far as learning about the person is concerned, you will always be learning new things about your spouse. That is what keeps marriage from being boring. Because men and women think differently, "such shall have trouble in the flesh" (I Corinthians 7:28). Therefore, this "compatibility" idea is a bunch of nonsense. What makes a successful marriage is that both the man and the woman are willing to give themselves up for the other person to make the marriage work. If you are looking for someone, who you will always get along with, you will never get married.

Question 13: Can sodomites live together without having sex and it still be okay?

This question is similar to the one about couples living together before getting married, except that it is even worse. It seeks to find a loophole in God's Word in order to condone sodomite behavior. It is like asking the question, "Is it okay if I fantasize about having sex with a supermodel as long as I don't?" The answer is "No!" God says that lusting after a woman in your heart is a sin just as if you actually commit adultery with her (Matthew 5:28). Similarly, God says that sodomy is an abomination (Leviticus 18:22) and worthy of death (Leviticus 20:13). Therefore, if sodomites live together without having sex, they are still promoting the idea of sodomy in their mind and with others, and they are probably having sex in their hearts. Instead, they need to separate themselves completely from this abomination.

Question 14: Should unmarried couples move out and refrain from sex until marriage? Is "resetting" (by moving out) a good idea?

ABSOLUTELY NOT! God says that sex equals marriage. Therefore, you are not an unmarried couple if you are living together and having sex. You have already made a lifetime commitment to the other person in God's eyes. Therefore, you need to make the lifetime commitment to each other in your families' eyes.

"If a man find a damsel that is a virgin, which is not betrothed, and lay hold on her, and lie with her, and they be found; then the man that lay with her shall give unto the damsel's father fifty shekels of silver, and she shall be his wife; **because**

he hath humbled her, he may not put her away all his days” (Deuteronomy 22:28-29). Note that the verse says that she is his wife “because he hath humbled her,” meaning “because he had sex with her.” It does not say that she is his wife only if the two of them stand before a priest and say, “I do.”

As such, God says that you cannot move in with someone, have sex with her, find out that pre-marital sex is a sin, and then move out to figure out if you should marry her or not. The deed is already done. God has already joined you together for life by having sex. Therefore, you need to show that you will honor the lifelong commitment you have already made by going through a marriage ceremony. If you “reset by moving out” in an attempt to avoid sin by not having pre-marital sex any more, you are actually sinning by not honoring the lifelong commitment that you have already made to that person by having sex with her.

Question 15: What if it "feels right" to leave your spouse for another? What if "the Lord" is leading you to leave your spouse or to move in together with someone else?

This is a ridiculous question! Since when do your feelings trump God’s commandment?! God says, “For this cause shall a man leave father and mother, and shall cleave to his wife: and they twain shall be one flesh? Wherefore they are no more twain, but one flesh. What therefore God hath joined together, let not man put asunder” (Matthew 19:5-6). Feelings have nothing to do with it.

Moreover, God says that the devil’s wisdom is based upon your feelings (James 3:15). God’s wisdom “is first pure, then peaceable, gentle, and easy to be intreated, full of mercy and good fruits, without partiality, and without hypocrisy” (James 3:17). This means that staying with your spouse for life is, **without exception**, what the Lord is “leading you” to do. God never said, “Thou shalt not commit adultery, unless you feel like it.” Your feelings will lead you astray, because feelings are based upon your flesh, and no good thing dwells in your flesh (Romans 7:18). Therefore, if you feel like you should leave your spouse, it is because you are not trusting God’s plan for you, which is to stay with your spouse forever. Make your feelings line up with God’s Word, not the other way around!

SUMMARY

Problem

Our current, “modern” problems with sex and marriage are best summed up by what God wrote in Romans 1:18-32 about 2,000 years ago. “The wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men” (Romans 1:18). Since “all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God” (Romans 3:23), this means that all people are subject to God’s wrath. All people know that their sin makes them worthy of God’s wrath (Romans 1:32). They also know of God’s “eternal power and Godhead” (Romans 1:20), such that they know that God will pour out His wrath upon them for their sin. This is the bad news.

The good news is that “the righteousness of God...is manifested” such that “all them that believe” the gospel (Romans 3:21-22), will receive the gift of eternal life, instead of God’s wrath (Romans 6:23). Thus, those willing to fess up to the bad news can “feel after [God] and find Him” (Acts 17:27), via believing the gospel (Romans 10:17). They then receive the gift of eternal life.

However, man typically remains steeped in his pride, refusing to admit his sin. Therefore, he says in his heart: “There is no God” (Psalm 14:1), which makes him a fool. He then becomes vain in his imaginations (Romans 1:21) and is “wise in his own conceit” (Proverbs 26:12), meaning that he has evil intentions (Genesis 6:5, 8:21) to obey only the lusts of his flesh, saying that “I shall have peace, though I walk in the imagination of mine heart, to add drunkenness to thirst” (Deuteronomy 29:19). In other words, the conscience creates a thirst in man for the living water (the Holy Ghost) to take care of his sin problem, and man rejects living water for the drunkenness of this world, saying that man’s way is the way to have peace, rather than God’s way.

Since God gave everyone a conscience that bears witness that man is a sinner and will be judged by God for his sin (Romans 2:14-15), man’s drunken way to peace involves trying to get rid of his conscience by trying to get rid of the knowledge of God in his mind. Think of it this way: If you have an ingrown nail on your toe, you can either attack the nail, getting it out of the skin area so that you eventually no longer have pain, or you can hit the toe with a hammer, causing so much pain that you do not notice the pain from the ingrown nail.

Spiritually speaking, man thirsts for the living water of the Holy Ghost (John 7:38-39), due to his sin. However, the only way to receive the Holy Ghost is by swallowing your pride, recognizing that you are a sinner, and believing the gospel that God has given you (For today, this is to trust in Jesus’ death, burial, and resurrection as atonement for sin (I Corinthians 15:3-4).). Since man does not want to do this, he looks for something that will purge his guilty conscience without the blood of Christ (Hebrews 9:14). In other words, if man will not recognize his sin and allow God to forgive him of his sin, then he has to add sin upon sin to keep his original sin from bothering him, just like the person who keeps his ingrown nail from bothering him by hitting his toe with a hammer.

If he is going to cover his sin with sin, instead of with the blood of Christ, he must

commit sexual sin, because fornication is the only sin that you can commit against your own body (I Corinthians 6:18). Therefore, **sexual sin is absolutely necessary in order to get rid of the knowledge of God in your mind**, which shows why sexual sin is so pervasive today.

Romans 1 gives the details of this process. Once man becomes vain in his imaginations (Romans 1:21), he comes up with a plan to get rid of the knowledge of God, so that man can be the God of his own mind (Romans 1:22). The first step is to change “the glory of the uncorruptible God into an image” that God made (Romans 1:23). In other words, by changing God’s glory into an image, the image becomes god, rather than God being God. The highest glory that a man can achieve is sex, because sex makes him one with another person (I Corinthians 6:16). For example, if I run marathons, lift weights, and do other amazing feats of strength and athletic ability, I am still just one person. However, if I have sex, I am now two people in one flesh, which is greater than just being one person.

Remember what God said at the Tower of Babel: “Behold, the people is one, and they have all one language; and this they begin to do: and now nothing will be restrained from them, which they have imagined to do.” (Genesis 11:6). God said that, once the people became one, they would do their vain imaginations unrestrained. Two people becoming one via sex is a step in that direction.

The first sexual sin man commits to get rid of God and replace Him with an image is by having sex with the image of God that is not himself, i.e., a man commits adultery by having sex with a woman, and a woman commits adultery by having sex with a man. By having sex with multiple people, they “dishonor their own bodies between themselves” (Romans 1:24). In other words, they stop listening to God’s witness of the conscience that they are sinful, and they start believing that they can harness their own power through the opposite sex.

Therefore, they have gotten rid of God and replaced Him with the image of the opposite sex as god. Therefore, they no longer have to recognize their sin or meet God’s impossible standard of: “Be ye holy; for I am holy” (I Peter 1:16). The problem, though, is that they now have to meet the standard of their new god: the opposite sex. While the opposite sex is full of sin, just like they are, the opposite sex has a different way of easing their guilty conscience than they do. Therefore, the standard of their new god of, “Do as I say,” is not to their liking.

Some men sleep with one woman until she tries to control him with her conscience. Then, they move on to another woman. They keep doing this so that they feel like they are god, by sleeping with many women, but also do not have to conform to the standards of one, particular woman. Alternatively, they stay with one woman but sleep with many women in their minds through pornography. Therefore, they still sleep around and commit sexual sin. It is just not overt adultery so that the natural consequences are not as severe.

Meanwhile, women generally only sleep around with multiple men in their minds, not physically. They achieve this by changing their bodies through plastic surgery,

injections, makeup, jewelry, clothing, and a host of other things to make themselves stand out among other women, so that men look at them so that they feel sexy and feel, within themselves, like they are god. Thus, they commit adultery of the mind through sexy men flirting with them. (This is why women have no problem with sexy men giving them compliments, while they claim sexual harassment or criticize flirting men, who they do not find attractive, because their god-like bodies are only for men they want to have sex with in their minds—not for ordinary looking men.) This is why women get so upset with their physical sexual partners if they even look at another woman, because, in a woman’s mind, the only reason she would be with a man is if he thinks of her as being his god. Therefore, if a man looks at another woman, she becomes upset, because she is no longer god in his mind.

God says that making the opposite sex to be god is changing “the truth of God into a lie” (Romans 1:25). When you change God from being the God of the universe to being the opposite sex, you have changed from an immortal God to a mortal god. Therefore, when sexual sin with multiple partners of the opposite sex, whether physically or mentally, becomes so messy and complicated due to different mindsets, it is a very easy thing for society to then change to believing that the same sex is god. In other words, going from a mortal god of the opposite sex to a mortal god of the same sex is a much easier transition than going from the true, immortal God to a mortal god of the opposite sex. Thus, the transition to sodomy is an easy one, and men and women start sexual relationships with the same sex. God says that “their women did change the natural use into that which is against nature: and likewise also the men, leaving the natural use of the woman, burned in their lust one toward another; men with men working that which is unseemly, and receiving in themselves that recompence of their error which was meet” (Romans 1:26-27).

Note carefully how God words these sodomite relationships in verses 26-27. First, they “burned in their lust one toward another.” God says that the solution to sexual desire is to marry someone of the opposite sex and be faithful to her for your entire life. In so doing, you marry, rather than burning (I Corinthians 7:9). However, when you reject the witness of the conscience and declare that you are god, then marriage does not overcome sexual desire. Rather, sexual desire grows and grows, and all you do is burn, in an effort to overcome the witness of the conscience by making yourself god through sexual sin. Thus, having sex God’s way keeps you from burning, but having sex to get rid of God causes people to burn “in their lust one toward another.”

Second, they work “that which is unseemly” by having same-sex relations. “That which is unseemly” is that which is unfit, meaning that they have gotten rid of their conscience’s check against sin and the opposite sex’s check against sin. This makes it much easier for men to work their own lusts and for women to do the same. For example, a man’s same-sex partner would not be disgusted by pornography like an opposite-sex partner would be. So, there is no check against that. Similarly, women are not disgusted by spending money on outward beauty. Therefore, there is no check against that for women with same-sex partners. Both

result in humans pursuing the vanity of their own minds. Thus, working that which is unseemly through sodomy means that they can more readily fulfill the evil desires of their heart.

Third, God says that the result is that they receive “in themselves that recompense of their error which was meet.” This means that they receive a “reward” that fits their error. The woman was made for the man to be “an help meet for him” (Genesis 2:18). However, when man says there is no God, man makes himself to be god and makes his own “help meet.” Man’s “help meet” is “a reprobate mind” (Romans 1:28), which causes him “to do those things which are not convenient” (Romans 1:28). In other words, because man’s goal is “to do those things which are not convenient,” man finally accomplishes this goal by first damaging his own body through sexual sin with the opposite sex then by sexual sin with the same sex, such that those sexual sins have completely destroyed his mind, spiritually speaking, making it worthless or reprobate. Now, man can do all the lusts of the flesh without having a check of the conscience. So, God’s “help meet” has man recognize his sin so that he may believe the gospel, while man’s own meet is to get rid of the knowledge of his own sin so that he may follow his own lusts.

Note that the first characteristic of the reprobate mind is “being filled with ALL unrighteousness” (Romans 1:29). Therefore, when sexual sin goes unchecked, the eventual result is that the true God is replaced in a person’s mind with himself being god, such that he will do ALL unrighteousness with no check whatsoever. With all checks being removed via a reprobate mind, man will never recognize his sin and believe the gospel. **Therefore, he is beyond being saved. This is why God destroys a society when it is wholly given over to sodomy. Therefore, Jesus’ second coming will take place when the entire world is wholly given over to sodomy (Luke 17:28-30).**

(Keep in mind that God “is longsuffering to us-ward, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance” (II Peter 3:9). This means that God will continue to suffer with man, even after most have given themselves over to a reprobate mind, if it means that more people will be saved. This is evidenced by “the longsuffering of God [waiting] in the days of Noah, while the ark was a preparing, wherein few, that is, eight souls were saved by water” (I Peter 3:20). In other words, God waited 100 years for just seven more souls to be saved. How close are we to this today?)

Keep in mind that only sexual sins completely eliminate the checks of the conscience within a person. Granted, a mass murderer probably does not feel bad about hating someone, but at least a mass murderer knows what a wretched human being he is, and it is possible for him to believe the gospel and be saved. However, a society full of sodomites cannot be saved. Because they think they are god and are above the law, a society of sodomites says, “Who are you to judge me? I can do whatever I want.” (Remember what the sodomites told Lot, “This one fellow came in to sojourn, and he will needs be a judge: now will we deal worse with thee, than with them” (Genesis 19:9).) A mass murderer would not say the same about his own behavior. This is because sexual sin destroys the body to the

point where man says he is his own god and will not recognize his sin and believe the gospel in order to be saved. If he is god, then no one can judge him. This is why we did not find “tolerance” and “non-judgmental behavior” being preached in the United States until society began practicing sodomy in greater numbers. Note that today’s sodomites have no problem judging Bible believers, just like in Lot’s day.

Solution

Like all problems, the solution to sexual sin is the death, burial, and resurrection of Christ. Unbelievers walk according to “the lusts of [their] flesh, fulfilling the desires of the flesh and of the mind” (Ephesians 2:3). This is all they can do because “in me (that is, in my flesh,) dwelleth no good thing: for to will is present with me; but how to perform that which is good I find not” (Romans 7:18). Sure, a sodomite can stop committing physical sodomy; but, as long as he is an unbeliever, he will always commit sin in his mind in one form or another.

However, when we are saved, we are given the Holy Ghost (Romans 5:5), we are given the Spirit of Christ crying “Abba, Father” (Galatians 4:6), and we are given the mind of Christ (I Corinthians 2:16). Therefore, we can reckon our flesh to “be dead indeed unto sin, but alive unto God through Jesus Christ our Lord” (Romans 6:11). This does not mean that we will live perfect lives, but it does mean that we can present our “bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto God” (Romans 12:1) by reading and believing sound doctrine found in God’s Word, specifically Paul’s epistles of Romans – Philemon. When we do this, “Christ liveth in” us, and we “live by the faith of the Son of God” (Galatians 2:20), such that “we walk by faith, not by sight” (II Corinthians 5:7), meaning that Christ does God’s will through us, rather than us following the lusts of our own flesh.

However, if you do not have sound doctrine built up in your inner man, this will not happen, because you will not have the knowledge necessary to use the mind of Christ in order to make godly decisions. The whole world, both unbelievers and believers, has been thoroughly confused by Satan’s lies regarding sex and marriage to the point that most of what is written in this book is considered sheer folly and would be attacked by all those who have “changed the truth of God into a lie” (Romans 1:25). This book’s goal has been to orient the believer to what God says sex and marriage are all about. Since God created these things and is the judge (Psalm 50:6), believers should seek to follow what God says on these topics. Hopefully, this book has facilitated this pursuit for you.